



Gc  
976.4  
P13h1  
v.1  
1279751

M.E.

GENEALOGY COLLECTION



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 02282 4608





Geo. Miller,

Waukegan, Wis -

---









Waddock



A HISTORY  
OF  
Central and Western  
Texas

Compiled from Historical Data Supplied by Commercial  
Clubs, Individuals, and Other Authentic Sources,  
Under the Editorial Supervision of

CAPTAIN B. B. PADDOCK  
OF FORT WORTH

---

ILLUSTRATED.

VOL. I

---

THE LEWIS PUBLISHING COMPANY  
CHICAGO NEW YORK

1911

THE PUBLIC LIBRARY  
OF  
FORT WAYNE & ALLEN CO., IND.

• *Sc*  
*976.4*  
*P13hi*  
*v.1*





1279751

## PREFACE

The work undertaken in this publication is designed as a record of progress of Central and Western Texas up to the close of the first decade of the twentieth century. Introductory to the review of Central and Western Texas as a distinct portion of the state, is a Brief History of Texas, which, while being a complete and new version of narrative history, has been written primarily as a proper setting for the local history. A large amount of material has been published which is chiefly interesting as local history. Without burdening the general narrative, care has been taken to preserve as much as possible of the history of towns, communities and institutions, the result being a work of general information upon the country described by the title. By means of a copious index, it is believed that all the information is readily available to those using the volumes for reference.

The subject matter has been derived from the most reliable sources available. The historical manuscript has been carefully revised, and in every case the personal data has been submitted to those concerned.

2. 1. 1. 1. 1.

6. 1. 1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1. 1. 1.

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
CHAPTER I	
EXPLORATION AND DISCOVERY—LA SALLE'S COLONY.....	3
CHAPTER II	
SPANISH ENTRADAS—ESTABLISHMENT OF MISSIONS.....	10
CHAPTER III	
PERMANENT OCCUPATION BY SPAIN.....	14
CHAPTER IV	
FOUNDING OF SAN ANTONIO—MISSIONS AND PRESIDIOS OF THE SPANISH FRONTIER .....	19
CHAPTER V	
TEXAS DURING THE LAST HALF OF THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY....	27
CHAPTER VI	
AMERICAN AND SPANISH CIVILIZATIONS MEET IN LOUISIANA—FIRST STAGES OF THE INEVITABLE CONFLICT.....	32
CHAPTER VII	
POSITION OF TEXAS AT THE BEGINNING OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY .....	37
CHAPTER VIII	
THE REVOLT AGAINST SPANISH DESPOTISM—THE BURR CONSPIRACY	43
CHAPTER IX	
THE FIRST DECADE OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY.....	52
CHAPTER X	
REVOLUTIONARY MOVEMENTS IN TEXAS, 1810-1820.....	56
CHAPTER XI	
THE REPUBLIC OF MEXICO—AUSTIN'S COLONY.....	68

	PAGE
CHAPTER XII	
COLONIES UNDER THE EMPRESARIO SYSTEM.....	78
CHAPTER XIII	
RELATIONS WITH MEXICO—THE FREDONIAN WAR.....	83
CHAPTER XIV	
THE TEXAS COLONIES UNDER FEDERAL REGULATION.....	89
CHAPTER XV	
THE CONVENTIONS OF 1832 AND 1833.....	95
CHAPTER XVI	
EVENTS LEADING TO THE REVOLUTION.....	102
CHAPTER XVII	
THE CAMPAIGN OF 1835.....	112
CHAPTER XVIII	
THE GENERAL CONSULTATION AND PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT.....	118
CHAPTER XIX	
ALAMO AND GOLIAD.....	122
CHAPTER XX	
THE CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION AND DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE .....	129
CHAPTER XXI	
THE WINNING OF INDEPENDENCE—SAN JACINTO.....	132
CHAPTER XXII	
TEXAS AS A REPUBLIC.....	141
CHAPTER XXIII	
THE ANNEXATION OF TEXAS.....	158
CHAPTER XXIV	
THE STATE OF TEXAS, 1845 TO 1861.....	164



CONTENTS

vii

PAGE

CHAPTER XXV

THE CIVIL WAR PERIOD.....	177
---------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXVI

RECONSTRUCTION .....	185
----------------------	-----

---

CENTRAL AND WESTERN TEXAS.....	191-202
--------------------------------	---------

THE LIVE STOCK INDUSTRY.....	203-236
------------------------------	---------

A BRIEF HISTORY OF RAILROAD CONSTRUCTION.....	237-261
---	---------

CENTRAL AND WESTERN TEXAS COUNTIES.....	262-882
---	---------



## BRIEF HISTORY OF TEXAS





## CHAPTER I

### EXPLORATION AND DISCOVERY—LA SALLE'S COLONY

The story of Texas begins with the time when the first civilized man beheld its low-lying shores from the waters of the gulf, or in exploration or quest of settlement set foot upon its soil. It is true, for centuries before the caravels of Columbus sailed to the unknown occident, the wild native tribes passed and repassed over what we now know as Texas. They set up their huts on the broad prairies or in the shelter of the woodlands, they sometimes planted and harvested scanty crops of vegetables and grain, more often they hunted the buffalo with bow and arrow and netted or speared the fish of the rivers, and they marauded and hated and made war. They had their joys and sorrows, their loves and hates; among them were degrees of skill and stupidity; they recognized that some must command and the rest obey; and mingling with the few realities was the thread of the mysterious, the awe and terror of the elements about them, and a certain faith or superstition of their fate after death.

The Indians existed, but the day circumscribed all their acts and purposes. Institutions they had not, the fabric of organized society showed only the most primitive patterns. They were in the various stages of barbarism. At the beginning of the sixteenth century these creatures of the forest and plain had not reached the state of mental and social development which had been attained by races on the far-away plains of Mesopotamia and in the Nile valley three thousand years before.

The places inhabited by these red men were as they had been for ages. Their abodes and their society were swept away in the same hour which noted their own departure—no architecture, no art, no industries, no laws descend from the aborigines of Texas as a heritage of humanity. The Indian in early American history had a status not unlike that of the wild animal—something to be reckoned with by civilized

men as an element of danger or assistance, but not as a fellow being nor yet as a foundation for a stable society and system of institutions. Indeed, as will be noticed hereafter, every attempt by the Spanish or the French to impose the civilization and government of Europe upon the Indian tribes of America found the barbarians unequal to such responsibilities, and all such Utopias and American empires were from the first doomed to failure. The Indians could not amalgamate with or form a part of new world civilization, and even now after centuries of association and training accommodate themselves imperfectly to citizenship.

Therefore, despite the presence of the Indian tribes, Texas was, from the standpoint of historical narrative, one vast barren at the beginning of the sixteenth century. And even after the advent of the first European to the gulf coast, two centuries passed before the region was sought for purpose of occupation and settlement. Knowledge of the Texas country had progressed so little that during the last years of the seventeenth century the impression prevailed among such eminent Frenchmen as La Salle that the Red river was the northern boundary of Mexico, thus entirely eliminating from the geography of the time the vast territory from the Rio Grande to Red river.

In a very vague and general way the land bordering the Gulf of Mexico became known to Europeans in the sixteenth century. By the discoveries of Ponce de Leon and others all this country was claimed by Spain and was known by the name of Florida, comprising all the region westward from the present state of that name to Mexico, and including the portion since called Texas, but which at that time was almost a *terra incognita*, without name and boundaries.

The first well authenticated visit of Europeans to Texas is that of the Panfilo de Narvaez expedition, which set out to explore the gulf coast from Florida. The enterprise met with disaster. Among those thrown upon the shores was Cabeza de Vaca, who with several companions endeavored to find his way overland into Mexico. The route of his wandering journey, as studied from his testimony, probably began at some point on the coast in southern Texas, and continued westerly to the Rio Grande. His narrative of the wanderings are the first written accounts of any portion of the Texas country, and the date of his adventures was about 1535.

About ten years later, Coronado, after his conquest of New Mexico, in a fruitless expedition which led him as far north as Kansas, crossed

Northwest Texas, and his chronicler describes the buffaloes and the Indian hunters of the Staked Plains. There is some reason to believe that Hernando de Soto, on his ill-fated march from Florida to the Mississippi, also penetrated some portion of North Texas. The fact that Spain was in actual possession of Florida from 1565 and much before that time had conquered and established an empire in Mexico, makes it reasonable to suppose that expeditions between the two seats of settlement crossed the intervening country of Texas, though without adding anything to our knowledge of this region.

Until the last years of the seventeenth century Texas is nearly bare of annals. Spanish ambition and conquest were in the meantime pushing north from the central kingdom of Mexico, and the expeditions of priest and soldier added somewhat to the knowledge of the region to the east of the pueblos and mines of New Mexico. Various adventurers, for their personal fame or other designs, invented many stories concerning the wealth, magnificence and civilization of the country northeast of Mexico. A more truthful chronicler was Alonzo Paredes, who in 1686 rendered a report, honest and fairly accurate, describing the status and geography of the country. He pronounced the wealthy kingdoms to be fiction, but told of tribes of Indians living along the coast who subsisted by agriculture and were superior to the roaming tribes further west; also speaks of various rivers, although the many streams flowing toward the gulf make such references in early Texas history confusing. Along certain of these rivers, probably between the Colorado and the Trinity, mention is made of a race of superior Indians, the Tejas.

This is the first occurrence of the name which subsequently was applied to the province, republic and state. Various interpretations of the name and its origin have been assigned. Bancroft says: "Tejas (Tehas) was the name of one of the tribes in the south, as the Spaniards understood it from their neighbors, rather than from the people themselves. This word, or another of similar sound, was probably not the aboriginal name of the tribe, or group of tribes, but a descriptive term in their language or that of their neighbors. Indeed, there is some evidence that the word meant 'friends.' The name was retained by the Spanish and applied to the province. It was sometimes written in old-style Spanish, *Texas* (Tejas and Texas are both pronounced in Spanish, *tay-hass*), and this form has been adopted in English with a corresponding change in pronunciation."

The first definite and important event in the history of Texas is a tragedy. Nearly two centuries passed after the journey of Cabeza de Vaca before the first real occupation of Texan soil was attempted. And as the story of this venture is in itself a drama, likewise is it the last act in the tragic career of one who "without question was one of the most remarkable explorers whose names live in history."

While, as we have seen, during all these years Texas was nominally a possession of Spain, it was reserved for a party of men under the *fleur de lis* of France to plant the first settlement on its shores.

Robert Cavalier, Sieur de la Salle, known to history as La Salle, had, during the last half of the seventeenth century, by exploration and the planting in the western wilderness of fortified outposts, gained over to France all the vast region bordering the Great Lakes and along the eastern tributaries of the Mississippi, and had journeyed down to the mouth of the Father of Waters itself. By building a fort on an impregnable rock in the Illinois river he has given the French a commanding position as the center of a great Indian confederacy. Thence he prepared to extend New France southward to the gulf. With the French already in possession from the mouth of the St. Lawrence to the headwaters of the Mississippi, it was his ambition to secure control of the Mississippi from source to mouth, thus confining the English colonies to the narrow Atlantic coast.

His scheme involved the placing of forts near the mouth of the river, where he had already set up the French flag in 1682 and named the country Louisiane in honor of his king. To get permission to carry out these plans La Salle returned to France. His memorial to Louis XIV described the advantages of possessing this western country, dwelling on the possibilities of an invasion of Mexico with its rich mines of silver and gold. His petition was granted in 1684, and the zealous explorer at once made ready for the enterprise which was to crown all his past efforts in the wilds of America.

The expedition which sailed from France in 1684 consisted of four ships, the *Joli*, the *Belle*, the *Aimable*, and the *St. Francis*; some three hundred persons—a hundred soldiers recruited from the dregs of the French populace; some gentlemen volunteers, besides professed mechanics, laborers, some maidens who embarked with the hope of procuring husbands, Recollet friars, and three priests, one of whom was Cavélier, La Salle's brother. Such a motley company, the counterpart of many others sent out from Europe to America during the seventeenth



century, contained too little of moral character and hardy industry to effect a permanent colony. All the stamina of this expedition was in the leader, who was powerless to carry out his vast plans alone.

Embarrassments beset the enterprise from the first. Beaujeu, commander of the fleet, was insubordinate and antagonized La Salle, whose haughtiness and unwillingness to share his command with others finally brought ruin both to himself and his undertaking. The first serious misfortune was the loss of the store-ship *St. Francis*, which was captured by the Spaniards and gave the viceroy the first information of an expedition to Spanish territory. Then, when the fleet reached San Domingo, La Salle was stricken with fever, and during two months of illness his followers pursued all manner of vice and dissipation on the island. Finally La Salle on the *Aimable*, followed by the *Joli* and *Belle*, headed for the mouth of the Mississippi. He was in uncharted waters, and when land was sighted it lay far to the west of his goal. He coasted the shore for some distance in search of the river, and finally entered Matagorda bay, which he believed to be one of the mouths of the Mississippi. Here came another disaster. The *Aimable* was wrecked in crossing the bar, and all her stores and supplies were lost.

La Salle was convinced that he had reached the delta of the Mississippi, and a few weeks later Beaujeu, on the *Joli*, sailed for France, leaving the bold explorer with one hundred and eighty persons and the ship *Belle* to hold the outposts of French dominion on the gulf. He was hundreds of miles distant from the Mississippi, with no possibility of communication with the fort on the Illinois, and his colony had none of the hardy pioneers needed for permanent settlement—a germ of civilization destined to blight and decay and final annihilation.

A short distance up the La Vaca river a place was chosen for the seat of settlement; where to the north lay alternate grassy prairies and belts of woodland, and to the south the blue waters of the bay; the verdure of a semi-tropical climate surrounded them, and fruit, game and fish abounded. A fort, called *St. Louis*, was constructed. Even in this work appeared the unsubstantial character of the colony. "Carpenters and other mechanics knew nothing of their pretended trades; slight attempts at agriculture were not successful. The vagabond soldiers and settlers had no idea of discipline; many of them were suffering from deadly and loathsome diseases contracted in San Domingo; and the leading men were divided into hostile cliques, several minor conspiracies being revealed. The leader showed unlimited courage, but became more

## 8 HISTORY OF CENTRAL AND WESTERN TEXAS.

haughty and unjust as difficulties multiplied, and was hated by many in his company.”\*

La Salle made several expeditions in search of the Mississippi, but each time returned unsuccessful, after having endured incredible hardships in fording the swollen streams and marching under the southern sun. The wreck of the *Belle* removed from the survivors the last means of escaping the country by sea. At the beginning of 1687 hardly fifty persons were alive at the fort, yet the iron heart of the leader was still unsubdued.

The only remaining hope seemed to lie in the possibility of opening communication with Canada or the brave Tonti at the fort of the Illinois. Accordingly, in January, 1688, La Salle, taking about half the men at the fort, bade farewell and set out to the northeast for Canada. The party had reached the banks of the Neches, and in the vicinity of that river, in an obscure spot that history can probably never mark, the first Texas pioneer was struck down by his treacherous companions. The conspirators had contrived to separate the company and had first murdered La Salle's nephew and two followers. They then lured the leader himself into an ambushade and cowardly shot him.

Thus came to his end, on Texas soil, one of the foremost men of early American history. Although his last resting place beside one of the chief rivers cannot be definitely ascertained, his name must always remain as the first on the Texas roll of fame. In the words of Parkman, “he was a hero not of principle nor of faith, but simply of a fixed idea and a determined purpose”; in the end he had “attempted the impossible and had grasped at what was too vast to hold.”

Of the party which accompanied La Salle, the conspirators nearly all met violent deaths, while the friends of the commander eventually reached the Mississippi and rejoined their countrymen in Canada.

And lastly the little band at Fort St. Louis on the La Vaca passed into oblivion. The story of their end reached the world through the Indians and the Spaniards. Smallpox scourged the remnant of twenty persons, and toward the end of 1688 the Indians fell upon them and with arrows and knife dispatched all but four or five, who were carried into captivity, and subsequently delivered to the Spaniards. “In ignominy and darkness died the last embers of the doomed colony of La Salle.” When

\* Parkman.

the two or three cabins and fortified houses were finally discovered by the soldiers from Mexico, they were deserted and going to decay, with only a few broken guns and torn papers as evidence of the occupation by civilized men.

## CHAPTER II

### SPANISH ENTRADAS—ESTABLISHMENT OF MISSIONS

In the meantime the capture of the store-ship *St. Francis* had aroused the Spanish, who were extremely jealous of any invasion of territory embraced in the limits of their world-wide claims. While the French colony was still meagerly existing along the bay of *Espiritu Santo* the ships of Spain were scouring the coast bent on its destruction. At last, guided by one of *La Salle's* former followers, *Alonzo de Leon* of *Coahuila* marched with a force of one hundred men across the rivers of southern Texas, to which he gave their present names, and in April, 1689, arrived at *Fort St. Louis*. Here he found a scene of desolation. With this evidence that the French settlement had come to destruction through its own weakness and discord, he returned to Mexico.

The information by which *Captain Leon* had found *Fort St. Louis* was supplied through *Fray Damian Manzanet*, a missionary friar in *Coahuila*, who had inquired among the Indian converts at the mission and ascertained that the French were established among the northern Indians along the coast. *Friar Manzanet* accompanied *de Leon* on his expedition in 1689, as chaplain, and was diligent in his inquiries concerning the tribes associated under the name *Tejas*. While the *Tejas* chief was being entertained at the Spanish camp on the *Guadalupe* river, *Manzanet* urged upon him the acceptance of Christianity for himself and people, and, meeting with encouragement, promised to send priests to his villages. Thus was conceived the *Tejas* mission.

The news about the Texan country, combined with rumors about further attempts at occupation by the French, led the Spanish viceroy of Mexico to send *de Leon* upon a second expedition. The arguments of *de Leon* showing the value of occupying the region from a political standpoint were reinforced by the accounts of *Manzanet* concerning the splendid opportunities for advancing Christianity by establishing a mission among the tribes who had already declared their willingness to accept conversion.



This second expedition which set out from Coahuila, March 28, 1690, consisted of one hundred and ten soldiers, led by Captain Leon, missionaries headed by Father Manzanet and three Franciscans. The personnel of the company was little suited for the arduous work that confronted them.

Stopping at the Guadalupe as before, a thorough search was made for evidences of renewed activity on the part of the French, and the dismantled fort on the bay of Espiritu Santo was burned to the ground. The company then moved eastward to the country of the Tejas, or Asinai, where they were received with much hospitality. A site for a mission was chosen, and from the trees of the surrounding forest were hewn the logs for the construction of the first church in Texas, it being consecrated June 1, 1690.

The village selected for the first missionary effort of Spain in Texas was situated between the Trinity and Neches rivers, in East Texas. The location has not been accurately determined, but it was south of Nacogdoches, and perhaps nearer to Trinity bay. It was hundreds of miles from the nearest Spanish town, so that its isolation could hardly have been more complete. And on the day after the consecration of the rude little church, Captain Leon, leaving only three soldiers to protect the friars, again plunged into the wilderness and marched back to Mexico. The names of the three friars who thus endured the solitude and hardships of the wilderness in their religious zeal deserve to be written; they are, Miguel Fontecuberta, Francisco de Jesus Maria, and Antonio Bordoy. Father Manzanet returned with de Leon.

Left alone to maintain and spread the influence of the mission San Francisco de los Tejas, the Friars had to contend with the difficulties of their physical situation, with the indifference of the natives to their teaching, with the aboriginal aversion to tribal consolidation and permanence of residence, and finally with pestilence. This last the Indian medicine men were not slow to attribute to the baleful influence of the new missionaries. During 1690-91 three thousand deaths occurred among the tribes called Tejas. Father Fontecuberta himself fell a victim to disease, and the other two had to bear increasing burdens and expose themselves to increasing personal peril. The friars did all that human effort could do. In June, 1690, a second mission had been built, probably on the Neches river, being named Santisimo Nombre de Maria, and one of the fathers gave his attention to the conversion of the tribes in this vicinity.

After the establishment of the mission among the Tejas and the return of the expedition, the royal authorities entered upon a plan for extended occupation and Christianizing of Texas. Don Domingo Teran de los Rios was appointed governor of Coahuila and Texas, and was instructed to organize an expedition by sea and by land, to explore the region to the north of the Tejas and establish among the native tribes eight missions.

The expedition, consisting of soldiers, friars and numerous attendants, with droves of horses, pack animals and cattle, crossed the Rio Grande on its northern march in the early summer of 1691. Teran was military chief of the enterprise, while Father Manzanet was religious head and also held the office of commissary. Their relations were not harmonious, and the effectiveness of the expedition suffered from the discord. The failure of the forces that came by sea to effect a junction with those on land at Espiritu Santo bay was another serious misfortune.

When the governor arrived at San Francisco de los Tejas the account given him of the past year was not encouraging. While the first governor of Texas does not appear to have been a man of remarkable ability and resourcefulness, he must also be judged by the almost insuperable difficulties in the way of successful accomplishment of his enterprise. From a military standpoint the undertaking was as yet little less than impossible, and the plans and ideals of the friars were impracticable.

After constituting the Tejas tribes a new province, and providing for the protection and maintenance of missions, Governor Teran returned to Espiritu Santo to meet the sea expedition. By the time this was done and the mission again reached, it was the end of October, and on account of the delays and the cross-purposes of the friars and the military much of the spirit and energy was taken out of the enterprise. However, despite the approach of cold weather, the governor determined to carry out instructions for the exploration of the country of the Cadodachos. With increasing hardships each day he continued north to the Red river, which was reached late in November, and from that point, having accomplished only the most meagre results of exploration and treating with the native tribes, he traced his way to the missions, where the wretched company arrived December 30th. A few days later they set out for Mexico.

From a military point of view the expedition was fruitless, and scarcely more can be said for the missionary efforts. Not one of the eight additional missions was established. In fact, the friars soon found

it impracticable to maintain the two original missions. The Indians were giving trouble, the small guard of soldiers proved unruly, drouth blighted the crops for two successive seasons, the cattle died of disease, and Manzanet, after more than a year of unsuccessful effort, confessed to the viceroy the impossibility of sustaining the establishment without sufficient military protection. But with the fear of French aggression allayed for the time, the government ceased to be concerned about Texas, and on August 21, 1693, the priests were ordered to abandon the missions and return to Mexico.

For twenty years thereafter Texas existed only in name, and over the forts of the soldiers and the chapels of the priests the aboriginal wilderness held sway as in the years before La Salle landed on the shores of Espiritu Santo. The career of Texas contains many vicissitudes, and by no means least interesting of her annals is the period beginning with the advent of the indomitable Frenchman and closing with the withdrawal of the Spanish missionaries—a drama played through all its scenes in less than ten years.

As to the practical results of these first Spanish entradas, it is maintained\* that these expeditions laid the foundations of experience on which subsequent missionary enterprises were built. "That remote inland settlements are difficult to establish, and more difficult to maintain; that the organization of an extensive system of missions must be the slow work of years, and not the accomplishment of a summer campaign; that the conversion of even the most tractable of Indians must be a mingling of force with persuasion; and finally, that the mission could thrive only when it existed side by side with the presidio,—these were the useful deductions from Fray Damian Manzanet's costly experimenting." Furthermore, through de Leon's and Teran's campaigns the geography and physical nature of Texas first became a matter of accurate knowledge, a knowledge that was available for all future expeditions.

\* By Mr. R. C. Clark, in *Tex. Hist. Assn. Quarterly*, Vol. V, 201.

## CHAPTER III

### PERMANENT OCCUPATION BY SPAIN

As the colony of La Salle had first stimulated the Spanish to secure Texas, so a second encroachment by the French led to the permanent occupation of the region between the Rio Grande and the Sabine. The Spaniards had little interest in extending their political dominion over this territory, but their jealousy was quickly aroused by any intrusion of other nations. Without such incentive to occupation, it is reasonable to believe that Texas would have lain unoccupied throughout the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, and would then have presented an entirely open field to American enterprise and settlement.

Though the missions among the Tejas were abandoned in 1693, the work of the friars in that quarter was not forgotten. The zeal of the church to extend its work in this direction was much in advance of the interest and plans of the government. A friar of Querataro, Francisco Hidalgo, who had been with Manzanet among the Asinai, and in the latter years of the century was in charge of the newly established mission of San Juan Bautista, near the Rio Grande, all these years continued his interest in his former converts. But for a long time missionary effort was confined south of the Rio Grande. Finally becoming discouraged, Hidalgo set out alone to the Asinai and for several years labored among them, hoping that his pioneer efforts would be followed by some substantial aid from the south. Disappointed by Spain's policy of neglect of Texas, he turned to the French of Louisiana.

At the opening of the eighteenth century, France had gained a strong foothold at the mouth of the Mississippi. Fort Biloxi had been established and the country north and along Red river was being exploited for trade with the Indians. The extension of French influence was going on rapidly and soon became a menace to Spanish influence in Mexico and the Floridas. The French were much more enterprising and successful in the Indian trade than the Spanish. In 1712 a monopoly of the

Louisiana trade for a period of fifteen years was granted to Antoine Crozat, and he proceeded with much energy to occupy the field and drew the trade of a broad territory toward the Mississippi. To further his commercial schemes, he tried to negotiate some sort of trade agreement with Mexico. The Spanish authorities at once took alarm and declared a rigorous policy of "closed door" to all foreign nations. Thus early did the Spanish exclusiveness assert itself in the conduct of the American provinces.

But the opportunity came to the French from an unlooked for source. His missionary zeal proving stronger than his patriotism, Hidalgo had, in 1711, written a letter to the governor of Louisiana, inviting his co-operation in establishing a mission among the Asinais Indians. Here was an excellent pretext for extending trade among the Texas tribes and at the same time coming into relations with the Spanish that might prove profitable from a commercial standpoint.

The outcome was that an expedition set out from Mobile in 1713, its objects being stated in the passport dated September 12, 1713, as follows: "The sieur de Saint Denis is to take twenty-four men and as many Indians as necessary and with them go in search of the mission of Fray Francisco Hidalgo in response to his letter of January 17, 1711, and there to purchase horses and cattle for the province of Louisiana." Louis Juchereau de Saint Denis, the next important character in this history, was an officer from Louisiana. In 1705 he is said to have traversed the country from the Red river to the Rio Grande, and his long familiarity with the Indian tribes and knowledge of their language gave him eminent fitness for the leadership of this expedition.

The ostensible motives of the undertaking were thus two-fold, and provided he conformed his actions to the instructions of his passport his movements could hardly be interpreted as hostile to Spain. Arriving at Natchitoches, the party built store-houses and left them under guard as a base of supplies while they set out into Spanish territory. At the village of the Asinais, where the old mission had been, they halted for six months or more. There they were able to obtain horses and cattle in great abundance, and this being the professed object of the expedition, and not having found Hidalgo and hence unable to effect the restoration of the mission, there was little reason for the continuance of the journey inland. But Hidalgo had made himself much beloved by the Indians, and they besought the help of St. Denis in effecting his return to them. Finally, an Indian chief and some of his followers offering their services

as guides to the Spanish settlements, St. Denis set out for the Rio Grande.

The mission and presidio of San Juan Bautista, which was the northernmost Spanish post, located about two leagues south of the Rio Grande, was then commanded by Captain Diego Ramon. Arriving there early in 1715, St. Denis gave the commander his passport and proposed the establishment of trade relations between the Spanish and French.

The captain of the presidio received St. Denis kindly, but detained him until he should receive instructions from the viceroy. In the meantime the Louisiana captain became enamoured of the commander's granddaughter, whom he afterward married. This may have influenced his loyalty, for he is afterwards found acting, apparently, a double part. With complete disinterest for his former employers, he advocated that Spain should occupy Texas and pictured the many advantages that would come through commerce and agriculture in that region. By the viceroy's orders he was sent to Mexico, where he made a deposition of all his purposes and plans in entering so boldly upon Spanish territory.

With the French firmly established on the lower courses of the Mississippi, aggressively reaching out for commercial if not military conquest, and with one of their advance guards audaciously penetrating Mexico and asking favors that Spanish policy had firmly forbidden, the viceroy and his advisers felt that the need to occupy and protect the northeastern border demanded immediate action.

During the summer of 1715 an expedition was organized. Domingo Ramon was appointed its captain, and St. Denis himself was given a salaried position in the company. Only a small body of regular soldiers composed the military strength of the entrada, but to prevent the recurrence of such evils as had undone the former invasions, only men of family were sent along to accompany the priests, and the actual settlers were equipped with agricultural implements and oxen. Padre Hidalgo, who joined the company, now saw his hopes of many years about to be realized. Early in 1716 the march was begun, and in April the band, of sixty-five persons in all, with a great amount of baggage and live-stock, left the Rio Grande under the guidance of St. Denis.

In June Captain Ramon arrived at the site of the abandoned mission of San Francisco de los Tejas, and set to work re-establishing it. A new site was selected about twelve miles away, and the building was soon under way. Serving as the religious center for several tribes, it was now named San Francisco de los Neches, with Hidalgo in charge. Among the Asinais, nine leagues distant, was founded Purisima Concepcion; and

at the village of the Nacogdoches, the mission of Nuestra Senora de Guadalupe, while some twenty miles away was mission San Jose. A little later two other missions were established among the Adaes and Aes, nearer Red river.

Thus, as a direct result of the bold incursion of St. Denis, which in itself was but a part of the energetic movement of the French to occupy Louisiana and extend the limits of New France deep into the western wilderness, the Spaniards, in the year 1716, established a group of missions and military garrisons on the borders of East Texas, where for more than a century the French, and later the Americans, were to contend with the Spanish in a vain endeavor to maintain a boundary between two opposed types of civilization.

The real significance of the expedition of St. Denis is "that it determined the ownership of Texas. The Spanish established, by fact of actual possession, their title to the lands east of the Rio Grande. The entrada of Captain Ramon was followed by others till a line of missions and presidios was established extending from the lands of the Aes and Adaes to the Rio Grande; and the western limit of Louisiana was fixed at the Sabine. But for the menace of St. Denis' presence to arouse the slow and indifferent Mexican government to action, it is probable that the movement to occupy Texas would not have come till much later."\*

The three instruments by which Spain endeavored to hold Texas were: the mission, the presidio, and the pueblo. One of the chief objects sought with more or less sincerity in Spanish colonization in America was the Christianizing of the Indians, and the mission worked to this end. The principal figures of the mission were the priests, who endeavored to instruct the natives in the arts of civilization and the Christian religion.

They also tried to induce the Indians to dwell in central communities and villages, and depend for existence upon the settled pursuits of agriculture instead of roving from place to place, which always proved the most embarrassing quality of the Indian character. This settlement of Indians was known as the pueblo, and both pueblo and mission were composite parts of the general scheme.

In addition, there was the presidio, or fortified stronghold garrisoned with soldiers, which was especially necessary when the attempt was made to plant the colony in a hostile country. Such a military post

\* R. C. Clark, *Tex. Hist. Assn. Quarterly*, Vol. VI.



was usually placed within convenient distance of a group of several missions.

It will be seen that this plan of colonization involved considering the natives as factors and co-operators in the scheme, and the holding of the Indians in such social and administrative ties as would form a mixed community of white and red men. History has shown that this was an impracticable ideal. The theory in practice was the weakness of both Spanish and French civilization in America. On the other hand, the English disregarded the red men altogether, and did not admit them into their scheme of society at all; they put the red men on the same plane with the wild beast of the forest, took his land by treaty or force, and by their own hardihood and colonial enterprise founded a society strong both within and without, and able, after establishing its own boundaries, to push out and permanently conquer the western wilds.

In addition to this vital defect in her plan of Texan occupation, Spain, partly from European wars and consequent weakness at home and abroad, lacked the enterprise necessary to send strong and independent colonies into Texas; the few attempts she did make during the eighteenth century were barely self-sustaining, and cannot be compared with the pioneer movements that crossed the mountains from Virginia into Kentucky and Tennessee.

## CHAPTER IV

### FOUNDING OF SAN ANTONIO—MISSIONS AND PRESIDIOS OF THE SPANISH FRONTIER

For some time the friars had been asking for the establishment of a mission in the territory between the San Antonio and Guadalupe rivers. In 1716 the matter was laid before the viceroy, with the recommendation that a mission which Padre Olivares had planned to establish on the San Antonio river was, by all means, to be founded, since it could be used to prevent invasion through Bahia del Espiritu Santo, and as a connecting link between this bay and the country of the Tejas. Following this recommendation orders were issued for the establishment of one or more missions between the San Antonio and Guadalupe rivers. In locating these missions and the Indian settlements connected with them, space should be left for the founding of two cities or villas, which, as time passed, would be needed as capitals of the province.

In May, 1718, Father Antonio de Buenaventura y Olivares, in pursuance of the viceroy's orders, removed "the Xumanes Indians and everything belonging to the mission of San Francisco Solano," on the Rio Grande, to the San Antonio river, where he founded the mission of San Antonio de Valero, named in honor of the patron saint and the viceroy, Marques de Valero. The mission was located on the right bank of the San Pedro, about three quarters of a mile from the present cathedral of San Fernando. There it remained until 1722, when it was removed, with the presidio, to Military Plaza.

About the site of the old mission has since grown the city of San Antonio. After the mission came the military garrison and civil settlement. For a description of this we turn to an ancient chronicle, the *Compendium of the History of Texas*, written by Bonilla in 1722:\* "The missionaries kept anxiously begging for San Denis, with a view

\* As translated by Elizabeth Howard West in *Tex. Hist. Assn. Quarterly*, Vol. VIII.

to the subjection of the Indians, and clamoring for reinforcement of people helpful in promoting their stability. But his excellency, the Marques de Valero, gave the appointment of governor of Coaguila and Texas to Don Martin de Alarcon of the order of Santiago, with a salary of two thousand and five hundred pesos a year." Alarcon was a soldier of fortune, yet high in favor with the government. His achievements in Texas hardly justified his previous official record.

"This new governor," continues Bonilla, "was under orders to carry fifty married soldiers, three master carpenters, a blacksmith, and a stonemason, to teach the Indians and put the settlement on a firm basis, each one, like the soldiers, drawing a yearly salary of four hundred pesos. These measures were approved in royal cedula of the 11th of June, 1718.

"A year's salary was advanced to Alarcon, and at the beginning of 1718 he entered the province of Texas. But, although he founded the presidio of San Antonio de Vexar, the missionary fathers at once made complaint that he had not brought the master mechanics, or filled out the number of the [fifty] soldiers, and [that] those [he did bring were] idle fellows, and very hurtful, on account of belonging, for the greater part, to the most corrupt and worthless classes in all Nueva España; and, finally, that his irregular measures endangered success in the reduction of the heathen."

The settlement, containing about thirty families, the presidio of San Antonio de Bexar, both founded by Alarcon, and the mission of San Antonio de Valero, which had just previously been founded by Padre Olivares, were all placed near together. "Hitherto the Tejas country had been the objective point of occupation. Now, Bexar, which was to become the final rallying point of the Spaniards, begins to rise into view; while the eastern frontier becomes a secondary consideration, and finally relatively unimportant. Bexar was at first founded to prevent invasion through Bahia, while later the settlement at Bahia (Goliad) was kept up as a means of protecting the more important stronghold on the San Antonio river."\*

Resuming the quaint commentary of Bonilla, we read: "War having broken out between Spain and France during the regency of the Duque de Orleans, the French invaded the presidio of Panzacola, on the 19th of May, 1719; and on the same day in the month of June following, Don Luis de San Denis took the opportunity to relieve his outraged feelings,

\* Mattie Alice Austin, on the Municipal Government of San Fernando de Bexar, in *Tex. Hist. Assn. Quarterly*, Vol. VIII.

by attacking, with the aid of the Indians of the north, the missions of los Adaes and Texas and compelling their inhabitants to retreat post-haste to the presidio of San Antonio de Vexar."

This French invasion had the usual effect of stirring the Spaniards to fervid activity. Alarcon having in the meantime resigned, the government of Texas and defense of its borders was intrusted to Marques de San Miguel de Aguayo, who started on his march to Texas in the year 1720 "with five hundred dragoons which he had levied at his own cost, and two companies of cavalry, paying all expenses occasioned by this expedition. He came without opposition to the Adaes country, as the French had retreated to their posts of Candodachos and Nachitoches, and the general convocation of Indians, which San Denis had assembled, had disappeared.

"The king, being notified that this expedition had been prepared, ordered that when the Province of Texas was once recovered, steps should be taken to fortify it, and that the war should not be waged against the French. Accordingly, all acts of hostility were suspended.

"The Marques de Aguayo re-established the old missions, founded the rest which are now in existence, and the presidios of Nuestra Señora del Pilar de los Adaes, Loreto or Bahia del Espiritu Santo, on the same site where Roberto Cavalier de la Sala had put his fort, and that of los Dolores, which today is the site of the abandoned Orcoquisac; he found a better site for San Antonio de Bexar, locating it between the rivers San Antonio and San Pedro; and finally, left the province garrisoned with two hundred and sixty-eight soldiers, . . . taking eighteen months for the expedition."

Aguayo gave San Antonio another mission. San Jose de Aguayo, the most beautiful of all the missions, even in its present ruins, was "erected" (that is, authorized) in 1720; being denominated "de Aguayo" in honor of the governor who came to the province in that year. It was the first of the missions about San Antonio to be finished, on March 5, 1731; on the same date the three others missions south of the city were begun.

"When the Marques de San Miguel de Aguayo retired from the Province of Texas, in 1722, his lieutenant general, Don Fernando Peres de Almazan, stayed as governor. In the time of the former the attacks of the common and the most perfidious enemy of the Internal Provinces, the Apache tribe, had begun to be experienced; afterwards they were so often repeated and so cruel that they compelled the governor to ask

for permission to wage a vigorous war against the tribe if they did not consummate the peace which they had promised."

Meanwhile the Padres prosecuted their labors under many disadvantages. Their requests for a larger number of actual settlers, whose example would be beneficial to their proteges, met no response. In fact, when, in 1727, Rivera made a general inspection of the province, "he reduced the garrison of los Adaes to sixty troops, that of la Bahía del Espíritu Santo to forty, and that of San Antonio de Vexar to forty-three; and he suppressed that of Nuestra Señora de los Dolores; so that the strength of these companies, which had consisted of two hundred and sixty-eight men, remained, as a result of this *revista*, one hundred and forty-three. Even this number of troops seemed to him too large."

The missions in northeast Texas were found to be without warrant for existence, so few were their Indian converts. "Next to the presidio of Nuestra Señora de los Dolores, he inspected the establishment of the missions of Nuestra Señora de la Concepcion de los Asinais, San Francisco de los Neches, San Josef de los Nazones; all without Indians, and the missionaries with little hopes of collecting them. These missions, however, were afterward removed to the vicinity of San Antonio de Vexar."

This removal, which was effected about 1730, brought to the capital city of the province the three remaining missions whose ruins still form such picturesque features of San Antonio. Mission of Nuestra Señora de la Concepcion Purisima de Acuna was transferred to a point south of the presidio and became the "first mission" as it is now called (referring to its position, not to the date of its building). The foundation stone of this mission was laid, as above stated, March 5, 1731, the same day on which San Jose was completed. The building required twenty-one years, being completed in 1752. Mission San Josef de los Nazones, when transferred to San Antonio, was re-dedicated as San Juan de Capistrano. San Francisco de los Neches became San Francisco de la Espada. The actual work of construction of each of these began in March, 1731.

The present city of San Antonio may be considered a whole body, with, of course, many factors combining to make it a body politic and social. One could not now consider the religious institutions in a group apart from the city; a comprehensive view of San Antonio would embrace the churches as one of the prominent features of the city. And the same is true of all institutions, social groups, and commercial or other interests located anywhere in the municipal limits.



ALAMO PLAZA, FIFTY YEARS AGO

But to understand the early history of the city, it is necessary to have a clear conception of the three distinct and co-ordinate elements existing side by side on the site of the present city, and from the aggregate of which San Antonio is descended. These were, first, the mission San Antonio de Valero, a religious establishment with priests, attendant laborers and converted Indians; second, the presidio, or garrison of soldiers, whose primary object was to maintain the authority of Spain in the land, at the same time furnishing protection to the missions; and third, the villa, or settlement, an organization separate from both the other two, and whose local governing officers were responsible only to the governor of the province or his superiors. Here, then, were three independent institutions—military, political and religious—each containing social and industrial elements to serve as the nucleus of a civic community; eventually their separate identities became merged under the one municipal title of San Antonio.

The presidio, that is, the military post, of San Antonio de Bexar was established in 1718. About the same time, and in the vicinity of the garrison, was established the mission San Antonio de Valero. Around, and, it might be said, under the auspices of these two establishments, a number of persons located whose objects were permanent settlement; instead of working directly and exclusively for the welfare of the mission, or acting in the capacity of soldiers, they built themselves homes, put a certain amount of land in cultivation, grazed their small flocks on the common pasture, and became bona fide colonists. It is probable that some of the soldiers, their term of service over, were sufficiently attached to the locality to remain as settlers. It is not known how many of these independent settlers there were, but some years later they asserted claim to being "the true and most ancient inhabitants and conquerors of that territory." This was the origin of the villa of San Fernando, a civil community differing materially from the missionary and presidial establishments that were the principal instruments in the early Spanish occupation of Texas.\*

The colonization of the province being as much a part of the royal plan as its military occupation and the conversion of the Indians, the authorities soon found that emigration to this point did not proceed with satisfactory volume. As a result, in 1722 a royal decree directed that four hundred families from the Canary Islands should be brought to Texas

\* Mr. I. J. Cox, "The Early Settlers of San Fernando," in *Tex. Hist. Assn. Quarterly*, Vol. V.



as settlers. None came in obedience to this order, and in 1729 it was decreed that every vessel leaving the Canaries for Havana should carry ten or twelve families to be sent on to Texas. The company of between fifty and sixty persons that left Teneriffe in the following year became the "Canary Islands" settlement of San Fernando, whose members and descendants have since occupied so prominent a place in San Antonio history.

Some information about San Antonio as it was just before the coming of the Canary Islanders is supplied in the instructions to the governor, Don Juan Antonio Bustillo. He was instructed "to go, as soon as the families shall arrive, taking such persons of intelligence as may be available, to examine the site a gunshot's distance to the western side of the presidio, where there is a slight elevation forming a plateau suitable for founding a very fine settlement. On account of its location it will have the purest air, and the freshest of waters flowing from two springs or natural fountains situated on a small hill a short distance northeast from the presidio of Bexar. From these are formed, on the east, the San Antonio river, and, on the west, the small river called the Arroya. . . . Between these two streams the presidio is built. East of the river is the mission of San Antonio [the Alamo]; while to the west of it is the mission of San Joseph, from which one can go to the presidio without crossing the river, and since there is a church at the presidio which they can visit for that purpose, until a church is built for them, these families may attend the mass and other Catholic services [at that place] without the trouble of crossing the river."

The colony arrived at Vera Cruz in June, 1730, and by slow stages proceeded northward, arriving in San Antonio de Bexar, March 9, 1731. All the expense of this long journey was borne by the royal treasury, and the colony was supported for a year after its arrival. The experiment was a costly one, and was not repeated by the government. And instead of four hundred families proposed by the royal decree for the colonization of the province, only sixteen actually came.

It is evident that by no means all the old families of San Antonio trace their ancestry back to the Canary Islanders. The latter class, because of their importation as crown colonists, considered themselves the aristocracy of the villa, but their claims to being "first settlers," and their many pretensions to superior influence and rights in the colony, were vigorously disputed. Discord soon appeared between the "hidalgos"

from the Canary Islands and the other citizens of San Fernando, nor were the relations of villa, presidio and mission always harmonious.\*

The villa of San Fernando was located between the San Antonio and the San Pedro, the building lots being grouped for the most part around the plaza just east of the presidial or military plaza; in other words, the "Main Plaza," as known today, was the central point of old Fernando villa. Besides a lot assigned for residence to each family, there were common pasture lands and a *labor* for cultivation, irrigated from the waters of the San Antonio or San Pedro. The pasture land lay both north and south of the villa, between the two streams.

The San Fernando settlers, according to the testimony of De Croix in 1778, "live miserably because of their laziness, captiousness and lack of means of subsistence, which defects show themselves at first sight." Much was due to the environment and the conditions under which the settlement had been founded. There were no attempts at public education, and there were no representatives of the learned professions, not even a physician. The parish church, however, had been demanded almost at the beginning, although the mission chapels were conveniently close to the villa. The corner-stone of the San Fernando church was laid May 8, 1744, and was built largely by contributions from the royal treasury. The church was used for a century and a quarter.

\* In the dispute as to priority of settlement, a petition was presented to the governor in 1787, which is of special interest because of the claim made that the settlement of San Antonio was begun in 1715, or three years before the founding of the presidio and mission. A part of the petition reads as follows: "It is certainly evident and clear that the settlement of this province of Texas was begun in the year 15 of our present century. The province was given this name by the captains who made various expeditions into it in times past in obedience to superior orders. In these [expeditions] they had only the satisfaction of reconnoitering the province, but never the pleasure of settling it till the above mentioned year. Then, some bold citizens, from the two neighboring provinces . . . which were at that time the last and frontier provinces of Nueva España, desirous of renown or wishing to advance their own private interests, had well authenticated and individual information that the many gentile nations living in these two provinces and in their principal districts about this time were at peace, . . . conceived the idea [of settling in Texas], and with manly courage set out to seek the famous and much lauded river of San Antonio, on whose banks they formed a settlement very near the point at which our villa San Fernando is planted today. They brought with them not only their wives and children, but all their goods, cattle, horses, goats, sheep, and such other things as they thought necessary for their sustenance, returning from time to time to the presidio of San Juan Bautista del Rio Grande for the comforts of religion. They had no troops for their defense except the guard they themselves formed from their own number. There remains at this time only the memory of their coming, of the names of the most prominent men among them, . . . and of the survival and increase of the cattle they brought. This memory exists in the minds of their descendants—our relatives, but it is not such as those men deserve as first settlers."

## CHAPTER V

### TEXAS DURING THE LAST HALF OF THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY

It required only a few brief paragraphs for Bonilla, whose Brief Compendium is dated 1772, to describe the province of Texas and the status of its settlement at that time. The following is his "brief description of the province":

"At the Medina river, where the government of Coaguila ends, that of Texas begins; it ends at the presidio of Nuestra Señora del Pilar de los Adaes. Its length from south to north is estimated at two hundred and forty leagues, and its width from east to west as eighty. To the southeast it borders on the Gulf of Mexico, and to the east-northeast on Luisiana.

"This very spacious region contains the Presidio of San Antonio de Vexar, eight leagues distant from the Medina river and three hundred and seventy from this capital [Mexico]. It has a garrison composed of a captain, a lieutenant, an *alferez*, a sergeant, two corporals and thirty-nine soldiers. Under its protection are the Villa of San Fernando and five missions, namely: San Antonio de Valero, La Purisima Concepcion, Señor San Josef, San Juan Capistrano, and San Francisco de la Espada. Taking a southeasterly course, one finds at forty leagues' distance from the said Presidio of Vexar that of Espiritu Santo, with the missions of Nuestra Señora del Rosario and San Bernardo.

"The Presidio of Orcoquisac used to be situated in the center of the province, and in its immediate neighborhood was the mission of Nuestra Señora de la Luz [the latter having been founded on the lower Trinity, about 1756]. Since it is at present abandoned, however, its garrison, composed of a captain, a lieutenant, a sergeant and twenty-five soldiers, is to be found in San Antonio de Vexar.

"At a distance of a little more than a hundred and twenty-six leagues from the above-named mission of Nuestra Señora de la Luz are situated those of Nacogdoches and los Ais.

"The Presidio of Nuestra Señora del Pilar de los Adaes is the most remote settlement of the province. It has adjoining it the mission of the same name. It is seven leagues distant from the Presidio of Nachitoches, which belongs to the government of Luisiana, twenty from the mission of los Ais, forty-seven from that of Nacogdoches, one hundred and fifty from the Presidio of Orcoquisac, two hundred from that of la Bahia, two hundred and forty from that of San Antonio de Vexar, and six hundred from this capital. Its force consists of a captain,—the governor of the province holds that office,—a lieutenant, an *alferez*, a sergeant, six corporals, and forty-one soldiers.

"At present, therefore, the province contains four presidios, one villa, and eleven missions, and has assigned for its defense one hundred and sixty effective troops, including nine officers, whose salary and stipend amount to eighty-eight thousand and ninety-six pesos a year."

These results seem very small when we consider the sacrifices of blood, treasure and missionary zeal during the century since La Salle arrived on Matagorda bay. From all the mass of details concerning expeditions, Indian difficulties and changes of government administrations, the fact of most importance is the obvious concentration of population, missions and government at San Antonio. By the close of the century, San Antonio was Texas, almost literally. It was the capital of the province, contained most of the population, and possessed the only Spanish civilization that was destined to endure during the revolutionary changes of the following century.

In 1763 the treaty of Paris, following what is known in America as the French and Indian war, had some important results on Texas. France by that treaty surrendered all its territory east of the Mississippi to England; all on the west, including Louisiana, was given to Spain. The Mississippi was now the eastern boundary of the Spanish provinces, instead of the Sabine, and the fear of aggression from the French of Louisiana was removed. This fear had been the originating cause in the colonizing efforts in Texas which have already been described. It was now allayed, and instead of being a "buffer" province, to be garrisoned against foreign invasion, Texas was now practically interior and remote from encroachment. The English settlements were as yet far east of the Mississippi, and the government anticipated no danger from that source in the near future.

As a result of this treaty a new policy was soon inaugurated in Texas occupation. A report, sent to the viceroy in 1767, by Marques

de Rubi, contended that Spain was spreading her forces of occupation over too much ground, and thereby weakening the entire frontier. It recommended a contraction of the line of defense and the forming of a strong cordon of presidios across the northern border from the Gulf of California on the west to the Bay of Espiritu Santo on the east. As no further danger was apprehended from Louisiana, the presidios in East Texas should be abandoned and their soldiers added to the other garrisons. At that time the missions in this quarter were practically without converts, and hence little reason to continue their support. The settlers on the *ranchos* about the presidios should be removed within the line of defense, and given homes at the villa of San Fernando or in the neighborhood of some other presidio.

The plan here recommended received the approval of the king and a royal order was issued in 1772 for the abandonment of the presidios, missions and settlements north and east of Bahia and Bexar, and their transfer within the new line of defense. The Presidio of Orcoquisac and its neighboring mission of Nuestra Señora de la Luz (at the present site of Liberty) had already been abandoned. In all the wide country north and east of San Antonio and Bahia there was only the little group of missions and presidio and ranches about Nacogdoches to be affected by this order from the king.

Near the Presidio of Pilar de los Adaes was a considerable settlement, composed of Spanish, Indians and French, who protested against being removed to Bexar. The most influential man among them was Gil Ybarbo, a shrewd and energetic leader, whose rancho was a principal center of the settlements in this part of Texas. He was suspected, and his subsequent activities justified the suspicion, of being in league with the French traders of Louisiana, whose smuggling operations continued throughout the years of this century, despite the laws for suppressing this traffic. The opportunities of trade on the Louisiana border were among the chief attractions of residence about Nacogdoches, and the settlers were distressed no less by the thought of abandoning the profits of this trade than by the loss of the homes where they had lived so long. It is necessary to explain, in this connection, that while Louisiana was now a Spanish province, its inhabitants were French, and the restrictions on trade intercourse between the adjacent countries were as rigid as they had been before 1763. However, an illicit trade had been carried on over the border ever since St. Denis had made his notable excursion. There were consequently a number of persons, on both sides of the frontier,

interested in this business, and they were very loath to obey the king's order to remove to San Antonio.

However, the removal was made, enforced by the military guard, and a company of over two hundred made the long pilgrimage to Bexar, their numbers being constantly thinned by desertions and by sickness and deaths caused by the hardships of the way. Some contrived to remain behind, so that this portion of Texas was never entirely depopulated.

After arriving at San Antonio, the enterprising Ybarbo at once undertook the task of gaining permission to reoccupy that part of the province. He finally succeeded in obtaining authority to establish a settlement not nearer than one hundred leagues of Natchitoches, and with many of his former companions found a new home on the banks of the Trinity river. In honor of the viceroy the settlement was called Bucareli, and was situated near the present site of Randolph (in Madison county).<sup>\*</sup> Ybarbo and his followers again resumed their relation with the French traders of Louisiana. Bucareli had a brief existence, however. It was raided by the Comanches on several occasions, and early in 1779 a flood from the river caused the inhabitants to abandon the site. From Bucareli the refugees, led by Ybarbo, returned to their former homes in the spring of 1779. Instead of settling near the old Presidio of del Pilar, they chose to locate at Nacogdoches. Their arrival there marks the beginning of the history of the modern Nacogdoches. The removal to Nacogdoches, though contrary to the royal orders of 1772, went unrebuked, and the settlement continued to increase in importance until it attained a strategic position as a Spanish outpost hardly second to the capital at San Antonio. Ybarbo was given the official title of lieutenant-governor of the Pueblo of Nacogdoches, and was the most influential Spaniard of that vicinity, both among Indians and whites.

One of the principal reasons for the policy adopted in 1772 was the increasing hostility of the Indians. These enemies became especially active about the middle of the century, and constituted a graver source of danger to the provinces than any that could come from foreign invasion. The Apaches and the Comanches, from the north and northwest, were a constant terror to both the settlers and the more peaceable natives. One attempt was made to found a mission (San Saba) among the Apaches, but the enterprise came to a disastrous end. The principal wealth of the settlements consisted in the droves of stock, pastured on

<sup>\*</sup> H. E. Bolton, "Spanish Abandonment and Reoccupation of East Texas," in *Tex. Hist. Assn. Quarterly*, Vol. IX.

the commons about the missions and presidios, and these were the booty most sought in these depredations. The garrisons were unable to prevent these raids, nor strong enough to conduct a successful pursuit.

The remaining years of the century were a period of stagnation. The colonies barely held their own, while the central government made no serious attempt to extend the frontier beyond the line established early in the century. Says Bancroft: "It was not a period of prosperity for any Texas interests except so far as the officers, soldiers and settlers may be said to have prospered in their great work of living with the least possible exertion. Officials as a rule kept in view their own personal profit in handling the presidio funds, rather than the welfare of the province. The Franciscans were doubtless faithful as missionaries, but their influence, even over the natives, was much less than in other mission fields. The Texans never became neophytes proper in regular mission communities. It is evident that not one of the establishments was at any time prosperous either from a material or a spiritual point of view. At each mission there was a constant struggle to prevent excesses and outrages by the soldiers, to protect land and water from encroachment by settlers, to guard mission live-stock from Apache raids, to keep the few Indians from running away, and to watch for and counteract ruinous changes projected from time to time by the secular authorities."

The mission Indians became more and more wretched with each year to the close of the century. Finally the royal treasury declined its further support for the missions, and in 1794 the missions were turned over to the secular clergy. The result of this measure was the distribution of the mission lands and dispersion of the Indians, and the end of the labor of the Franciscan friars.

There is no accurate information as to the condition, population and industrial affairs of Texas at the close of the eighteenth century. There were about a dozen missions in existence at the time of their secularization. Around eight establishments in 1785 there were some four hundred and sixty Indians. In 1782 the soldiers and settlers numbered about twenty-five hundred. The Indians about the pueblos would hardly earn their own subsistence, and the missions, with their beautiful adornments, seemed to belong to a golden age of prosperity long past; the settlers were little more energetic than the natives; and the soldiers were supported by the government.



## CHAPTER VI

### AMERICAN AND SPANISH CIVILIZATIONS MEET IN LOUISIANA—FIRST STAGES OF THE INEVITABLE CONFLICT

American aggression and advance on Texas involves some of the most interesting and at the same time perplexing features of American history. With the events which open this part of the narrative many familiar names are connected—Thomas Jefferson, the president; Aaron Burr, a former vice president and a consummate promoter and intriguer; General Andrew Jackson, already one of the influential figures of the Mississippi valley; General James Wilkinson, commander of the regular army in Louisiana, and many other characters only less well known. Of those named, Wilkinson became the chief actor in the initial disputes between Spain and America on the borderland between Texas and Louisiana. But the other names indicate the great scope of the movement, which not alone affected Texas, but also the destiny of the American nation.

July 2, 1787, James Wilkinson, an ex-brigadier general, who had fought gallantly in the Revolution, arrived at New Orleans, having come down the river from the Kentucky settlements with flat-boats of tobacco, hemp and other merchandise. A man of restless energy, ambitious for his own advancement and not always scrupulous of means or careful of steadfast loyalty, he was at this time in reduced circumstances, and since his occupation as a soldier in the cause of independence was gone he adventured in the settlements along the Ohio and Mississippi valleys, and sought to make his material fortune equal to his reputation as a soldier and standing as a gentleman. With a mind eminently fitted for intrigue, with a military and authoritative bearing, with a winning and convincing address, these qualities were seemingly not combined with the poise of character and stability of high purpose that would have insured him a place of honor among the makers of the nation. Feeling that his advancement had not been commensurate with his abilities, he now showed his

readiness to take part in enterprises of doubtful loyalty. His insight into the future and at times statesmanlike understanding of the western situation became a positive menace to the American republic, which was, at the date mentioned, just being welded into unity by the framers of the constitution. That his activities had a vital bearing on the early American movement to Texas will appear in the course of this narrative.

Wilkinson's immediate objects at New Orleans were commercial privileges; in fact, he made those negotiations a cloak for all his deeper plans while there. To further his interests he took the oath of allegiance to Spain on August 22, 1787.

At the treaty of 1783, the southwestern possessions of the United States were bounded by the Mississippi river on the west and the thirty-first parallel on the south. South of this parallel was the area called West Florida, which was ceded to Spain. Thus the latter nation held both sides of the Mississippi from the mouth of Red river to New Orleans, and absolutely controlled the navigation of that waterway. This was the only outlet for the products of the upper Mississippi and Ohio, and even so early as 1787, as Wilkinson's visit with his flat-boats proves, it had become a matter of pressing importance to the Kentucky settlers that no restrictions should be laid on commerce at New Orleans. But Wilkinson had deeper designs than the privileges of free trade, as is made clear in his memorial to Governor Miro of the province of Louisiana.\*

Wilkinson argues that the new American Republic's administration was necessarily weak in the western frontier districts, that the political welfare and commercial interests of Kentucky could not be properly promoted by the federal government, and the inevitable result would be a separate confederacy in the west, with the Mississippi river as the outlet of their commerce and means of communication with the world. If this new confederacy could not form an alliance with Spain, it would naturally invite one with Great Britain. This would be clearly injurious to the interests of Spain, if it would not actually threaten the overthrow of Spanish authority west of the Mississippi. Continuing, Wilkinson states that he was urged to go to New Orleans by prominent fellow residents of Kentucky, "in order to develop, if possible, the disposition of Spain toward their country and to discover, if practicable, whether she would be willing to open a negotiation for our admission to her protection as subjects, with certain privileges in religious and political matters. . . ." Though Kentucky still clings to her original allegiance, he is certain of the estab-

\* Documents and discussion by W. R. Shepherd in *Amer. Hist. Review*, Vol. IX.

lishment of an independent state in the near future, and that this state will apply to Spain for the privileges just mentioned. Should Spain assent to his propositions, he would at once proceed to use his influence to bring about the secession. In case the plan should be rejected by the court, he trusts the minister "to bury these communications in eternal oblivion," which, if divulged, would "destroy my fame and fortune forever." That Wilkinson was sincerely committed to his plan, so prejudicial to the united interests of the colonies, receives strengthening proof in his adroit advice that Spain should close the navigation of the lower Mississippi to Americans, thus giving a powerful lever for the consummation of his designs.

The reply from Madrid, though long in coming, was distinctly favorable to the general outlines of Wilkinson's schemes. But in the meantime the American states had inaugurated government under the new constitution, with an enthusiasm and general unanimity that augured well for the permanence of the republic. In a second memorial to Governor Miro, dated September 17, 1789, Wilkinson, alluding to the altered state of affairs since his first communication and Kentucky's increased loyalty to the Union and Constitution, expresses his belief that it would be unwise to attempt to win over the people of the west as *subjects* of Spain. But separation from the Union should be promoted by every means, and, this accomplished, a strong alliance should be cemented between Spain and the new state or confederacy. He advised, in furtherance of this plan, the encouragement of immigration into Louisiana, so that the people and the interests on both sides of the Mississippi should be nearly identical. In order to attract "the interest and regard of the influential men of the principal settlements," the governor should be authorized "to distribute pensions and rewards among the chief men in proportion to their influence, ability or services rendered." This system of bribery would be effective in securing separation when the time came, since such men of influence would direct public opinion to the end sought, or at least would prevent any hostile attitude toward Spain in the Louisiana and Mexican provinces. Twenty or thirty thousand dollars, judiciously distributed annually, might save the crown as many millions and vast territories, by neutralizing the American expansion which Wilkinson saw, or professed to see, would sweep over the Mississippi valley. It is impossible not to admire the shrewdness of his argument, however his motives may be interpreted. He pointed out to the governor that Congress would endeavor to check emigration to Louisiana and attempt to win over the

prominent men of the western country to the interests of those of the Atlantic, "which is the greatest obstacle and danger that we can apprehend for the success of our idea." Spain should exert herself at this opportune time, before it should be too late, for,—so he reasoned with much foresight,—with the west solidly united to the east, its citizens, instead of forming a barrier for Louisiana and Mexico, will conquer one and attack the other—as the course of events finally brought to pass. "Louisiana, important in itself when considered as a frontier of Mexico, cannot be overestimated; with this province lost to Spain, the Mexican kingdom will be stirred to its very depths in less than fifty years." He believes that Kentucky will incline to accept admission into the Union, and he proposes to use all means to retain the *status quo* until the plans for separation can be matured.

If dependence is to be placed in Wilkinson's boasts, it is evident that the conspiracy included many influential men. Besides asking for himself liberal compensation and military rank in the Spanish army in return for his services and sacrifices, Wilkinson designates, among those listed for "pensions and rewards" to pledge their interest to Spain, an attorney general, a lawyer, a member of Congress and a judge, all his personal and confidential friends in Kentucky; besides other "notables" who favored separation from the United States.

It is not the purpose to pursue the discussion of this so-called "Spanish Conspiracy" in detail; but the general facts of the movement are quite essential to a proper understanding of that period of Texas history with which we are now dealing. Wilkinson called attention to the increasing sentiment for the Union, and how necessary it was that the Spaniards should act quickly if they would secure Kentucky. Though a pensioner of Spain to the extent of thousands of dollars, Wilkinson never succeeded in bringing the conspiracy to a successful issue. Loyalty to the government which they had helped establish was a stronger force than the tendency to Spanish alliance, though that loyalty was tried to its utmost during the closing years of the century, under the Federalist regime. Even had the west separated from the east, it is unlikely that any enduring friendship with Spain could have been created. Antipathy to the Spanish people and their institutions, savoring so strongly of monarchy and religion, was probably inherent in the democratic backwoodsmen who settled in the valleys of the Ohio and the Cumberland. This antipathy became the bitterest hostility as soon as Spain insisted on restricting the navigation of the Mississippi. The

climax was reached in 1795, when a treaty was about to be entered into by the two nations, by which Federalist New England was to sacrifice the welfare of the south and west and permanently close the Mississippi to American commerce. Then it was that the secession of the west was openly threatened, and no doubt would have taken place, had not the treaty terms been changed so that the citizens of the United States not only gained the free navigation of the river, but the "right of deposit" at New Orleans—that is, the right to land their goods free of duty or other payment while awaiting trans-shipment.

With this treaty the crisis was passed, Spain's intrigue with the southern Indians and with the western settlers had accomplished no permanent results, except to deepen the American hatred of everything Spanish. The political school of Jefferson found its principal strength in the west, and with the triumphant entry to power, in 1800, of the Jeffersonian Republicans, the west became attached for all time to the Union, at the same time dooming to certain failure every such enterprise as that undertaken by Wilkinson.

But while the ties of loyalty to the Constitution and Union were being strengthened beyond the power of men or events to sunder, the progress of settlement was every day bringing the people of the Mississippi basin nearer to a final issue with Spain. The hardy, self-reliant and intensely democratic backwoodsmen of Kentucky and Tennessee could never indulge any other feeling than contempt and distrust for those **who**, as Spanish subjects, acknowledged the divine right of kings and accepted without question the doctrines of the inquisition. The Spanish policy of exclusiveness, of forbidding all aliens an entrance within the royal provinces, was just the sort of barrier that American adventure and hardihood would delight to break down and transgress. Thus early we see the seeds sown that later bore fruit in frequent filibustering expeditions within the Spanish and Mexican territory.

## CHAPTER VII

### POSITION OF TEXAS AT THE BEGINNING OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY

The dawn of the nineteenth century found Texas, as a province together with Coahuila, subject to a commandant general and a military and political governor sent from Mexico, from which distant source of authority also the dispensing of final justice and the control of fiscal and religious affairs were regulated; a population, estimated in 1805 at about seven thousand, besides the wild natives; with the principal settlements at San Antonio, with two thousand inhabitants; at Goliad, with fourteen hundred, and at Nacogdoches, with about five hundred. Laredo, on the Rio Grande, was also a considerable settlement, but at that time was in the province of Coahuila, the Medina river being the boundary line between the two provinces. The Texans of that time were a people with few of the refinements of civilization, and yet some degree of fashion and elegance prevailed in the old city of San Antonio. The chief occupations were pastoral, with some agriculture, and hunting. It was a society with barely enough civic energy and industrial enterprise to sustain itself. So much had Spain accomplished in more than a century.

By the treaty of Paris in 1763 France had ceded to Spain all the vast territory between the Mississippi and the Rocky mountains and north of Texas. By the secret treaty of San Ildefonso in 1800, Spain, under pressure from Napoleon, gave it back to France. At that time Napoleon included this region in his vast imperial designs. But in 1803 he saw he was likely to have a war with England, and that it would be impossible to protect such distant possessions. The result was the monumental transaction known as the Louisiana purchase, by which Napoleon transferred the Louisiana Territory to the United States in consideration of fifteen million dollars. Thus at one bound the American Republic was extended from the Mississippi to the Rocky mountains, and another step had been taken in the extension of Anglo-Saxon civilization. By conquest it had removed from its path the French dominions east of the

Mississippi, and by diplomacy and far-sighted statecraft it made the Louisiana purchase. Spain alone barred its progress to the western ocean. And of this region of Spanish dominion, Texas was the threshold which American enterprise would first cross.

The expansion of the American republic has often been explained by the theory of "manifest destiny." Were not Texas and the territory gained in the Mexican war, by the very philosophy of civilization, as it were, and historical fate, a predestined outgrowth of the original Thirteen Colonies?—so questions the exponent of this theory. Westward the course of empire takes its way; and it has been a well observed fact of territorial expansion and settlement, on the American continent at least, that the trend of migration and occupation has been directly along isothermal lines. Thus the Yankee element of New England suffused itself over the northern tier of states, and the tide of settlers from Virginia and the Carolinas seldom flowed north of Mason and Dixon's line. Accordingly, with the source of the expansion movement extending along the Atlantic from Maine to Georgia, and spreading always to the west, it was inevitable that, unless permanently blocked, this pioneering advance would in time reach to the Pacific, and as the course of history proves, there was no power to check nor restrain this movement.

A few years later than this, De Tocqueville, in his essays on America, declared: "It is not to be imagined that the impulse of the Anglo-Saxon race can be arrested. Their continual progress towards the Rocky mountains has the solemnity of a providential event. Tyrannical government and consequent hostilities may retard this impulse, but cannot prevent it from ultimately fulfilling the destinies for which that race is reserved.

. . . Thus, in the midst of the uncertain future, one event is sure. At a period which may be said to be near, the Anglo-Americans alone will cover the immense space contained between the Polar Regions and the Tropic, extending from the coast of the Atlantic to the shores of the Pacific Ocean."

Aside from the hostility due to geographical position, Spain had not, during her forty years' ownership of the Mississippi valley, administered her authority in a way to please the western and southern Americans. Owning New Orleans and the lands bordering the gulf south of the thirty-first parallel, and thus controlling the navigation of the Mississippi, the Spanish administration made itself obnoxious by restrictions on commerce and interference with what the Americans deemed an unimpeachable right of free trade. In 1795, by treaty, Spain recognized the claim



of the United States to free navigation of the Mississippi and granted, under certain conditions, the privilege of depositing goods in New Orleans.

But for more than a decade the relations between America and Spain were such that several times war was hardly averted. Exclusion of American traders and settlers, which was a policy of Spain and in part of Mexico, aroused increasing bitterness and hatred, and when, in 1802, Morales, the intendant of Louisiana, withdrew the right of deposit at New Orleans, the entire country clamored for vindication by appeal to arms. The developments of the following months removed for the time the source of trouble and changed the locus of the difficulties. Hardly had the transfer of Louisiana to France become known, than the French became objects of invective just as the Spanish had previously been. It seemed impolitic to allow a foreign nation to control the mouth of a river which was the commercial route for the entire middle west. This was a matter of vital importance to the people of the west and south, and their urgent appeals to President Jefferson and Congress were an important factor in bringing about the Louisiana purchase.

This was only a partial solution of the difficulties. The Floridas remained to Spain. Because they bordered the southern settlements of that time, they were the first to be invaded, and "the conquest of the Floridas" was terminated by a treaty of purchase, by which Spain surrendered all her territory east of the Mississippi.

With the acquisition of Louisiana, began the negotiations over the boundaries between the United States and the Mexican provinces. The decision of the question whether the western boundary of Louisiana was the Arroyo Hondo, the Sabine or the Rio Grande involved a series of armed conflicts, continued, with long intervals, over a period of nearly half a century, the final result of which completed the extension of the United States to the Pacific.

Though the American claim to the Sabine as the western boundary may have lacked the support of convincing evidence,—not to mention the pretensions to the country east of the Rio Grande, which were, indeed, of flimsy character,—there is no doubting the temper of the American people at that time concerning the matter. The decrees of the Spanish authorities forbidding all intercourse between Spanish-America and Louisiana only stimulated the spirit of adventure and enterprise among the daring American traders and settlers. As pioneers, they had borne their type of civilization across the Alleghanies and the Mississippi, and to delay

further advance because of the presence of a people they regarded as miserable and unfit to possess and enjoy the boundless resources of the new world, was hardly in keeping with the character of the Americans at that time.

The beginnings of American influence in Texas are first seen definitely in the first years of the nineteenth century. Before this there was a sprinkling of Americans in the population, but the inroads into the province were only the results of private enterprise and had little political significance. Some Americans had settled near Nacogdoches, along the San Antonio road, but were allowed to remain undisturbed only because they swore allegiance to the Spanish king.

Trade was a stronger incentive than settlement. Illicit trade between Louisiana and the Mexican provinces dated from the French occupation of the former country. Between 1763 and 1800 the authorities were specially active in prohibiting this commerce, though they were not entirely successful, as has been stated. Against Americans the regulations were enforced more strictly than against the French. However, some American traders gained the favor of the local officials and pursued their vocations with little interruption.

One of these latter was Philip Nolan, born an Irishman, Celtic recklessness characterizing his adventures, and perhaps in the end resulting in his death. Since 1785 he had been engaged in trade between San Antonio and Natchez.

That Philip Nolan was a man of more than common ability and enterprise is shown by the fact that his adventures became known to Thomas Jefferson and excited the curiosity of that eminently versatile statesman, so that he took pains to ascertain the results of Nolan's discoveries as a contribution to the history of the country and to natural science. Writing to Nolan in June, 1798, Jefferson, whose interests in the domain of knowledge seemed to extend to every subject, sought a complete statement concerning the herds of wild horses in the country west of the Mississippi, in the pursuit of which he knew Nolan to be engaged. The letter did not reach Nolan, but an intimate friend of the latter, Daniel Clark Jr., of New Orleans, who claimed a close acquaintance with Nolan's activities, replied, in February, 1799, that "that extraordinary and enterprising man is now and has been for some years past employed in the countries bordering on the kingdom of New Mexico either in catching or pursuing wild horses, and [is] looked for on the banks of the Mississippi at the fall of the waters with a thousand head,

which he will in all probability drive into the United States." Also "after his return . . . I will be responsible for his giving you every information he has collected, and it will require all the good opinion you may have been led to entertain of his veracity not to have your belief staggered with the accounts you will receive of the numbers and habits of the horses of that country and the people who live in the neighborhood, whose customs and ideas are as different from ours as those of the hordes of Grand Tartary."

Clark, in a letter to Jefferson, dated November 12, 1799, speaks of Nolan's arrival at Natchez. "By a singular favor of providence," continues the letter, he "has escaped the snares which were laid for him—Gayoso, the late governor of the province of Louisiana, a few months before his death, wrote to the governor of Texas . . . to arrest Nolan on his return as a person who from the knowledge he had acquired of the interior parts of the New Mexico might one day be of injury to the Spanish monarchy. The thing would have been effected according to his wish, and Nolan might probably have been confined for life on mere suspicion, but fortunately the governor of Texas died a few days before the letter reached San Antonio, the capital of his government. The person exercising the office of governor pro tem., knowing that another person had been appointed by the viceroy, refrained from opening the letters . . . and during this interval Nolan, who was unconscious of the machinations of his enemies, passed through the province, was treated as usual with the utmost attention, and only learned the circumstances from me a few days ago."

The fate of Nolan is told in a letter to Jefferson, then president, written from Natchez, in August, 1801, a part of which reads: "We have lately been cut off from our usual communication with that country [New Mexico] by the imprudence of Mr. Nolan, who persisted in hunting wild horses without a regular permission; the consequence of which has been that, a party being sent against him, he was the only man of his company who was killed by a random shot. I am much concerned for the loss of this man. Although his eccentricities were many and great, yet he was not destitute of romantic principles of honor united to the highest personal courage, with energy of mind not sufficiently cultivated by education, but which under the guidance of a little more prudence might have conducted him to enterprises of the first magnitude."

Despite the warning about the governor's instructions, Nolan had organized his party and advanced into Spanish territory. Intimidating

by their strength one party of Spanish horsemen sent to intercept them, they went on as far as the Brazos, where they placed their camp and set about accomplishing the object of their expedition. Here, on March 21, 1801, they were attacked, eighteen in number, against one hundred and fifty Spaniards, led by Lieutenant Musquiz. Nolan was killed early in the fight. Ellis P. Bean, who was historian of the expedition, then took command. Driven from the log defenses to a ravine, they kept up stubborn resistance nearly all day, but ammunition failing, they finally consented to accompany Musquiz to Nacogdoches. Here they were detained a month, awaiting Salcedo's order for their return to the United States. But instead, they were brought in irons to San Antonio, and thence to San Luis Potosi, where they experienced sixteen months' imprisonment. Removed to Chihuahua, they were tried, and their sentence being referred to the king, it was five years before the decision arrived from Madrid. By this time there were nine left. By the royal order, every fifth man was to be hanged, which meant that one of the number must be taken. Blindfolded, the prisoners, probably little dreading the chance of death after six years of imprisonment, threw dice on a drumhead to decide who should die, death to go with the lowest number. Bean, the narrator of the circumstances, threw the lowest number but one. A man named Blackburn threw the fatal score. He was hanged in the presence of his comrades the following day, November 11, 1807. The others continued in captivity for varying lengths of time, some of them finally returning to the United States.

The Nolan expedition is usually recognized as the first noteworthy attempt of Americans to enter Texas. It was without special significance except that it aroused definite interest in the regions west of the Mississippi. Its incidents were very likely magnified in popular opinion and added to the score which Americans believed they must soon settle with the Spanish.

## CHAPTER VIII

### THE REVOLT AGAINST SPANISH DESPOTISM—THE BURR CONSPIRACY

That the Texas struggle for independence in 1836 was a product of the causes which led to the American revolution of 1776, is a proposition supported by a very fascinating logic. Historians agree that the rebellion of the Thirteen Colonies was one phase of the greater struggle of the entire English people for civic liberty and constitutional rights against the waning power of monarchy and the "divine right of kings." The ideas and principles thus fought for and established did not remain solely the proud possession of English peoples. The French revolutionists found inspiration and example in the American war for independence, and similar ideals of liberty bound the two nations in bonds of active sympathy.

Nor did the movement stop there. The first shots fired for liberty were in truth heard "round the world," and the strongholds of despotism were shaken as never before. Even in Spain, the home of the inquisition, the current ideals of liberty found lodgment. Though such radical sentiments were sternly repressed at home, this once powerful nation found a dire menace in the progress of republican doctrines in the foreign colonies, where the most rigorous measures soon became unavailing against revolutions. Spanish America, by its position as a neighbor to the United States, was peculiarly open to the influence of the new political ideas. Suffering under greater wrongs than the Thirteen Colonies ever had to endure, the colonies of Mexico and South America had every reason to be dissatisfied with their lot. Of their internal conditions and relations with the home government, a writer\* of that period said: "that the Spanish colonies supported the parent as Anchises of old was supported by his children; but that they had become tired of the weight and cared not how soon the burden was shuffled off." A crisis had been reached in

\* Quoted in "The Aaron Burr Conspiracy," by W. F. McCaleb.

the long era of absolutism and oppression which had characterized Spain's authority in the new world.

Coming back to the first link in this chain of argument, it is evident that the people of the United States would watch with sympathy and interest any movement to establish the civic ideals for which their own revolution was fought. And at the beginning of the nineteenth century, the achievements for independence were still fresh in the minds of the people, and the sentimentalism of patriotism was an influence not to be estimated by the colder standards of a century later. The basic principles of democracy were very dear to the people, and their sympathy was readily excited by efforts in other parts of the world to gain the same privileges. If, during the French revolution, Americans lent something more than sympathy to their fellow patriots across the water, what more natural than that they should be ready to champion the cause of oppressed Mexico when its people sought disunion with the mother country?

Though a proper understanding of this attitude of Americans to Mexico is an essential point of view for regarding the events to be described in the following pages, there was more than disinterested sympathy that impelled the American advance into the Southwest. Desire to assist the revolutionists was strongly alloyed with the selfishness that has furnished the sinews of war to most of the revolutions that have occurred on the American continents during the past century. Only seldom in the history of the world has one nation gone to the assistance of another without a *quid pro quo*—a material reward that lends a practical aspect to many a glorious campaign. At the beginning, the movement of the Americans against Spain had two impulses—the sentimentalism for freedom and sympathy for those oppressed by monarchical despotism; and a longing for the material fruits of conquest.

It is a fact of much importance that American civilization came in conflict with Spain in Louisiana just at the time when the Spanish-American provinces were ripe for revolution. There can be no doubt that the American invasion was accelerated by the political unrest and disorder in the royal provinces. And had Spain been able and wise enough to maintain her American possessions in loyal unity, or had Mexican independence been conclusively established and an effective central government attained, it is possible that American aggression beyond the Sabine would have been repulsed, or at least the transfer of Texas to the Union would have been long delayed.

As in Cuba in the closing years of the century, so in Mexico at its

beginning, Spain outraged and humiliated beyond tolerance a people whose natural attitude was almost servile loyalty. Hardly a pretense of home government was granted. The Mexican born, though of pure Spanish parentage, were excluded from the rights of citizenship in favor of the "gachupines," or natives of Spain, who were granted the highest offices of church and state and the most discriminating commercial monopolies. Such nepotism was productive of the bitterest jealousy on the part of the native aristocracy, and hastened the consolidation of all grades of Mexican races in opposition to the privileged Spaniards from over the sea. These unjust distinctions had long borne heavily on the Spanish Americans and were gradually neutralizing their inherent reverence for his Most Catholic Majesty and his institutions.

But in addition to the tyrannical system that arrayed the laity against the crown, a long period of exactions had alienated the great mass of the clergy, who became the most eager agitators for revolution. The expulsion, in 1767, of the Jesuits, who had endeared themselves to the people, was still a bitter memory. Impoverished by costly European wars, Spain now resorted to measures that caused a general union of the clergy with the forces of revolt. In December, 1804, by royal order, all real estate and funds accumulated from loans on real estate belonging to the benevolent institutions were sequestered for the benefit of the royal revenues. Moreover, a little later, the deposits of corporations, the domestic revenues, and all available money wherever vested were demanded to reinforce the failing national exchequer. These levies brought ruin to thousands of all classes, but from the clergy in particular the protest was bitter and unanimous.

Such were the principal influences in operation during the early years of the nineteenth century to provoke revolt among the Spanish-American colonies. That revolutionary agitators and liberators were prompt to take up the cause of their oppressed people was a matter of course, since even now, with much less real justification, revolutionary movements in the Spanish-American republics are of such frequency as to be regarded common defects of the national character. And that many revolutionary conspiracies were fostered by sympathy and material support in the United States needs no further proof than the following narrative.

Turning from Mexico to the United States, we find by 1805 many developments which were soon to affect the status of Texas. December 17, 1803, William C. C. Claiborne had received possession of Louisiana from the French agent, Laussat, and in the autumn of 1804 a territorial

government was organized with Claiborne as first governor. Already American frontiersmen and settlers were pouring into the region, establishing homes, opening up new avenues of trade, and all the while extending their occupation to the west. Eager to prove the value and extent of the purchased territory, Jefferson had authorized the Lewis and Clark expedition, and those bold explorers were now pushing their way up the Missouri, where white men had never set foot before. About the same time Lieutenant Zebulon M. Pike was exploring the headwaters of the Mississippi, and was soon to start on his journey of discovery along the southwestern limits of Louisiana.

Hardly had the treaty for the Louisiana purchase been completed, when the question of western boundaries came up. Before 1763 the line of demarkation between New Spain and French Louisiana had never been definitely determined. As a result of La Salle's settlement, the French made claims to the country even as far as the Rio Grande. With the transfer of all the Louisiana country to Spain, the boundaries ceased to be a matter of controversy until 1800. The limits of Louisiana as defined in the treaty of San Ildefonso were indicated by this sentence: "The colony or province of Louisiana, with the same extent that it now has in the hands of Spain, and that it had when France possessed it." Practically the same language was used in the treaty negotiated by the American ministers and Napoleon in 1803. As can be readily seen, this was a very indefinite description of limits. Jefferson and his cabinet asserted that the Rio Grande was the southwestern boundary, although it is clear from their subsequent instructions to the Louisiana army of occupation that they did not feel justified or consider it expedient to enforce this expansive claim. Certain it is that the shadow of the claim is thrown over a long series of events from this time until the close of the Mexican war in 1848.

With revolution threatening in Mexico, and with the spirit of expansion dominating government and people in the United States, there comes upon the scene a new character—the first, and from many points of view the most interesting, of the political and commercial adventurers whose enterprises are intimately involved in the contest between the Spanish and American civilizations.

Aaron Burr had served brilliantly in the Revolutionary war, winning distinction in the futile campaign against Quebec and during the first four years of the war rising from the ranks to the command of a regiment. Then turning his attention to the law, he soon gained honors and



rank among the notable advocates and political leaders of New York. As the political opponent of Hamilton's faction, he advanced from the attorney-generalship of the state to a seat in the United States senate in 1791, and in 1800, he and Jefferson receiving an equal number of votes for president, after a long contest in the house of representatives, he was given second place, while Jefferson became president. As vice president, his career was a stormy one. The object of bitterest hostility from Hamilton and the Federalists, he soon alienated himself from the favor of his own party, and at the close of his term was a political outcast, all his versatile talents and experience being unavailing to reinstate him in power in the east.

With intimate knowledge of international politics in general, and of conditions in Mexico and the Spanish-American relations in the Southwest in particular, Burr directed his energies to schemes of imperial aggrandizement in the west. It has never been conclusively proved that he did not contemplate carrying out a plan for a western confederacy, along similar lines to that projected by Wilkinson a few years before. With some such thoughts in mind he made a tour of the west in 1805, and with the prestige of his former office and reputation he found abundant opportunities to sound and influence the opinions of all classes. In Wilkinson he found, at first, a ready coadjutor in his deepest designs. Wilkinson was now in command of the American army in the Mississippi valley. That he gave willing ear to Burr's intrigues shows the duplicity of his character; he was the same man who had sworn allegiance to Spain in 1787 and had been given a pension and military rank by the crown.

In Andrew Jackson, major general of the Tennessee militia and the popular idol of the Cumberland, Burr found an honest, patriotic and enthusiastic soul, in whom no hint of disaffection to the Union could harbor, but who became fired with ardor at the thought of leading a crusade into Mexico. Whatever may have been Burr's original plans, this visit to the west convinced him of the thorough loyalty of its citizens to the federal government. But against Spain he found the people readily hostile and many of them prepared to join an army of invasion. The ultimate extent and object of Burr's schemings may perhaps never be known. But his practicable enterprise soon reduced itself to an invasion of Spanish territory, partaking largely of the character of a filibuster.

Understanding the discontent of Spanish-America, and relying on the impulsive hatred of western Americans for all Spanish institutions,

he allowed his imagination to fancy a vast empire beyond the Mississippi river, where he might become the dominant figure in its government in recompense for his previous disappointments and failures.

In the net of his conspiracy Burr enmeshed a large number of influential men, both in the east and in the west. At Harman Blennerhassett's island in the Ohio river the building of boats and other practical preparations for the expedition were completed. Many persons throughout the Louisiana territory, as also east of the Mississippi, were cognizant of the plot and in more or less active sympathy with the movement. President Jefferson long refused to be disturbed by continued reports of the conspiracy, and it was not until the latter part of November, 1806, that he issued a proclamation warning all good citizens to desist from taking part in the military enterprise which he understood was being directed against the Spanish dominions. This proclamation did not reach the authorities along the Mississippi until the first of the year. By this time other causes had brought the expedition to verge of failure.

Burr's little fleet of boats had left Blennerhassett's island and with only about one-tenth of the force that had been expected were coming down the river to rendezvous at Natchez. In New Orleans, the French and Spanish population, dissatisfied with the new government, were causing Governor Claiborne no end of anxiety, which was magnified by the knowledge that the Burr conspirators were enlisting support in the city.

The Spanish authorities were hardly less well informed than the Americans of Burr's movements. From disputing the American claim to the Rio Grande by diplomatic means, they now seemed confronted with the necessity of repelling actual armed invasion, whose object was less that of territorial conquest than that of revolutionizing the entire Spanish-American provinces. Thus a hurried movement of troops and colonists was made into Texas, so that by June, 1806, over a thousand soldiers were in that province, nearly seven hundred of them being stationed on the frontier. Crossing the Sabine, they advanced into territory clearly included in Louisiana, and from which by the instructions of the American department of war they were to be rigidly excluded. The situation was such that hostilities seemed unavoidable, and the prospect of war with Spain gave the Burr expedition its strongest ground for success. Thousands of settlers would have volunteered eagerly to annihilate Spanish power in America, and the general opinion seemed to be that the war would not cease with the driving of the enemy beyond the Sabine.

Wilkinson reached Natchitoches and took command of the American

forces on September 22, 1806. Up to this time, as many proofs go to show, Burr and Wilkinson were acting in concert, and Wilkinson's attack on the Spanish forces at the frontier was meant to be the opening engagement in the general campaign against Mexico. With the first battle, the Burr forces should be resolved into an army of invasion, whose progress would not stop short of the conquest of Mexico.

But Wilkinson failed to carry out his part of the program, and thus became the chief instrument in effecting the ruin of Burr's hopes. Though Wilkinson's actions accorded with political wisdom and expediency, his proved character for double-dealing and selfish intrigue only convinces us, in this instance, of his skill as an opportunist and political trimmer. He was uncertain of the success of the campaign. Reliable information showed him the essential weakness of Burr's following. While, by quieting the discontent in Louisiana and then throwing the weight of his authority to crush the Burr conspiracy, he saw an opportunity to figure as the savior of the west to the Union. His policy decided on, he proceeded to carry it out in a manner that history can find little fault with, whatever the motives behind his actions.

The Spanish troops, under Governor Cordero, were at Nacogdoches, while Governor Herrera, with about four hundred men, was encamped at Bayou Pierre, east of the Sabine. Immediately on his arrival at Natchitoches, Wilkinson opened negotiations with Cordero, calling attention to the presence of Spanish troops on American soil and threatening to expel them by force if not withdrawn at once. Cordero refused to act without instructions from Captain-General Salcedo, but Herrera, in command of the forces actually intruding on American territory, broke camp on September 27th and three days later took position on the west bank of the Sabine. Thus the honor of American arms was vindicated and the integrity of United States territory preserved, and, Herrera's retreat having been approved by Salcedo, all prettexts for war were for the time removed.\*

\* Lieutenant Pike, who passed through Texas the following year, gives Herrera credit for the outcome of this brief war:—"We owe it to Governor Herrera's prudence that we are not now engaged in a war with Spain. . . . When the difficulties commenced on the Sabine, the commandant-general and viceroy consulted each other, and mutually determined to maintain inviolate what they deemed the dominions of their master. The viceroy therefore ordered Herrera to join Cordero with 1,300 men, and both the viceroy and Gen. Salcedo ordered Cordero to cause our troops to be attacked should they pass the Rio Grande [Hondo]. These orders were positively reiterated to Herrera, the actual commanding officer of the Spanish army on the frontiers, and gave rise to the many messages which he sent to Gen. Wilkinson when he was advancing with our troops. Finding they were not attended to, he called a council of war on the question to attack or not, when it was given as

November 5, 1806, while their respective armies were encamped on both sides of the Sabine, Wilkinson and Herrera concluded what is known as the Neutral Ground treaty. In reality this was only an agreement between two unaccredited agents of the two governments; but its provisions were sanctioned by practical observance for a period of thirteen years. This boundary compromise served for some time to arrest organized aggression from America, and is also in other ways an important event of Texas history. It provided that the country lying between the Arroyo Hondo on the east and the Sabine on the west should be considered a neutral ground between the two governments until a final settlement should be effected.

This Neutral Ground remained for some fifteen years a no-man's land, and neither the United States nor Mexico exercised direct jurisdiction over it. It became a desperadoes' paradise. Its community of thieves perfected an organization so strong that they overawed the soldiery, and it eventually required a severe war of extermination to put an end to their operations. They were a greater menace to travel and commercial intercourse between the two nations, than all the legal restrictions enforced by Spain. Their regular business was the robbing of traders who crossed the borders, and the latter were compelled to travel in caravans under the protection of a strong military guard. These conditions continued, with occasional attempts by the authorities on both sides to suppress them, until 1819. In the treaty of that year, by which Spain ceded Florida to the United States, the Texas-Louisiana boundary was fixed at the Sabine and the state of Louisiana extended its jurisdiction over the Neutral Ground.

The Neutral Ground treaty was the death-blow of Burr's hopes. Wilkinson having withdrawn his support from the cause by coming to an agreement with Herrera, and also having turned state's evidence of the conspiracy in its broadest conceivable proportions, Burr, far from leading an army of invasion and conquest, was marked with the charge of treason, and soon afterward was captured in the wilderness and taken to Richmond, Virginia, to stand trial. Though acquitted of an overt act of treason, Burr did not establish his innocence in such a way as to regain

their opinion that they should immediately commence a predatory warfare, but avoid a general engagement; yet, notwithstanding the orders of the viceroy, the commandant-general, Gov. Cordero's, and the opinion of his officers, he had the firmness, or temerity, to enter into the agreement with Gen. Wilkinson which at present exists relative to our boundaries on the frontier."

popular favor, and for nearly a century his name was stained with the blot of treason.

In recent years his actions have been viewed in a more favorable perspective. McCaleb,\* who has made the most logical and successful defence of Burr's career, indicates the proper setting of Burr's enterprise in American history in the following sentences: "If we return now [after Burr's trial and disgrace] to the west, we shall discover that the passing of Aaron Burr had not materially affected the condition of affairs. Patriotism and honesty were no longer disputed characteristics of the frontiersmen; nor was their malignant hatred of Spain doubted. Moreover, the same adventurous spirit that Burr had enlisted survived and was to manifest itself for succeeding decades in filibustering enterprises, moving ever westward—tidal waves of society beating down the barriers of an opposing civilization. By the summer of 1808 the Neutral Ground was filled with adventurers, who crossed the Sabine, bartered with the natives, caught wild horses, and gave Nemecio de Salcedo no end of trouble. They were recognized as Burr's legitimate successors."

For years the Burr conspiracy threatened the peace of mind of Spanish governors and viceroys, who ascribed to that remarkable schemer and adventurer the life and spirit of many movements undertaken to overthrow Spanish authority from the direction of America. Throughout the remainder of his life, says McCaleb, Burr continued to manifest a deep interest in the affairs of the southwest, especially after Texas began its struggle for independence. "One day, upon reading some accounts from that quarter, he exclaimed, 'There! you see? I was right! I was only thirty years too soon. What was treason in me thirty years ago, is patriotism now!'" Burr died September 14, 1836, some months after Texas liberty was vindicated at San Jacinto.

\* The Aaron Burr Conspiracy, by W. F. McCaleb, 1903.

## CHAPTER IX

### THE FIRST DECADE OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY

Within the boundaries of the province of Texas there were few developments worthy of notice during this decade. The governor from November, 1808, to January, 1811, was Manuel de Salcedo. A description of the province, prepared by him in August, 1809, is valuable as an official resumé of Texas just previous to the beginning of the revolutionary troubles that filled the following decade.

There were three presidios in the province—San Antonio de Bexar, la Bahia del Espiritu Santo and los Adaes. The presidial system of government was in vogue until 1806, when the entrance of emigrants and the introduction of troops on account of the boundary difficulties had brought the province under a more active and efficient system of military occupation. The governor recommended the entire abolition of the presidial system, which he asserted was responsible for the deplorable condition of Texas politically as well as regards the military.

The population of the province was estimated as follows:

San Antonio and its jurisdiction.....	1,700 souls
La Bahia and its jurisdiction.....	405 "
Villa de San Marcos de Neve and its jurisdiction.....	82 "
Villa de Trinidad and its jurisdiction.....	91 "
Nacogdoches and its jurisdiction.....	655 "
Bayou Pierre (Spanish, but on neutral ground east of Sabine)	189 "

---

3,122

"The inhabitants have no occupation; they are without means. One wonders how they cultivate the soil without implements; the houses are very rude."

"The Indians in this province present another subject that deserves consideration. They are at peace at present," largely owing to the active

measures taken by Cordero since 1806, for up to that time they committed frequent depredations at San Antonio and other settlements. "The king should establish trading houses to forestall American traders."

The cession of Louisiana the governor regarded as "the most illegal act possible," having been brought about "by certain Frenchmen and enemies of Spain. Its acquisition is generally considered by Americans as one of the most important negotiations for the United States; it makes them masters of the Nile of Western America, and affords them a southern outlet for the populous provinces of the west. A frivolous pretext this; they had a good market in New Orleans while Louisiana belonged to Spain. What they desire is to approach closer and closer to the treasury of Mexico. They will never be content to see the boundary fixed at the Sabine or at the Rio Grande; though if they wanted merely the navigation of the Mississippi, why should they wish to encroach further? They are ambitious, and Spain must defend her rights and fix the boundary where it belongs. Troops for this purpose should be sent, the province settled and fostered by opening a port. It is a mistake to depreciate the Americans. They are not to be despised as enemies; they are naturally industrious; hence they are robust, active, sober and courageous. The population of the United States is over 7,000,000, and if that country does not maintain a standing army above a certain number it is not because it is unable to do so; it has a large body of good fighters at its disposal continually. There are no natural barriers between the Spanish provinces and the United States; on the contrary, large rivers extend across the boundaries, and there are well known roads. . . . The entrance of emigrants from Louisiana is another subject that needs careful consideration, so as to guard against the introduction of any seditious characters."\*

The position of Texas and the imminent dangers to which it was exposed from the United States could not have been better stated than in this report of Governor Salcedo, and the desperate situation that he portrays might be employed to extenuate somewhat the severity of the measures adopted by Spain and Mexico to avert the American conquest.

About this time there was published in the United States a journal of exploration which brought to general knowledge a fund of new information about the west and southwest bordering on the Spanish dominions. In America the pathfinders have been quickly followed by the pioneers.

\* Taken from a summary of the official report, prepared by Mr. E. W. Winkler.

The Lewis and Clark expedition resulted in the exploitation of the Louisiana territory and even to the far northwest, and similar results were to follow from the explorations of Zebulon M. Pike in the southwest. The account of his travels was published in book form after his return, and presented to Americans the first reliable information concerning the region of the Arkansas river valley, and also of the Spanish territory about the Rio Grande and of the Texas province.

In the summer of 1807, this intrepid explorer, who in the previous fall had discovered the peak which bears his name, and in the following winter had been placed under arrest by the Spanish authorities and escorted to Chihuahua, was now returning, still under Spanish escort, to Louisiana. From El Paso the party had journeyed down the Rio Grande to the presidio Rio Grande, about forty miles below the present Eagle Pass, and from there struck across the country by the old Spanish trail between Coahuila and Texas.

June 7th the party crossed the Medina river, which was at that time the boundary between Texas and Coahuila, and in the afternoon reached San Antonio. "We were met out of San Antonio about three miles by Governors Cordero and Herrera in a coach." They were entertained most hospitably, and after supper attended a dance on the public square. Pike and his companions remained a week in San Antonio, each day being a festival occasion. He was delighted with the city, and his description and comments afford a pleasing picture in contrast with the scenes of atrocity and bloodshed which were soon to be enacted in this city.

The explorer conceived a great admiration for the local governors. Though Pike's portrait of these officials may have been overdrawn, it is difficult to reconcile their characters with those usually painted of the ruling Spaniards of the time, or to believe that in the strife of the succeeding years humanity and justice were all on one side and bloodthirsty cunning and barbarity on the other.

Don Antonio Cordero, to quote Pike's account, "was one of the select officers who had been chosen by the court of Madrid to be sent to America about thirty-five years since, to discipline and organize the Spanish provincials, and had been employed in all the various kingdoms and provinces of New Spain. Through the parts which we explored he was universally beloved and respected; and when I pronounce him by far the most popular man in the internal provinces I risk nothing by the assertion . . . His qualifications advanced him to the rank of colonel of cavalry,



and governor of the provinces of Coahuila and Texas. . . . Since our taking possession of Louisiana he had removed to San Antonio in order to be nearer to the frontier, to be able to apply the remedy to any evil which might arise from the collision of our lines." The excellences of Don Simon de Herrera, governor of New Leon, whose seat of government was at Monterey, were not less conspicuous in the eyes of Pike, who describes him as a man of wide knowledge and experience of the world and "one of the most gallant and accomplished men" he ever knew.

The Texas population at the beginning of the century were much devoted to the chase and the roving habits which this pursuit implies. But Governor Cordero, among the other excellent accomplishments of his administration mentioned by Lieut. Pike, "restricting by edicts the buffalo hunts to certain seasons, and obliging every man of family to cultivate so many acres of land, has in some degree checked the spirit of hunting or wandering life which has been hitherto so very prevalent, and has endeavored to introduce by his example and precepts a general urbanity and suavity of manners which rendered San Antonio one of the most agreeable places that we met with in the provinces."

## CHAPTER X

### REVOLUTIONARY MOVEMENTS IN TEXAS, 1810-1820

Spain's most brilliant era as a world power was in the sixteenth century. Then her vast conquests in all seas and lands gave her possessions which, had she retained, would still girdle the world with her sovereignty. But the golden dream was dissipated with the crushing of the Armada in 1588, and from that time Spanish glory rapidly declined. Her weakness as a colonizer in Texas has been disclosed on former pages, but with the increasing impotence of the mother country, she imposed the heavier burdens on the provinces. In Mexico, the strongest of Spain's colonies, a gradual amalgamation of conquerors and natives had been going on for centuries until there had resulted a truly Mexican people, alien both to the pure-blooded Spaniards and to the natives. The royal laws, however, discriminated in favor of native Spaniards, giving them superior privileges and caste distinctions especially invidious to the Mexican born.

The climax of these difficulties came in 1810, when Hidalgo first raised the standard of revolt. Morelos succeeded him as chief of the revolutionary party, until the defeat of his army and his execution in 1817. For several years the royalists were supreme, but in 1820, when Spain herself was in the throes of revolt, the Mexicans seized the opportunity to proclaim their own independence, overthrow the vice-regal government, and set up the republic which with so many vicissitudes has existed to the present time.

During all this turbulence and the varying fortunes of the Mexican revolution, Texas suffered at the hands of royalist, revolutionist, Indians, pirates and adventurers, and at the end few results remained of Spain's colonial enterprise. Texas was essentially an agricultural country, and Spanish conquest succeeded best in mining regions further south and west. It was the policy of the Spanish to constitute themselves a ruling class and leave to the conquered natives the labors of working the mines

and tilling the fields; but, as it turned out, the Indians of Texas could not be brought under the pueblo system, and hence there was no successful exploiting of native industry. This failing, only one motive remained for the continued occupation of Texas—the fear of foreign encroachment, the selfish desire for a thing which someone else wants. The political and administrative measures which were the fruit of this policy had produced very insubstantial results. The meager population and scattered settlements could present no formidable front against invasion, and for this reason the foreign incursions and revolutionary ventures in Texas during this period had a larger degree of apparent success than the facts of the situation would justify. Because Texas was not yet a settled and permanent community, armed expeditions could only scatter the chaff-like settlements, could tear down but not build up, nor even sustain what was there. The basis of an independent and hardy farming and industrial population had to be made before a political state could be made of Texas.

The Mexican revolutionists of 1810 counted on the sympathy if not the active support of the Americans. So, after the defeat and demoralization of his forces, Hidalgo and a remnant of his followers started north with the hope of strengthening their cause by alliance with American sympathizers. In March, 1811, José Bernardo Gutierrez was commissioned agent of the revolutionary organization to solicit aid and promote the cause of independence at Washington and among American citizens in general. He passed through San Antonio, which on January 22, 1811, had fallen into the hands of the revolutionists. At Washington, Gutierrez failed to receive any official attention. His mission to the general government having proved fruitless, he had then returned to Natchitoches. There he found many willing spirits eager to help win independence for any people, provided their thirst for adventure and active military duty was satisfied. Augustus Magee, who as lieutenant in the American army had just returned from a successful expedition against the outlaws of the Neutral Ground, resigned his commission in the army in order to join the filibuster, and began collecting recruits from among the characters of the Neutral Ground.

Magee became the actual military leader, with the title of colonel, while Gutierrez held the nominal position of general of the invading army. The latter was an adroit promoter of his plans. That he was a sincere patriot cannot be affirmed, but he willingly became a figure-head

of a movement the objects of which were to secure the independence of the northern provinces from Spain.

The royalist governor, Salcedo (who had been restored to office after the first uprising of 1811), had a clear apprehension of what the movement meant, as the following letter, written August 17, 1812, to the viceroy, explains: "With one thousand of the troops recently arrived from Spain at Matagorda I shall free this kingdom within a month of a new and more formidable insurrection than the past one. The people, incautious on the one hand and hallucinated on the other, embrace with readiness the sedition. The Americans say they have not come to do harm to the inhabitants of this kingdom, but to aid them in securing independence. Unfortunately our people do not know the poison and hypocrisy of our enemies; do not realize that they are working, under the pretext of succoring them, to conquer our provinces little by little. In the end, the natives cannot rid themselves of the Americans. . . . While I am waiting for the reinforcements I have asked, I shall do all in my power to expel the invaders, if the troops of this garrison remain faithful."

In August, preparations having been completed by the revolutionists, an advance was made from Natchitoches to the Sabine. The passage of the river was disputed by the Spaniards under Montero, though they were quickly outflanked and compelled to retreat to Nacogdoches.

The defense of Nacogdoches aroused no enthusiasm among the inhabitants or soldiers, the former seeming to anticipate with gladness a change of government, while the latter were indifferent. After overcoming without difficulty the patrol at Atoyac, the invading forces approached Nacogdoches. On August 12th the garrison fled without pretense of resistance, leaving all the territory between the Sabine and San Antonio open to the foe. But, without following up this advantage, the expedition remained some weeks at Nacogdoches, where recruiting continued and proclamations and addresses were sent out from the revolutionary headquarters, inciting the citizens of Texas to join the revolt and assuring them that the primary purposes of the invasion were for the independence of the province and the general welfare of its residents.

Natchitoches was in American territory, and that the expedition could originate there and be organized for effective invasion was clearly a violation of neutrality. But the protests of the Spanish authorities were unavailing. It seems one of the weaknesses of a great republic like the United States, especially at that period of its history, that the laws of nations cannot be enforced equally and quickly throughout all portions

of the nation. A war with England engaged the attention of the central government, and a frontier town like Natchitoches was, under best of conditions, a quite safe place for revolutionary enterprise. The fact that Magee did not join the expedition as active leader until Nacogdoches became the headquarters is an evidence of some desire or perhaps policy to observe nominally the treaty relations between Spain and the United States.

"A letter from Natchitoches, dated September 5, says that five hundred men, principally 'late' citizens of the United States, under Colonel Magee, were in full march for the Spanish post of San Antonio in Mexico. Their force was hourly increasing. . . . The governor of Louisiana, far distant from the scene of action, had in vain attempted to prevent the excursion."\*

They pushed on to La Bahia (Goliad), the next most important post, where Salcedo was awaiting in force. On the approach of the American army the governor marched out to meet them on the Guadalupe, but was outgeneraled by Magee, who crossed the river at a different spot and captured La Bahia with all its stores before Salcedo could come up. The Americans were besieged for several months, and in the meantime Magee died and the command devolved upon another American named Kemper. As a result of the many losses inflicted by the unerring marksmanship of the Americans, Salcedo finally raised the siege and in March, 1813, retired towards San Antonio.

Colonel Kemper now took command of the revolutionists, with Captain Ross second in authority. A hundred and seventy volunteers arrived from Nacogdoches, together with twenty-five East Texas Indians, and with these reinforcements the army marched up the left bank of the San Antonio river, and about the 28th of March reached Salado creek, about nine miles below San Antonio. Their numbers were augmented by three hundred Indian allies, and with eight hundred Americans under Kemper and one hundred and eighty Mexicans from Nacogdoches under Manchaca, the "republican" army really presented a formidable front.

Meantime, Salcedo, having received additional troops from Mexico, sent out his entire force of twenty-five hundred regulars and militia, with a commander who pledged life and honor to defeat and capture the entire revolutionary army. Marching south along the river, they took position on a ridge of gentle slope dividing the waters of the San Antonio and the Salado, and there, in ambush, awaited the approach of the

\* From Niles' Register.

Americans. Lying in the chapparal thickets that bordered the Salado, they were undiscovered until the American riflemen were directly in front.

"The Indian auxiliaries," says Yoakum, "were placed in front of the American lines to receive the charge of the Spanish cavalry, until suitable dispositions could be made to charge in turn. At the first onset they all fled, except the Cooshatties and a few others; those withstood two other charges in which they lost two killed and several wounded. By this time the Americans had formed at the foot of the ridge, having placed the baggage wagons in the rear, under the protection of the prisoners they had taken at La Bahia. The charge was sounded, and orders given to advance within thirty yards of the Spanish line, fire three rounds, load the fourth time, and charge along the whole line. The order was obeyed in silence, and with a coolness so remarkable that it filled the Spaniards with terror. The Americans had greatly the advantage in ascending the hill, as the enemy overshot them. The Spaniards did not await the charge of their adversaries, but gave way along the entire line, and then fled in the direction of San Antonio. They were pursued and killed in great numbers, and many who had surrendered were cruelly butchered by the Indians. When the Spanish commander saw his army flying, and that the day was lost, he turned his horse toward the American line, and rushed into their ranks. He first attacked Major Ross, and then Colonel Kemper; and as his sword was raised to strike the latter he was shot dead." This was the first important battle on Texas soil in which the superior effectiveness of American frontier troops was proved against Spanish mercenaries and raw militia. Nearly a thousand of the enemy were slain and wounded, and many of the captured were inhumanly slaughtered by the Indians.

The next day, on the approach of the American army, San Antonio was surrendered. General Salcedo and his staff of thirteen officers, together with the garrison and all the stores of the capital city, fell into the hands of the revolutionists. Seventeen Americans, imprisoned in the Alamo, were released and given places in the army. Spoils were distributed, and for a brief time there was harmony. A provisional government being formed, with Gutierrez as governor, the latter, in the light of success, soon showed his unfitness to found a stable government. The soldiers of the captured army were released, but the disposition of Governor Salcedo and his staff produced much debate between the American and Mexican parties. Finally it was proposed to escort them overland to Matagorda bay, and thence send them by vessel

to New Orleans. Captain Delgado and a company of Mexicans were appointed an escort, and at evening they and their prisoners started from the city. A mile and a half below town, in the screen of woods, the prisoners were stripped and tied, and then cruelly butchered by the guards, who are said to have used dull camp knives in the decapitation. Besides Governor Salcedo, who according to all estimates deserved his fate, there perished the ex-governor, Herrera. Such bloody atrocity and treachery were to blot the annals of Texas for twenty years to come, and later victims were the Americans themselves. Even the most hardened American outlaws were revolted by this outrage. Many deserted, and the subsequent conduct of the Americans was without enthusiasm. The Mexicans leaders justified the execution of the officers on the principle of retaliation. Delgado, who directed the butchery, had witnessed many cruelties inflicted by order of Salcedo, and among them the beheading of Delgado's father, at which his mother was also compelled to be present, and by order of Salcedo the blood from the bleeding head of the father was sprinkled over the unfortunate mother.\*

Colonel Kemper returned to Louisiana, and the American volunteers without danger or discipline to restrain them proved very troublesome and dissipated neighbors for the peaceful citizens. At the same time they held Gutierrez and his associates in the government in utter contempt.

This condition of affairs continued about two months, when the revolutionists were aroused by the approach of another Spanish army, under Don Y. Elisondo. With fifteen hundred regular soldiers, he had surprised and killed a small outside guard before the garrison was aware of his approach. Instead of making an immediate attack, however, he stopped on the west side of the town and fortified his camp on Alazan creek. In San Antonio the revolutionists were making hasty preparations for resistance. Captain Perry was given actual command of the forces, Gutierrez not being trusted for such a responsible post. "At ten o'clock at night, June 4, the Americans marched out of the town. They moved by file, and in the most profound silence until they approached sufficiently near to hear the enemy's advanced guard. Here they sat down, with their arms in their hands, until they heard the Spaniards at matins. Orders were given that, on notice, the Americans should charge. The signal was given, and they all marched forward with a firmness and regularity becoming veteran soldiers. The enemy's pickets were surprised and taken

\* Niles' Register, May 21, 1813.

prisoners. The Americans advanced to the works, mounted them, hauled down the Spanish flag, and ran up their own tricolor before they were discovered by the Spanish camp. This was just at the dawn of day. The Spaniards, thus aroused, fought gallantly, and drove the Americans back from the works. The latter rallied, retook them, and charged into the Spanish camp, using only the bayonet and spear. The slaughter was terrible. At length, after some hours of hard fighting, the Spaniards, fairly pushed off the field, turned and fled, leaving a thousand dead, wounded and prisoners. The Americans lost forty-seven killed, and as many more wounded who afterwards died of their wounds.”\*

After this battle Gutierrez was deposed from the office of governor and returned to Louisiana. Shortly after his departure there arrived in San Antonio Jose Alvarez Toledo, a Cuban by birth, once high in Spanish-Mexican favor, but now a republican. He had been recruiting revolutionists in Louisiana, and on his arrival at San Antonio was welcomed and chosen commander of the army. A civil government was inaugurated in the city. It endured scarcely a month, for the day of fate was appointed for this rebellious city.

Arredondo, commander of the northeastern provinces, on learning the defeat of Elisondo, at once collected an army of about four thousand men and in August crossed the Rio Grande. Arriving at the Medina river, he fortified a position on the south bank, concealing the breastwork by setting up chapparal bushes in front. Then he concealed a force of six hundred along the road about a quarter of a mile in front of the main position. His arrangement was skilfully made, and the issue was equally fortunate.

Toledo's force consisted of eight hundred and fifty Americans, and about twice that number of Mexicans. Made overconfident and impetuous as a result of their previous victories, they marched out to meet the enemy in his chosen position and were easily led into the trap set for them. The Spanish advance guard began retiring almost as soon as attacked, and the Texas army, mistaking the movement for retreat, hurried on, and had entered the open end of the V-shaped breastwork before the ambushade was suspected. Then from each side and in front a ruthless fire of artillery and small arms was poured at them. The order to retreat came too late, and only a part of the army obeyed it. Nearly all the rest fell in the vain endeavor to take the enemy's works,

\* This is Yoakum's description of the battle.



and in a short time the republican army was in complete defeat and rout.

The revolutionary government and army were destroyed, and the victorious royalists once more occupied San Antonio. General Toledo, Colonel Perry and some sixty survivors of the battle at Medina river reached Nacogdoches, and three hundred families were reported to be fleeing from San Antonio and La Bahia to escape the bloody vengeance of Arredondo.

Despite the fact that, according to a later report, Elisondo liberated all Americans taken in the action, treating them with humanity and supplying them with provisions for the home journey, the punishment inflicted by Arredondo on the rebellious citizens of Texas caused one of the darkest periods in the history of the capital city. At San Antonio was commenced, to quote Yoakum's account, "a scene of barbarity which that place had never before witnessed. Seven hundred of the peaceable citizens were seized and imprisoned. Three hundred of them were confined during the night of the 20th of August in one house, and during the night eighteen of them died of suffocation. From day to day the others were shot, without any form of trial. The cruelty of the Spanish commander went even further. He had a prison for females. It occupied the site of the present postoffice\* of San Antonio, and was tauntingly called the *Quinta*. Here were imprisoned five hundred of the wives, daughters and other female relatives of the patriots; and, for being such, they were compelled daily to convert twenty-four bushels of Indian corn into the Mexican cakes called *tortillas*, for Arredondo's army. After thus having satisfied his appetite for blood and revenge, the royalist commander found an opportunity, about the first of September, to collect and bury the bones of Salcedo and his staff." Nine years later the republicans who fell at the Medina received the honor of burial. When Governor Trespalacios, in 1822, passed the battlefield on his way to San Antonio, he found the site still strewn with human bones. He had them collected and buried with military honors, and placed a tablet with the inscription, "Here lie the braves who, imitating the immortal example of Leonidas, sacrificed their fortunes and lives, contending against tyrants."

During the retribution that followed the victory of Arredondo, the vast territory from the Rio Grande to the Sabine was desolated and, temporarily at least, almost depopulated. The royalists slaughtered with-

\* This was written fifty years ago. The "Quinta" was an old rock house fronting west on what is now Dwyer avenue.

out mercy all connected with the revolutionary party. From San Antonio a force went devastating as far as the eastern boundary, took possession of Nacogdoches, and proclaimed the authority of Spain throughout the province. But it was an authority with little substantial basis. The results of a century of colonization had been swept away in a few days; nearly all the republican sympathizers of the eastern country had taken refuge in Louisiana; industry was paralyzed, crops were destroyed and cattle driven off—leaving a wretched testimonial of Spanish inefficiency and mismanagement.

During this period the Apache and Comanche Indians on the north and northeast were a constant menace to the settlements. Their boldness brought them even to San Antonio, where they robbed or levied tribute almost at will. On the northeast border the desperadoes of the Neutral Ground made life and property unsafe, and formed a nursery for criminals and adventurers of all classes. The gulf coast also came into notice as the haunt of pirates, whose operations were a danger to the commerce of other nations than Spain.

Galveston island was the seat of the most flourishing of the piratical enterprises. In 1813 a Mexican named Manuel Herrera had gone to the United States as minister of the revolutionary government, but received no official recognition at Washington. Taking up residence at New Orleans, he was one of the active spirits among the refugee Mexicans there and also had considerable following of American adventurers.

Cloaking his enterprise in the guise of an attempt against the Spanish royalists, and claiming to act under the fictitious authority of the Republic of Mexico, in 1816 he led a fleet of vessels to Galveston island, which was to be the stronghold of the revolutionary movement. A government was set up. Louis de Aury was appointed governor, commander of fleet, and judge of the court of admiralty—a sort of Pooh Bah of this pirate republic. Founded ostensibly to combat Spanish authority in America, the principal business of the organization was preying upon the merchant marine of the gulf. Their prizes were not confined to Spanish merchantmen, and among them were some slave-ships with cargoes of negroes for the West Indies or the United States.

Through this source Texas got its first ill-fame in the slave trade. There was, of course, no market on Galveston island for the captured negroes, nor any demand for them in the Texas interior. To dispose of them Aury's agents smuggled them across the boundary and sold them more or less openly at New Orleans and other Louisiana points. Galves-

ton island thus became a supply point for Louisiana in this traffic. A report to the government at Washington in 1817 stated that the traffic was carried on "by a motley mixture of freebooters and smugglers at Galveston under the Mexican flag."

About this time Aury was attracted from the island to join a filibustering expedition into Mexico. His place was soon taken by the most famous and romantic of Texas pirates and buccaneers. Jean Lafitte, who had previously carried on his operations with headquarters along the Louisiana coast, from which he was expelled by the United States government, in a short time organized a most complete and efficient pirate kingdom at Galveston. According to his story, having been plundered of all his wealth and outraged, some years before, by the captain of a Spanish war vessel, Lafitte had sworn eternal enmity with Spain, and in his operations about the gulf he claimed that Spanish commerce was the only object of his attack. Following his predecessor's example, he set up his government in avowed allegiance to the Republic of Mexico. The purposes of his enterprise were afterwards confessed by his judge of admiralty to be "the capturing of Spanish property under what they called the Mexican flag, but without any idea of aiding the revolution in Mexico or that of any of the revolted Spanish colonies." As the establishment increased and Lafitte's lieutenants in many cruisers scoured the gulf waters, depredations were made on ships of other nations, and especially on those of the United States. He was also a principal medium of the slave traffic, and his operations prospered until he had a veritable kingdom on Galveston island and rolled in wealth and spoils, with his town of Campeachy as his capital. A fort was built at the east end of the island, and the ruins of the old pirate stronghold were pointed out for many years afterward. Among Lafitte's agents in disposing of the negroes in Louisiana were the three Bowie brothers, Rezin P., James and John.\* Their profits in these transactions, from 1818 to 1820, were estimated by John Bowie to have been \$65,000.

Finally, in 1821, an expedition was sent to Galveston by the United States government, and Lafitte was compelled to evacuate the island. He paid off and dispersed his followers, and sailed away from the coast forever. Though Spain had been the chief sufferer from his depredations, her government had taken no effective steps to put an end to them. Never-

\* Eugene C. Barker, "The African Slave Trade in Texas," in *Tex. Hist. Assn. Quarterly*, Vol. VI.

theless her jealousy of any foreign interference in Texas had caused the Spanish minister to protest whenever the United States proposed to suppress the establishment.

The romantically planned colony of the Champ d'Asile should also be mentioned as having been undertaken about this time. The leader was a French officer who had served under Napoleon, and his followers were other expatriates who hoped to find a garden of plenty in Texas. The site selected by them was on Trinity bay, about twelve miles from Galveston. The enterprise was undertaken without authority from Spain, and despite their bold beginning the colonists, on the approach of Spanish troops, abandoned their site and found refuge in Galveston, where some of them joined Lafitte's band.

The last invasion of Texas before the final overthrow of Spain in the Mexican provinces was "Long's expedition." James Long had been a surgeon in the army, and possessed many attractive personal qualities and the courage and enthusiasm of a leader. He was in business at Natchez for several years, and there loved and married the young girl who has often been called "the mother of Texas." She was Jane Wilkinson, a niece of General James Wilkinson.

A great many people in the southwestern states were dissatisfied with the treaty of 1819, which fixed the boundary between Spain and the United States at the river Sabine. The Americans who had settled about Nacogdoches and others who sought material interests in that region were naturally disappointed when Spain's jurisdiction was ratified. Under these conditions Long's expedition was projected, the plan being apparently to set up an independent government in eastern Texas which would eventually be recognized and brought under the protection of the American government, or would co-operate with the Mexican revolutionists and be rewarded with substantial privileges in the event of independence.

Proceeding to Natchitoches, Long gathered a considerable force, and in June, 1819, occupied Nacogdoches. Here a plan of government was drawn up, and Texas was declared a free and independent republic. A general council was elected, with General Long as president. But the hopeful republic was short-lived. While Long was away seeking the co-operation of Lafitte at Galveston, the Spanish forces fell upon his outpost at the Brazos, and then advanced rapidly towards Nacogdoches, which was precipitately abandoned, and the republicans barely escaped to the eastern bank of the Sabine. Long returned to find his soldiers and settlers flying before the approaching Spaniards. His wife, who had loyally followed

him to Texas, was safe on the Louisiana side, but many of his followers, among them his brother David, had been killed or captured.

After the failure of this invasion, Long went to New Orleans, where he continued to plan a Texas republic. Among his advisers and associates at this time was Col. Ben Milam. In 1821 he undertook another invasion. Point Bolivar, opposite Galveston, had been designated as the headquarters, where many of the survivors of the former expedition and such new recruits as had been obtained were assembled. From there Long led a force to La Bahia and took possession of the town in October, but soon afterwards was compelled to surrender to the troops sent out from San Antonio. As he professed to be fighting for the independence of Mexico, he and his followers were treated with more than usual consideration. Long himself was sent to Mexico, where he arrived soon after the complete success of the revolution. He was released as a supporter of independence, but was killed before leaving the city in what was apparently a private altercation with a guard.

After the failure of Long's expedition the Spanish soldiers once more harried eastern Texas. All American intruders were driven out and buildings and improvements destroyed. In 1820 the population of the province, exclusive of Indians, was estimated to be not more than four thousand. San Antonio was the only settlement worthy of name which survived the Indian depredations, filibuster invasions and successive shocks of revolution. "Such was the miserable witness of the craft of St. Denis, the patriotic work of Aguayo, the brave and patient self-sacrifice of the missionaries, and the vast expenditure of treasure and blood in the vain effort to plant Spanish civilization in Texas."

## CHAPTER XI

### THE REPUBLIC OF MEXICO—AUSTIN'S COLONY

The first revolution of Mexico was practically at an end by 1819, when the royalist armies were everywhere triumphant and the few surviving leaders of revolt were in hiding with their followers among the mountains. In Spain, King Ferdinand VII, weakest of Spanish sovereigns, had been restored to his throne in 1814. With him the church had resumed its powerful and pervasive influence, and the inquisition was re-established. The despotism was short-lived. In 1820, beginning with an uprising in the army, Spain was again in revolution. The republicans forced upon the king a recognition of the constitution of 1812, with an elected junta acting in conjunction with the crown.

Though the two active leaders in the first revolution, Hidalgo and Morelos, were popular priests, the higher orders of clergy in Mexico opposed the revolution, seeing in its success a greater danger to their hierarchy than what they had already suffered from the exactions of the Spanish crown. But with the republican restoration in 1820 and the re-establishment of constitutional government in Spain, the supremacy of the Catholic authority was threatened with increased restrictions and burdens, so that the church, in order to preserve its spiritual despotism, suddenly turned and gave its support to the cause of Mexican independence. It is to be observed, however, in this apparent shift of allegiance that the church was not supporting the cause of popular government, but hoped, in the establishment of an independent monarchy in Mexico, to find a new home for the old Spanish political and ecclesiastical system. The beginning of the second and final revolution of Mexico, therefore, was not a popular movement, but originated among the higher clergy and radical royalists.

Don Augustin Iturbide was the chief actor chosen to accomplish the revolution. He had been successfully employed as a royalist officer in the preceding campaigns. Having been appointed by the viceroy as com-

mander of fifteen hundred troops to proceed against the scattered bands of patriots in the mountains, instead of attacking them he united with them, and thus precipitated the revolution. Thus the three classes—clergy, Spaniards and Mexicans—were all united temporarily against the existing government.

At Iguala, February 22, 1821, Iturbide submitted to the allied armies the plans of a new government, since called the "Plan of Iguala," the chief features of which were: Mexican independence of Spain; the establishment of a congress and constitution and a limited monarchy, the crown to be offered to Ferdinand or other members of the royal family on condition of their residence in America and fealty to the constitution; full security for the Roman Catholic religion; the admission of all classes of inhabitants to equal citizenship. The plan was a compromise, hence unsatisfactory to the radicals of all three parties, but was accepted in this crisis of affairs, and the revolution proceeded on this platform of principles.

The revolution spread rapidly to all the provinces, and when a new viceroy arrived from Spain he found only two or three cities still loyal. Resistance being useless, a treaty was negotiated at Cordova, August 20, 1821, by which Spain was to recognize the independence of Mexico. In the meantime, until February, 1822, a provisional junta and regency directed the government, until the first constituent congress or cortes assembled.

With the achievement of independence, the original elements of the revolution were at once dissolved into three warring factions—the royalist Spaniards, the republicans consisting chiefly of the native Mexicans and those in favor of a free government, and the personal adherents of Iturbide, who as commander of the army exercised a power dangerous to any constituted government. Quarrels between Iturbide and the cortes delayed the progress of constitution-making, until on May 19, 1822, Iturbide was proclaimed by the army and the rabble of the capital as "Augustin I, Emperor of Mexico."

This bold usurpation, and the increasing violence that marked the succeeding months of his reign, soon alienated the majority of the people, resulting in insurrections in many parts of the empire. In March, 1823, Iturbide was forced to abdicate, and was expelled from the country. A provisional executive, composed of three revolutionary generals, administered the affairs of the country until a new constituent cortes assembled in August. The latter took up the work of forming a constitution, which

was promulgated January 31, 1824, and definitely sanctioned in the following October.

The Mexican constitution of 1824 was patterned after that of the United States, but with certain limitations peculiar to the Spanish people that afterward played no small part in Texas history. One of these was the establishment of a national religion, the Roman Catholic Apostolic, the exercise of any other whatever being prohibited.

May 7, 1824, the congress provided for the union of the former provinces of Coahuila and Texas as one state, providing that when Texas possessed the elements necessary to the formation of a separate state, with the approval of the national congress, an independent state should be created.

The important fact of Mexican history, during the subsequent period in which Texas was concerned, may be stated briefly as follows: On the formation of the Mexican republic two parties at once sprang up—contending for principles somewhat similar to those upheld by the political parties in the United States during the first decades; namely, centralization of government power, on the one hand, and, on the other, free development of republican institutions with as little interference as possible from the central authority. In Mexico, however, the political parties were of a constituent character, both more volatile and restive than in the United States. Under the control of self-seeking leaders, the minority party, when defeated at the polls, did not submit gracefully to the will of the majority, but too often sought to gain their ends by force. Moreover, one party seems no sooner to have established itself in power than it began to overstep the limitations of the constitution of 1824. The drift throughout these years was towards centralization of all power at Mexico and the reduction of the states to departments of administration. The annals of the time abound in revolution and counter-revolution, which require only passing reference in the history of Texas. But the preceding account of the establishment of the Republic of Mexico is a necessary introduction to the story of American colonization in Texas, which began in the same year that Mexico was declared free and independent of Spain.

The story of the colonization of Texas has one great name, and the Austins—father and son—are the founders and fathers of Texas as we know it today. Moses Austin was born in Connecticut in 1764, was married at the age of twenty, and soon afterward embarked in mercan-





STEPHEN F. AUSTIN

tile business at Richmond, Virginia, with his brother Stephen. They also became interested in lead mining and smelting in that state, and were the first manufacturers of shot and sheet lead in the United States. Financial reverses came, and to recoup his fortunes Moses Austin, in 1797, obtained a large grant of land in southern Missouri, then Louisiana territory, where he became the pioneer in the lead mining of that district, and laid the foundation of a prosperous colony and himself acquired wealth and influence. The failure, in 1818, of the Bank of St. Louis, in which he was a large stockholder, bankrupted him and he surrendered all his property to his creditors. In his fifty-fifth year, he still possessed a spirit undaunted by adversity and ready to endure the hardships of a new field of enterprise.

By the treaty of 1819 the governments of Spain and the United States had finally agreed upon the boundary line between Texas and Louisiana. The possession of Texas being thus secure, Spain felt justified in relaxing somewhat her former exclusive policy against immigration. The necessity of colonizing and developing Texas was apparent, and Spain having failed in her own efforts in that direction, it seemed wise to allow foreign immigration with proper restrictions and safeguards.

Austin's idea of planting a large colony in Texas was conceived, therefore, at an opportune time. He perfected his plans conjointly with his son Stephen F. While the father went to San Antonio to gain the proper authority for his enterprise, the son began assembling the persons and means for carrying out the plan. It was in no spirit of the filibusterer or adventurer that Moses Austin entered upon his undertaking. As he meant his colony should contain the elements of permanence and prosperity, so he desired it to have proper legal authority.

Early in December, 1820, he arrived in San Antonio. When he sought audience with the governor, Martinez, he was rudely rebuffed, and the governor refused to listen to any explanation and ordered him to quit the province at once. Dejected by such a reception, he left the governor's house with the intention of returning home at once. As he was crossing the public square he unexpectedly met an old friend, the Baron de Bastrop. The latter, though not a high official, possessed much influence in the province and with the governor. When he learned of Austin's mission and the apparent frustration of his plans, he at once procured a second interview. Through Bastrop's influence the governor entertained the proposal with more favor, and though it was not in his

power to grant the permission to establish a colony, he promised to send the memorial, with his recommendation, to the commandant-general.

The first step of his undertaking having been taken, Austin set out on his return to Missouri. The journey was a severe one, and the hardships and exposure to which he was subjected so undermined his health that in June, 1821, his dauntless spirit was calmed in death. Not, however, until his last great enterprise was in a fair way to accomplishment. Just a few days before his death news had come that his plan had been approved, and that commissioners would be sent to Louisiana to confer with him on the establishment of the colony. The project for which the father had given his life was to be carried out to full success by his equally enterprising son.

In the meantime, Stephen F. Austin was at New Orleans arranging the business details of the colony. Leaving that city in June, 1821, he arrived a few days later at Natchitoches, where he met the Spanish commissioner, Jose Erastus Seguin, who was appointed to conduct him to San Antonio. The purpose of Austin's entrance at this time was to explore the Texas country and select a location for his settlers. On the road between Natchitoches and Nacogdoches the son was informed of his father's death, and just before reaching San Antonio, on August 12th, the news came of the independence of Mexico. Austin found Nacogdoches in ruins, with only the church and seven houses, including the Stone House. He also describes La Bahia as a ruined settlement, so that outside of San Antonio the entire region was practically unoccupied. Six weeks were spent in exploration of the country about the Guadalupe and Colorado rivers, and Austin then returned to Louisiana to lead the settlers to the chosen land.

The plan which Moses Austin had submitted to the Spanish authorities provided for the settlement of three hundred families; each head of family was to receive 640 acres, his wife 320 acres, 100 acres for each child, and 80 acres for each slave; all settlers to accept the Catholic religion, to give allegiance to Spain, and to be of good moral character. Another provision which Austin carefully considered with the governor included the payment by each settler to Austin of twelve and a half cents an acre for the homestead, a liberal time being allowed in which to complete the payment. This was the only expense which the individual settlers were to bear in the cost of the enterprise, and the only source of compensation to Austin for his management of the colony. Besides the long and hard traveling done by the two Austins in behalf of the colony,

Austin had the heavy responsibility of managing the business affairs of the colony and acting as its provisional governor until a civil organization could be effected.

On his return to Louisiana, Austin published this plan of colonization, including the terms by which each settler was to pay Austin for the land, and made energetic preparations to introduce the first quota of settlers. As agriculture was to be the foundation of the colony, the attractions of the enterprise appealed to a more thrifty and stable class of people than had taken part in previous expeditions, and the majority of settlers under Austin's standard were of a representative grade of hardy colonizers.

Austin and his followers, coming from Natchitoches by the La Bahia road, arrived at the Brazos in December, 1821. In November a schooner, the *Lively*, had left New Orleans with supplies of all kinds and a small body of colonists, intending to come up the Colorado river and form a junction with those who went overland. The vessel never reached the rendezvous, and the colonists were deprived of the implements and provisions needed during the first months of their residence. It was with difficulty that they managed to live for a time. Such hardships would have been fatal to a colony of adventurers, but the followers of Austin were of sterner stuff, and this germ of modern Texas was not to be destroyed.

After the arrival of his colony it became necessary for Austin to report to the governor at San Antonio. When he arrived there for that purpose, in March, 1822, he found that the local government could no longer treat with him under a contract made with Spain, and that his colony must be legalized by the Mexican congress. The success of the enterprise demanded an immediate journey to the capital, notwithstanding the precarious situation of the settlers. It was characteristic of Austin that he never avoided any duty demanded of his position as leader. With only one companion he set out for the capital, journeying much of the distance in disguise as poor pensioners in order to escape the banditti of the road, and arrived in Mexico City the last of April. There he found several other Americans petitioning for land grants similar to Austin's, among them Green DeWitt and Haden Edwards.

For more than a year, during the turbulent period of Iturbide's reign, Austin was detained in the capital seeking a confirmation of his father's contract. On account of the presence of other petitioners, the government chose to draw up a general law for colonization instead of confirming Austin's individual contract. The first congress was at work

on such a law when Iturbide usurped the government as emperor, and the work had to be done all over again by his council. The law was finally drafted and received the approval of the emperor and his junta on January 4, 1823. Under the provisions of this law, Austin's contract was submitted to the government, and an imperial decree of February 18, 1823, confirmed the original contract with Moses Austin. His mission accomplished, Stephen Austin was preparing to return when the imperial government was overthrown and all its acts annulled. With admirable persistence, Austin now presented his cause before the provisional government. The colonization law of January 4th was suspended, but on April 14, 1823, the supreme executive power confirmed and sustained the imperial concession to Austin of date of February 18th. There seemed satisfactory assurance that the congress, when it assembled, would confirm this act of the provisional government, so Austin felt that at last his colony had legal sanction.

Austin may be said to have obtained a special charter for his first colony, all other empresario contracts having been undertaken under the general colonization laws of the republic and the state. Under this special contract, the local government was committed to him until government could be otherwise organized on constitutional lines. This provisional government of the colony was not superseded until February 1, 1828.

The original plan of Austin for the distribution of land to the settlers was based on the American system of sections of 640 acres. But the decree confirming his contract declared that he was not authorized to assign the quantity of land to be given to each settler. It fixed the quantity to be given to each head of family as one *labor* or one *league*, the former quantity to the colonist whose purpose was solely agriculture, and the latter to the colonist who intended to engage in stock-raising, but it was also provided that to the colonist who followed both occupations there might be granted "a league and a labor."\*

The decree also provided that Austin, as contractor or *empresario* of the colony, should receive a premium of fifteen leagues and two *labores* for every two hundred families introduced. Each colonist had to cultivate or use his land within two years under penalty of forfeit, but when this condition was complied with his title to the land was clear and absolute.

\* A *labor*, in Spanish land measure, is a tract of 1,000 varas square, or about 177 acres; a *league* is a tract 5,000 varas square, or approximately 4,428 English acres.

Another distinctive feature of Austin's original colony is that the colonists were not restricted to definite limits in their settlement. Each of the three hundred families belonged to the colony wherever its lands were located. The result was that these original settlers were dispersed from the east bank of the Lavaca to the east side of the San Jacinto, and from the coast to the San Antonio road. In this area all the lands not occupied by the three hundred colonists belonged to the government. This wide distribution of the immigrants, while it exposed them to Indian attacks, eventually proved advantageous in the development of the country, since those that came later were better served with supplies by means of these scattered settlements than they could have been from one central point.

When Austin returned to Texas in August, 1823, he found the colony almost dissipated, and immigration had entirely ceased. Many of the new settlers had stopped about Nacogdoches and in the vicinity of the Trinity river, and thus began the settlement of East Texas. But Austin's success in obtaining a confirmation of his contract and his energetic prosecution of affairs soon turned the tide in his favor, and by the following year the stipulated number of three hundred families had arrived. He was favored by the fact that, until after the general colonization law of the state of Coahuila-Texas was passed in March, 1825, Austin was the only *empresario* who had authority to settle families in Texas and secure them valid titles to their lands. This not only resulted in the rapid completion of the colony numbers, but also gave Austin opportunity to select his settlers and reject unworthy applicants. Austin's management in this latter particular was no doubt an important factor in the subsequent welfare of all Texas.

The commissioner appointed by the governor to survey the lands was Baron de Bastrop, who had been so instrumental in the beginning of the colony. He was also instructed by the governor, in a letter of July 26, 1823, to lay out the capital town of the colony, to which the governor gave the name San Felipe de Austin.

Austin's position was no sinecure, even after he had settled all the legal affairs of his colony. The government was practically in his hands for the next five years, and the tact, ability and patience with which he directed it confirm his right to the title of Father of Texas. His colonists were in the main independent, aggressive, vigorous Americans, abiding by the fundamental rules of law and society, but not submissive to any restraints and quick to suspect imposition. Although in enrolling them-

selves as settlers they had accepted the conditions which prescribed the payment to Austin of twelve and a half cents an acre for their land, when the time came to make payment the majority opposed the charge and burdened their leader with much unmerited abuse, forgetting the self-sacrificing hardships that Austin had undergone in the first stages of the enterprise. They claimed that he was speculating on their efforts, and furthermore that, when certain poorer settlers were given lands free, he was discriminating. The result was that he had to forego his claim to these fees, and from the sale of his premium lands received only a small share of his original investment. But when finally relieved of the active administration of the colony, after having borne with wonderful patience the cabalous and open dissatisfaction of the settlers, he had on the whole managed his enterprise with such wisdom that he retained the respect and gratitude of his own colony and remained to the close of his life the best loved man in Texas.

## CHAPTER XII

### COLONIES UNDER THE EMPRESARIO SYSTEM

Austin's was the first permanently successful colony, and was the central and strongest pillar which upheld the political and social structure of Texas. But around it were built up, in the course of a few years, many others, historically of less importance than the first, but each contributing a portion of the citizenship which finally made Texas independent. These colonies were the fruit of the general colonization system adopted by the Mexican republic and the state of Coahuila-Texas.

As has been stated, Austin obtained a special grant for his colony, but at the same time others were petitioning for privilege to make settlements. No grants were made to these applicants, however, until the federal congress had formulated a general land law. On the theory that the general government of a group of federated states should leave to each individual state the widest possible regulation of its internal affairs, the Mexican federal congress contented itself with a land law of very general definition of principles.

This federal law, dated August 18, 1824, made the following rules to govern the states in disposing of lands: No lands to be colonized within twenty leagues of the boundaries of a foreign nation or within ten leagues of the coast without permission of the federal executive; admission of foreign colonists not to be prohibited until the year 1840 unless circumstances "imperiously" demanded it; in the distribution of lands preference to be given to Mexican citizens; the limit of lands that could be united in one individual ownership must not exceed eleven leagues.

The provisional congress of the state of Coahuila-Texas was organized in August, 1824, and while engaged in forming the state constitution passed the state colonization law under which Texas was settled. This law, dated March 24, 1825, was designed to augment "by all possi-



ble means the population" of the state. Its provisions conformed, of course, to the general rules imposed by the federal law above noted. All foreigners must become Mexican citizens and accept the national religion. The quantity of land to be assigned to each foreign settler was fixed by this law as follows: To each married man or head of family, one *labor* if an agriculturist, or one league if he combined agriculture and stock-raising; to each single man, one-fourth of this quantity, to be increased to the regular allotment when he married. Those who immigrated at their own expense and settled in a colony within six years after its establishment received, if a married man, an additional *labor*, or, if unmarried, a third instead of a fourth of the regular quantity. Out of this system resulted the various quantities of land comprised under the old Mexican titles, some titles covering a league and a *labor*, others a single league, a third of a league, a quarter league, down to a single *labor* and fractions thereof.

This law also provided for colonization by *empresarios* or contractors. Each *empresario* who undertook to introduce a hundred or more families, on his proposal being approved by the government, should have a definite tract of vacant lands assigned for the settlement of his colonists. His premium for each hundred families that he colonized was fixed at five leagues and five *labores*.

Immediately after the passage of this law, those who had been applicants during the pendency of this legislation presented their petitions for *empresario* grants, and they were followed in the course of a few years by others, until nearly all the available lands of Texas were assigned among the various contractors. It is necessary to explain here that the contractors had no proprietary rights in the lands thus assigned. A tract was set aside to them, for a definite period of years, during which they were privileged to introduce colonists, and the permission of the *empresario* was required before the government commissioner would survey or issue a certificate of title to the settler. But the title was issued by the government and not by the *empresario*, and the title of the individual settler was unaffected by the subsequent failure of the *empresario* to complete his contract with the state. The design of the law was that the sole advantage to the *empresario* should consist in the premium lands granted to him on condition that he introduce a hundred or more families. Nevertheless, through lack of perfect understanding of the relations of the *empresarios*, some extensive frauds were committed in Europe and the

United States. The empresarios were represented as actual owners of the lands, and "scrip" was sold to the extent of thousands of dollars to unsuspecting purchasers. This "scrip" was, of course, worthless, and on arriving in Texas its holders found that they could secure titles to land only from the government and according to the provisions of the laws above described.

Austin himself was one of the first to take advantage of the colonization laws to introduce another colony in addition to the three hundred families whom he had settled by 1824. He forwarded his first petition to the general government in 1824, asking to introduce several hundred families through Galveston as port of entry. His petition was finally approved by the state government and signed by Austin on June 4, 1825, provided for the introduction of five hundred families, who were to be located on the unoccupied lands within the limits of his first colony, the contract being limited to six years from the date of signing. As the limits of the first colony had never been officially designated, an order dated March 7, 1827, described the boundaries of the colony as follows: Beginning on the San Jacinto river, ten leagues from the coast, up the river to its source and thence in a line to the Nacogdoches-San Antonio road, this road being the northern boundary, and the western boundary was the Lavaca river and a line from its source to the above named road.

On April 22, 1828, Austin was granted the right, by special consent of the president of the republic, to colonize with three hundred families the ten-league reserve on the coast, between the San Jacinto and Lavaca rivers. This extended Austin's colonies from the San Antonio road to the coast, comprising what is now the most populous portion of Southeast Texas. Another contract undertaken by Austin, November 20, 1827, was for the settlement of one hundred families on the east side of the Colorado above the San Antonio road. A later contract, of Austin and Williams, covered a portion of the other grants south of the San Antonio road, and extended north of that road between the Colorado river and the dividing ridge between the Brazos and Trinity to a line above the present site of Waco.

One of the most important colonies outside of Austin's was DeWitt's. Green DeWitt was at Mexico seeking a contract in 1822, when Austin arrived at the capital. His application was delayed several years until the general laws were enacted, his contract being granted April 15, 1825. His assignment of lands lay on the southwest of Austin's, extending

from the ten-league coast reserve with the Lavaca as its northeast boundary, the San Antonio road on the northwest, and on the southwest a line two leagues beyond and parallel with the Guadalupe river. In the war for independence this colony was the most exposed to Mexican invasion, Gonzales, the capital of the colony, being the first to suffer the vengeance of Santa Anna after the fall of the Alamo.

DeWitt contracted to introduce four hundred families, but at the time his contract expired in 1831 only 166 titles had been issued, and the government refused to extend his contract.

Between DeWitt's grant and the coast, along the Guadalupe, was the territory assigned to Martin de Leon, whose contract was made in 1825. Victoria was the principal center of this colony.

Haden Edwards had also been in Mexico at the time Austin was there, and on April 18, 1825, he was given a contract to introduce eight hundred families about Nacogdoches, his lands being comprised within the territory between Austin's colony on the west, the ten-league coast reserve on the south, the twenty-league reserve on the east, and on the north was bounded by a line fifteen leagues north of the town of Nacogdoches. A more complete account of this colony belongs in the following chapter.

Other empresario contracts that should be mentioned chiefly because of their relation to subsequent land litigation were:

Robert Leftwich obtained a contract April 15, 1825, for a tract on the Navasota river, between the San Antonio road and the Brazos and Colorado rivers. The contract was subsequently carried by Sterling C. Robertson and Alex. Thompson, and the colony was known as the Nashville or Robertson's colony.

James Power and James Hewitson, from Ireland, contracted June 11, 1828, to colonize the vicinity of Aransas bay; a second contract of 1830 covered a portion of the territory between the Nueces and Guadalupe rivers. The first colony marked the beginning of Refugio county.

John McMullen and Patrick McGloin, also Irishmen, August 17, 1828, contracted for a settlement on the Nueces river, their enterprises being commemorated in the present San Patricio county.

Lorenzo de Zavala was granted colonization rights, March 12, 1829, to lands lying west of the Sabine between Nacogdoches and the coast.

Joseph Vehlein's contracts, dated December 22, 1826, and November 17, 1828, covered land in East Texas, lying partly in the Haden Edwards tract.

David G. Burnet's contract, December 22, 1826, was for settlement along the Navasota and Trinity rivers and about the San Antonio road.

The last three mentioned contracts were assigned in 1830 to the "Galveston Bay and Texas Land Company," a New York company who issued large quantities of worthless "scrip" against the lands.

## CHAPTER XIII

### RELATIONS WITH MEXICO—THE FREDONIAN WAR

After the vicissitudes of two centuries Texas was prospering and growing. Great changes had taken place during the second decade of the century as a result of the liberal colonization policy. The agriculture, stock-raising and commerce of that period were crude and primitive, but at the same time gave a firm basis for a permanent population. The increase of population during the first ten years was not phenomenal, the number being estimated at ten thousand in 1827 and twenty thousand in 1830, but in the latter year it was four times what it had been when Moses Austin journeyed across the desolated country in the fall of 1820.

The growth of an American civilization on the soil of and alongside of a Latin-American nation could not take place without many possibilities of danger. Racial characteristics cannot be changed. The oil and the water of Mexican and American populations would not mix. It being taken for granted that the two nationalities could not coalesce, there was but one way to prevent the Americanization of Texas—by making Texas an integral part of Mexico, completely systematized under Mexican laws and institutions, and with the Mexican population greater in number than that of all foreigners combined, and furthermore with a government sufficiently strong to command the respect and obedience of all its citizens. But Mexico was far from able to extend her authority and population over Texas in this manner; it was with difficulty that she, during these years, could keep her ship of state clear from the rocks of anarchy. The development of Texas went on with little more than passive regulation from Mexico, and its people, though they paid nominal loyalty to their adopted nation, were in all other respects foreign and antagonistic to Mexican customs and institutions.

To represent the Mexican government always acting the part of the oppressor and tyrant, and the Texas Americans as injured innocents, is both unjust and unnecessary. Mexico cannot be said to have transcended

her national rights in regulating the settlement of foreigners. This much at least is the prerogative of any nation, and had the government of Mexico been in the hands of able and unselfish leaders it is reasonable to assume that the separation of Texas would have been long delayed.

Among the American settlers, on the other hand, was much impatience of restraint and the aggressive independence of the frontiersmen, which have proved turbulent factors in every new state and territory of the American Union. In this eager, restless throng of settlers, Austin's steadiness, tact and patience and personal influence succeeded in preserving order long enough to give stability to the colonies, and the value of his services in this respect can hardly be overestimated. His own testimony of the character of his colonists is an interesting light on this subject:\* "I have had a mixed multitude to deal with—collected from all quarters, strangers to me, save from the testimonials of good character which they are expected to bring with them—strangers to each other, to the language, laws and customs of this country. They come here, with all the feelings and ideas of Americans, unwilling to make allowance for the peculiar state of things existing, and expecting to find all in system, and harmony, and organization, as in the country they have left.

Amongst a certain class of Americans with whom I have had to deal, *independence* means resistance and obstinacy, right or wrong; this is particularly the case with most *frontiermen*; and a violent course with men of this cast would have kindled a flame that might have consumed the colony. For it was with the greatest difficulty, and after more than eighteen months' solicitation, that I obtained the consent of the Mexican government to progress with the settlement, and the principal objection expressed to my doing so was, that the Americans were considered in Mexico a turbulent and disorderly people, difficult to govern, and predisposed to resist authority. This impression as to the American character it was not easy to remove; and the least commotion among the settlers, in the infancy of the colony, would have revived that impression anew, and probably have proved fatal to all our hopes."

But as time went on, and the Texas colonies increased in numbers and strength, and all the while the Mexican republic plunged deeper into anarchy, the incompatibilities of the two peoples became more menacing. The discontent of the Texans was based on a number of causes apart from those more immediate ones that precipitated the revolution.

\* Letter written in 1825 to Benjamin W. Edwards.

For one thing, there was a more or less distinct feeling on the part of the Texas settlers and Americans in general that the United States was still officially interested in the annexation of the southwest territory. While the Sabine had been fixed as the boundary in the treaty of 1819, the Mexican republic was not entirely relieved of its anxiety about aggression from its neighbor. During 1825-27 certain diplomatic proposals were made by the United States for the extension of the boundary to the Rio Grande, or to the Colorado. The treaty of 1828, by which the boundary of 1819 was reaffirmed, checked such negotiations for the time, but it was not unnatural for the Mexican authorities to look upon the American colonists as instruments by which the United States would in time annex Texas.

It cannot be doubted that many of the Americans who settled in Texas believed that annexation would follow sooner or later. When Major Edwards visited Austin at San Felipe in 1825, they are said\* to have discussed this matter a number of times, and they concluded that the collision with Mexico should be postponed as long as possible, until the strength of the colonies should be sufficient to redeem them from foreign rule.

The colonization laws of the republic and state, while in the main very liberal and not inconsistent with a sovereign authority, contained provisions that were contrary to American theories of liberty. One of these was the obligation to profess the national religion, though this caused little practical trouble. Another was the privilege given to native Mexicans of priority in selection of land, though the Americans had little competition in this respect in most parts of Texas.

Also, slavery played a part in the Mexico-Texas relations of this period. The state constitution of Coahuila-Texas, adopted in 1827, decreed that "no one shall be born a slave in this state, and after six months the introduction of slaves under any pretext shall not be permitted." This prohibition affected Texas alone. The peculiar character of Mexican society made slavery unnecessary. Among the semi-civilized Indians and the lower classes of Mexicans was abundance of cheap labor. These laborers contracted their services at an average price of fifty dollars a year, a sum insufficient to support themselves and families. As a result they were always in debt to their masters, who by law could compel them to serve until the debt was discharged. This peonage system was in all

\* Foote's "Texas and Texans," Vol. I, 226.

practical aspects virtual slavery, and at the same time the masters were relieved of some of the responsibilities of the latter institution, since the wretched peons had to live and die at their own expense.

The Texans soon found a technical method of escaping the anti-slavery law, by introducing their slaves as indentured servants. Through all the subsequent enactments concerning slavery, the purpose of the government was plainly to obstruct American immigration into Texas. Without slaves the colonists could have made little progress in agriculture, so that to prohibit the holding of slaves was equivalent to forbidding Americans to enter the country. In 1829 the federal government issued a more sweeping decree, abolishing slavery throughout the Republic of Mexico. But the operation of this law was subsequently abated by a general remonstrance from the colonists, showing how essential slavery was to the continued prosperity of Texas.

The success and progress of the American settlers no doubt excited the envy of their Mexican neighbors and provoked some of the measures that displeased the Texans. The comparative freedom of the American colonies from Indian depredations also caused distrust among Mexicans, who believed the colonists were in league with the Indians. The truth was that the settlers, after suffering these depredations during the first few years, had afterwards organized an effective militia protection which the Indians avoided, choosing rather to direct their raids upon the weaker defenses of the Mexicans.

These causes, while they were destined eventually to produce conflict between the two countries, were latent for some years. The first important collision was the insurrection on the eastern border known in history as the Fredonian war. As mentioned in the preceding chapter, Haden Edwards was one of the earliest Texas empresarios. Nacogdoches, situated in the tract to be settled by him, was one of the three points where Spanish colonization had gained a foothold. A number of Mexicans lived in the vicinity, and derived considerable advantage in trade and other ways from their location on the main road from Louisiana to interior Texas. The town was also on the border of what had formerly been the "Neutral Ground," and that vicinity was still inhabited by some of the ruffian element. Along Ayesh bayou, east of Nacogdoches, was a considerable settlement of independent characters who were readily enlisted in any enterprise of danger and adventure.

North of Nacogdoches were a large group of Indian tribes, the Cherokees being the most influential. The half-breed chief of the latter



had petitioned, along with Edwards, Austin and others, a colony contract from the Mexican republic, and had left the capital under the impression that the lands would be granted. The promise, if made, was not carried out, and the disappointed Indians, convinced of Mexican perfidy, were ready to seize any opportunity to revenge themselves on the government or its citizens.

This was the nature of the population in the vicinity of the lands where Edwards was to introduce his colonists. His contract stipulated, of course, that he was to settle on vacant lands, and not dispossess any previous claimants. He was also to act jointly with the established authorities of Nacogdoches. A man named Norris had been appointed alcalde of that town, and, supported by the Mexicans and some of the older settlers, administered affairs with a high hand and was accused, by the Edwards colonists, of arrogating an authority far in excess of the constitutional limits of his office. The protests forwarded by Edwards to the political chief at San Antonio were disregarded, and on the representations made by the alcalde the empresario's contract was annulled and Edwards was ordered to leave the country.

In the meantime Haden Edwards had been succeeded by his brother, Major Benjamin W. Edwards, who thereafter took the active leadership. Major Edwards was a man of impressive dignity, an able leader, and possessed a tact and balance of judgment that, had they been exercised earlier, might have prevented the conflict between his brother and the alcalde. But he arrived on the scene when the only alternatives were to yield and forfeit the contract, or defend it by armed resistance. He chose the latter, and proceeded with much energy to marshal his forces and organize his Fredonian republic. He sought the alliance of the disaffected Indians on the north, and on December 21, 1826, the agents of the white settlers and the agents of the Indians issued the Fredonian declaration of independence at Nacogdoches, in which war was declared against the government of the Mexican states for the independence of both the Indian and white residents of Texas.

Copies of the declaration were sent to the Austin colonists, who, it was hoped, would support the war, and emissaries were also sent into Louisiana. In the meantime, on December 16th, Edwards, with fifteen followers, marched into Nacogdoches and without opposition took possession of the "stone house," which was the capitol of the short-lived republic.

It was known that a detachment of Mexican troops was marching

towards Nacogdoches, and Edwards made valiant efforts to concentrate his forces for resistance. But the enterprise was premature, and the reputation borne by that vicinity and the fact that Indians were allied in the movement lessened the sympathy and support that might otherwise have been enlisted. Austin called the Fredonians "mad men" and denounced them as "no longer Americans" by reason of their unnatural alliance with the Indians. He sent some of his colony militia along with the government troops to assist in quelling the insurrection.

On January 4, 1827, when the Fredonian garrison consisted of only eleven men, they were attacked by the alcalde Norris and a body of about seventy Mexicans. The Fredonians, being reinforced by nine Cherokees, scorned the protection of their stone fort and with reckless courage charged the enemy as soon as they appeared, scattering them like chaff. After this brief success the fortunes of the republic rapidly waned. No aid came from the United States, and Mexican agents had succeeded in drawing off most of the Indian allies. A party of Fredonians was captured by the advancing army, and the small remnant at Nacogdoches, in the face of these discouragements, voted to abandon their position and escape to Louisiana. When the government troops arrived, the "republic" had dissolved, and the few prisoners taken were, by the intervention of Austin, released. While the Edwards contract was annulled, the actual settlers who remained were protected in the possession of their lands, and the vacant portions of this region were afterwards covered by other empresarios.

The Fredonian war was only a local disturbance, and is chiefly important because it increased the reputation of the Americans as troublesome subjects and caused Mexico to resort to the restrictive measures which hastened the final destiny. The various seeds of discontent above noted were growing, and the events of the next few years brought about the first general reaction against the central government.

## CHAPTER XIV

### THE TEXAS COLONIES UNDER FEDERAL REGULATION

In 1828 the term of the first president of the Mexican republic expired. Pedraza was elected his successor, but the charge of fraud was raised, and General Santa Anna led the revolution to seat the defeated candidate, Guerro. For four days the streets of the capital were the scene of riot and bloodshed, ending in the triumph of the revolutionists. In January, 1829, the congress declared Guerro president, and Bustamente vice president, the latter having been the candidate of the Pedraza party for that office. In December, 1829, Guerro retired from office, thus leaving Bustamente as chief executive.

Bustamente, as head of the government, soon proved a despot, though he had begun as the defender of the constitution, which he claimed to have been violated in the choice of Guerro over Pedraza. For a brief term supported by the aristocracy, clergy and army, he ruled absolutely, disregarded constitutional restraints, and made congress the instrument of his arbitrary power.

From this time on until the government of Mexico ceases to exercise a vital influence on Texas history, that government was a military despotism, though still adhering to republican forms. While Bustamente and his associates were in power they alone were the responsible federal authorities, and the constitution and representative government through a popular congress were suspended. And the same condition prevailed under the party that followed Bustamente.

In January, 1832, a counter movement began in the garrison at Vera Cruz, in a protest by the officers against the violation of the constitution by Bustamente and his ministers. This was the "plan of Vera Cruz." It was inspired, no doubt, by Santa Anna, who had been in retirement for some time, but now came forward and took the active direction of this revolution "for constitutional liberty." The troops in all parts of the republic rapidly fell into line and declared for the "plan of Vera Cruz."

The revolution was accomplished with little bloodshed. In November, 1832, Bustamente, being deserted by the majority of his troops, resigned his office and fled from the country.

Santa Anna, having avowed himself as the restorer of the constitution, and the success of his campaign being due to his pose in the character, shrewdly chose a course of action that would not reveal his ulterior designs. His first act was to recall Pedraza, who had been rightfully elected president in 1828, and whose term would expire early in 1833. This increased his esteem among the republicans. He then retired to his estate. Early in 1833 occurred the elections for the third president of the republic. Santa Anna was the unanimous choice of the delegates, and entered office in the spring of that year. So far his conduct was above criticism, and he had gained the highest office of the republic with strict regard for the letter of the constitution. Leaving him thus established as president of the Republic of Mexico, we may now resume the narrative of events in Texas.

---

Hitherto the Texas colonies had been little concerned with the factional struggles between the centralists and federalists of the republic. The colonization laws had been administered liberally. Referring particularly to his own colonies, Austin said, in November, 1829: "This colony has received the most cordial and uninterrupted manifestations of liberality, confidence and kindness from every superior officer, who has governed the province of Texas or the state of Coahuila and Texas, from its first commencement to the present time." Situated on the extreme frontier, remote from both the federal capital and the seat of government of the state, the management of colonial affairs had necessarily been left almost entirely in local hands. And owing to the natural genius of Anglo-Saxons for self-government, this neglect had been little abused. The freedom allowed the settlers had up to this time more than offset the benefits of a strong and wisely administered central government.

No doubt, as a result of the liberality and loose administration of the earlier years, the collection of taxes and federal regulation would have provoked opposition among the Texans, even if the officials had exercised tact and a due regard for law. The clamor of the colonists over the payment of twelve and a half cents an acre to Austin is evidence that the Texans were not readily submissive to burdens of this kind.

In the first Austin contract, the colonists were freed from all duties

for six years, and were subject to only half the regular duties for the following six years. The state colonization law provided that the colonies should be exempt from taxation for ten years from the date of establishment of the colony. Consequently, no general duties were levied on the imports and exports of the colonies until after 1830.

The beginning of Mexican interference in Texas may be said to date from the report made by Alaman to the federal government in 1829. This federal commissioner charged the empresarios with numerous violations of their contracts, that settlers had located on lands in the border reserves, and that the colonists paid little or no respect to the decrees of republic and state. Aside from these irregularities, Alaman warned his superiors that the settlement of Texas from the United States was the first step in a design to wrest Texas from Mexico. The plot contemplated, first, a peaceful invasion and occupation of the desired country, and, then, after Texas was filled with American settlers, diplomacy would effect the transfer and annexation to the northern republic.

While Alaman's representations of the American policy were doubtless exaggerated, his report had the effect of renewing old fears, and impelled the federal government to begin an active course of regulation and restriction. With Bustamante as author and executor of this policy, it is not surprising that its provisions were oppressive and peremptory and exceedingly offensive to the Texans.

The federal decree of April 6, 1830, was the instrument with which Bustamante sought to check the American influence and compel the obedience of Texans to his despotic authority. The eleventh article of this law was as follows: "In exercise of the right reserved to the general congress by the seventh article of the law of August 18, 1824 [the national colonization law], the citizens of foreign countries lying adjacent to Mexico are prohibited from settling as colonists in the states or territories adjoining such countries. Those contracts of colonization, the terms of which are opposed to the present article, and which are not yet complied with, shall subsequently be suspended." The law also prohibited the importation of slaves, forbade intercourse across the border without a Mexican passport, and provided for the collection of import duties on Texas commerce.

This law in order to be effective had to provide for military occupation of the affected territory. Up to this time few soldiers had been quartered in Texas, and their presence had no suggestion of martial law. For defense against the Indians the colonies had been compelled to rely

chiefly on their own militia. Consequently the introduction of soldiers at this time was regarded by the colonists as an insult to their loyalty, and seemed to be the first step in subjecting them to the restraints of a military despotism. Besides the three points, San Antonio, San Felipe and Nacogdoches, at which small garrisons had been maintained, four new posts were established in Texas and occupied by garrisons early in 1831. Anahuac, on Galveston bay, was founded to guard this port of entry, a fort was erected at the mouth of the Brazos, called Fort Velasco, another garrison was placed at Tenoxtitlan, where the San Antonio road crossed the Brazos, and Fort Teran was established about midway between Nacogdoches and Anahuac. Custom houses were also opened at Galveston, Velasco and Matagorda.

The garrisons and custom houses were of themselves sufficiently obnoxious to the colonists, but the sudden prohibition against immigration from the United States and the suspension of the empresario contracts threatened ruin to the continued prosperity of Texas. This portion of the law was specially offensive because it discriminated against the citizens of the United States alone, the inhabitants of all other foreign nations being still permitted to enter as colonists; and, furthermore, the enactment implied a suspicion of the Texans' fidelity to the Mexican government. The strict enforcement of the law would in fact have "paralyzed the advancement and prosperity of Texas," since the history of the previous century had proved that Mexico was unable to colonize Texas, and America alone could supply the pioneers for the permanent occupation of this country. It is not to be supposed that a strict enforcement of the law was possible. Immigrants came in by roundabout roads, avoiding the military posts, and once settled could not be evicted. At the same time the revenue laws were being evaded, and smuggling flourished along the coast and across the border.

For two years after the passage of the odious law, no serious collision occurred between the federal military and the colonists. The conservative Texans, like Austin, who forebore violent measures until all peaceful resources were exhausted, were still in the majority, and were able to restrain the more impetuous colonists, or at least prevent serious consequences following their acts.

The hostility of the settlers found its first vent against the commander of the troops at Anahuac. Davis Bradburn, a Kentuckian in the service of the Mexican government, had been commissioned to establish the post at that point. In his conduct he was insolent, and, in a position

requiring the utmost tact to overcome the natural animosity of the settlers, he displayed a domineering temper quite inconsistent with his proper authority. He first gave offense by his arrest of the state commissioner, Madero, who in 1831 had gone to issue titles to the lands of the settlers between the San Jacinto and Sabine rivers. This region had been occupied by a number of colonists, beginning in 1821, but various circumstances had prevented the settlement of their titles. The governor had appointed Madero commissioner in 1830, and he began his work in January of the following year. He had selected the capital of the colony and named it Liberty, and established the ayuntamiento or local government there.

Bradburn, being apprised of this, proceeded to arrest the commissioner for violating the law of April 6, 1830, and dissolved the ayuntamiento at Liberty. He then organized a local government at Anahuac and attempted to extend its authority over the settlements of that vicinity. In May, 1832, an outrage committed by a soldier of the garrison caused a number of citizens of the neighborhood to assemble, and the perpetrator was severely punished. Bradburn then arrested and imprisoned several of the party, William B. Travis being among the number. This act aroused the entire surrounding country, and the garrison was quickly besieged by a body of armed settlers, demanding the release of the prisoners. Bradburn agreed to surrender them in return for a few cavalymen captured by the Texans. The latter, in good faith, restored the Mexicans, when Bradburn treacherously opened fire on the besiegers and kept the prisoners.

The siege was renewed with vengeance. A reinforcement started from Brazoria with some cannon, coming around by water. But when they had brought their schooner to Fort Velasco at the mouth of the Brazos, the commander of that post refused to allow them to pass. But the colonists had already defied the federal authority and had gone too far to stop at this obstacle. By a combined land and water attack, against a desperate and brave resistance on the part of the garrison under Colonel Ugartechea, after a number were killed on both sides, the fort was taken on June 27th. In the meantime the commandant at Nacogdoches had marched to relieve Anahuac, but on reaching there had found the Texans too strong, and he accordingly agreed to remove Bradburn from command and surrender the prisoners, which was done.

This attack on Velasco and Anahuac was clearly an act of rebellion against the general government. It was, it is true, in the nature of a

local insurrection, and the local councils at San Felipe and Matagorda passed resolutions reprehending the conduct of their neighbors. While the conservatives were striving to avert from the colonies a general retaliation for this impetuous uprising, there was suddenly presented an opportunity, not to disavow the attacks as the work of a small minority of the colonists, but to explain the entire proceedings on the ground of highest patriotism.

This quick shift was made possible by the events then transpiring in Mexico. Santa Anna's campaign against Bustamente had begun early in the year. Many of the garrisons had enrolled under his standard, and those that still held out were marked as enemies of the republic. While the colonists engaged in besieging Anahuac were encamped awaiting reinforcements at Turtle Bayou, six miles above Anahuac, they adopted (June 13th) what were known as the "Turtle Bayou Resolutions," in which they declared "as freemen devoted to a correct interpretation and enforcement of the constitution and laws according to their true spirit, we pledge our lives and fortunes in support of the same."

Accordingly when, soon after the capitulation of Velasco and the departure of Bradburn, Colonel Mexia, of the Santa Anna party, appeared in Texas with a considerable force, he was met with flattering receptions at Brazoria and other towns, the councils passed resolutions of loyalty to Santa Anna as the champion of the constitution, and the attacks on the forts were accounted for as part of the campaign against the Bustamente administration. Mexia, pleased with these proofs of allegiance, after a brief stay, withdrew to Mexico. The colonists then proceeded to expel the commandant at Nacogdoches, who still remained loyal to Bustamente, and by August, 1832, Texas was entirely freed of the military garrisons.



## CHAPTER XV

### THE CONVENTIONS OF 1832 AND 1833

By a fortunate turn of affairs the calamity of invasion and war was averted from Texas for three years. During this period the Texas colonies were knit together in practical experience and sentiment, and thus prepared for united resistance when the crisis came. Without this period of preparation, during which the colonies became accustomed to assembling in convention and acting in combination on matters affecting their general welfare, it is doubtful if Texas could have presented an organized resistance to Santa Anna's armies, and the settlements would have fallen one by one before an overwhelming force.

The first convention of the colonies to discuss and take measures for their welfare met at San Felipe, October 1, 1832. This meeting was characteristically American, composed of delegates chosen by the local districts. It was not "official" in the sense that it was a recognized part of the machinery of government. The consent of the political chief at San Antonio was not asked, nor was it considered necessary. But it shows the contrast between the American and the Spanish-Mexican ideas of democratic government that such a convention was strongly condemned by the Mexican authorities, not only on the ground of its proceedings being revolutionary and dangerous, but also because the practice itself was contrary to law and precedent.

This convention affords the first view of Texans consulting in democratic organization. There were fifty-six delegates, representing most of the American settlements in Texas at that time. The Mexican citizens took no part in the convention, San Antonio sending no delegation at all, though Goliad's delegates, chosen too late to be present, endorsed the proceedings.\* Stephen F. Austin was chosen president of the con-

\* The delegates and the districts they represented were as follows:

District of San Felipe de Austin: Stephen F. Austin, Wyly Martin, Francis W. Johnson, Luke Leassier.

vention, over William H. Wharton. It is noteworthy that these two men represented, respectively, the conservative and the radical elements of the colonists. One was striving with all his power to develop Texas in citizenship and resources to a point where it could demand its just rights without inviting destruction from a superior force; the other was the impetuous patriot willing to risk all in a quick, decisive encounter.

On the assembling of the delegates, four general topics were presented for discussion, the first reason for the convention being stated by John Austin as follows: "The revolution which commenced at Vera Cruz, on the 2d of January last, under the command of General Santa Anna, reached this remote section of the nation, and movements of a warlike character have taken place—the consequence of which has been that the military garrisons have all been compelled to quit the country. These movements have been greatly misrepresented by the enemies of Texas, and have been attributed to objects entirely different from the true ones. It was, therefore, considered to be highly important to the interest of Texas, and of the nation, to counteract these misrepresentations, by a plain statement of facts; and that a decided declaration should be made by the people of Texas, convened in general convention, of our firm and unshaken adhesion to the Mexican confederation and constitution, and our readiness to do our duty as Mexican citizens."

The work of the convention is outlined in a letter written by Francis W. Johnson, secretary of the convention, to the ayuntamiento of San

District of Victoria (really Brazoria): George B. McKinstry, William H. Wharton, John Austin, Charles D. Sayre.

District of Mina (or Bastrop): Ira Ingram, Silas Dinsmore, Eli Mercer.

District of Hidalgo: Nestor Clay, Alexander Thompson.

District of San Jacinto: Archibald B. Dobson, George F. Richardson, Robert Wilson.

District of Viesca: Jared E. Groce, William Robinson, Joshua Hadly.

District of Alfred (parts of Fayette and Lavaca counties): Samuel Bruff, David Wright, William D. Lacy, William R. Hensley, Jesse Burnham.

District of Lavaca: William Menifee, James Kerr, George Sutherland, Hugh McGuffin, Joseph K. Looney.

District of Gonzales: Henry S. Brown, C. Stinnett.

District of Mill Creek: John Connell, Samuel C. Douglass.

District of Nacogdoches: Charles S. Taylor, Thomas Hastings.

District of Ayish Bayou: Philip Sublett, Donald McDonald, William McFarland, Wyatt Hanks, Jacob Garret.

District of Snow (Neches) River: Thomas D. Beauchamp, Elijah Isaacs, Samuel Looney, James Looney.

District of Sabine: Benjamin Holt, Absalom Hier, Jesse Parker.

District of Tenaha (Shelby county): William English, Frederick Foye, George Butler, John M. Bradley, Jonas Harrison.

District of Liberty: Patrick C. Jack, Claiborn West, James Morgan.

Antonio, subsequent to adjournment. "After full deliberation it was concluded to represent to the congress, agreeably to article 2d of the law of May 7, 1824, that Texas has the proper requisites to form singly a state separate from Coahuila. It was further agreed to claim a reform of the maritime tariff, and the abrogation of article 11th of the law of April 6, 1830, prohibiting the immigration of natives of the United States of the north. A request was also made to the government to appoint a commissioner for the settlement of land matters, and to establish an ayuntamiento between the San Jacinto and Sabine rivers; also to grant certain lands to the ayuntamientos of Texas, by the sale whereof they might raise the funds needed to erect schoolhouses and support schools of the Spanish and American languages. In view of the exposed situation of the country to Indian depredations, the convention agreed upon framing a provincial regulation for the militia. They also appointed a standing, or central, committee in this town and subordinate committees in every section represented in the body. It was made the duty of the central committee to correspond with the subordinate committees, inform them concerning subjects of general interest, and, in case of emergency, to call another general meeting or Texas convention."

The memorials drawn up by the convention and forwarded to Mexico were unnoticed in the hurly-burly of the revolution. In Texas, the convention, like American mass meetings in general, provided a vent for the pent-up excitement attending the commotions of the time, and in so far it tended to calm the people and enable them to resume their regular routine of life. Austin, replying to a letter from the political chief at San Antonio, who condemned the convention and threatened punishment to the colonists for such proceedings, declared that as a result of the convention "already the public is better satisfied, and we have had more quiet than we had some time anterior thereto." Continuing, he said: "In times like the present, any measure is bad that tends to irritate and produce excitement; every measure is good that is calculated to soothe, bind up and bring about tranquillity and good order."

As to the ultimate results, Austin's opinion, expressed in the same letter, was gloomy. "I have but little hope of obtaining anything from the government of Mexico. There is little probability that we shall soon have a stable and peaceable order of public affairs; and I give it as my deliberate judgment that Texas is lost if she take no measure of her own for her welfare. I incline to the opinion that it is your duty, as chief magistrate, to call a general convention to take into consideration

the condition of the country. I do not know how the state or general government can presume to say that the people of Texas have violated the constitution, when the acts of both governments have long since killed the constitution, and when the confederation itself has hardly any life left. I cannot approve the assertion that the people have not the right to assemble peaceably, and calmly and respectfully represent their wants. In short, the condition of Texas is bad, but we may fear to see it still worse."

The administration of affairs in Texas at that time required careful handling, a fact that was understood by Santa Anna himself. His policy, as revealed in a letter written to the minister of state under the reinstated President Pedraza, was conciliatory and in pleasing contrast with the harsh measures which he afterwards executed on the rebellious Texans. He wrote: "Satisfied, as I am, that the foreigners who have introduced themselves in that province have a strong tendency to declare themselves independent of the republic; and that all their remonstrances and complaints are but disguised to that end, I think it to be of paramount importance that General Filisola should forthwith proceed to fulfil his mission, having first been well supplied with good officers and the greatest number of troops possible, with instructions both to secure the integrity of our territory and do justice to the colonists. The interest of the nation requires a kind policy towards those people, for they have done us good service, and, it must be confessed, they have not on all occasions been treated with justice and liberality."

The petitions of the first conventions having effected nothing owing to the revolution in Mexico, the central committee decided to call another convention of delegates to meet in April, 1833. The election for these members in the various districts and municipalities occurred in March. The Mexican officials at Nacogdoches and other points offered ineffectual opposition to these elections, the absence of troops except the citizen militia making it impossible to enforce any orders contrary to public opinion.

The convention that met at San Felipe, April 1, 1833, was composed of fifty-six delegates, a majority having been members of the previous body. The work of the convention was a practical repetition of the memorials and petitions drawn up before, except that in this case a state constitution was formulated to be presented with the demand for a separate state government. The chairman of the committee that drew up this document was Sam Houston, a delegate from the Nacogdoches dis-

trict, and now for the first time taking an active part in Texas affairs. Some significance may be attached to the fact that William H. Wharton was the successful candidate for president of the convention, and from this and subsequent events it may be inferred that the "independence" party in Texas was growing stronger. To conclude its program the convention selected Stephen F. Austin and two others to carry the memorials to Mexico and present the subject to the national congress. It turned out that Austin went alone on this mission.

The points of the controversy that now ensued concerning the rights and wrongs of Texas constitute one of the most complicated problems of Texas history. For Mexico it could be claimed: 1. As a sovereign nation she possessed the right to exercise jurisdiction impartially throughout her dominion, including the right to police the borders and compel respect to her officials and laws, and to enforce the collection of the national revenues. 2. The liberality of the republic and individual states in disposing of the public lands deserved in recompense a proper loyalty from the adopted citizens who had profited by this bounty, and a willingness on their part to assume their share of national burdens and responsibilities. 3. As to separate statehood for Texas, the granting of that was entirely at the discretion of the national congress, though the right of petition for statehood could not be denied the Texans. Moreover, the congress could properly allege that Texas was not yet prepared, either in population or revenues, to become a self-sustaining state.

Texas, on the other hand, had just grounds for grievance. 1. The union of the two former provinces of Coahuila and Texas as one state, with the seat of government in the former, produced an inequality of administration from which Texas suffered. Texas having a small minority of representation was powerless to obtain legislation specially adapted to her needs. Though the state government was generally fair and liberal, the entire dissimilarity of commercial and industrial interests in the two provinces rendered almost inevitable a certain neglect of the welfare of Texas. In 1834 a tardy law extended the jury system and a distinct branch of the courts with district and appellate jurisdiction to Texas, but previous to that time resort to litigation in any but the inferior tribunals involved journeys to Monclova or Saltillo, a distance that practically prohibited the benefits of the courts except to the rich. 2. The enforcement of the act of April 6, 1830, was offensive because of its discrimination and would have proved a serious obstacle to the continued advancement of Texas, though the right of a sovereign nation to prohibit

immigration cannot be denied. 3. The Texans protested that the tariff on many articles of necessity was so high as to prohibit importation. A modification of the duty rates was doubtless imperative, and the collection of revenues at the various ports of entry should have been conducted without harsh military measures.

The above may be considered the abstract principles of the controversy. In the final result these were almost lost sight of in the more immediate passions and violence that impelled both sides to armed conflict.

Mexico, indeed, was no longer a constitutional republic, and was daily losing the dignity of a sovereign nation. The government under Santa Anna, while at first retaining a semblance of loyalty to the constitution, soon developed into a complete dictatorship, with Santa Anna supreme. From that time, he used this authority, supported by his armies, to deprive the separate states of their independent powers of government and to concentrate the sources of all legislation and administration in himself. It became a question not merely of the preservation of the individual state's rights, but of republican government itself. Whatever may have been the original intentions of the dictator towards a liberal and just administration of Texas affairs, it is evident that, when Texas resisted his assumption of supreme power and annulment of the constitution, he used the most harsh and despotic measures to subjugate this rebellious people. After he had disclosed the full scope of his ambitions and given free hand to the barbarous and vengeful means employed to coerce his subjects, there was no course left to free and independent men but resistance.

Amid the turmoil and anarchy caused by Santa Anna, the Texans were prey to many opinions and influences. Public opinion was many sided. One group of men sincerely believed that the welfare of Texas lay in close union with the Mexican federation; an opposite group agitated entire independence. These were the two chief parties. In addition there were, unquestionably, a group of "jingoes" among the Texans, few in number but noisy and active in their demonstrations. They were principally speculators and adventurers, who had nothing to lose and were willing to plunge the country into war for the chance of rich success. The old filibuster spirit still survived to some degree, and any scheme promising excitement and spoils would attract recruits from the various settlements. The proof of this is found in several enterprises of later date. The population of Texas at this period was assorted. The

majority were the industrious class of pioneers, men "between the plow handles," as Austin described them, and naturally conservative and law-abiding. In the ranks of the minority were a more fickle and unruly element, containing some who sought in Texas a safer field for their operations than had been allowed them in the United States.

A recognition of the existence of these different elements in the population of that period is essential to a proper understanding of history. Many of the apparent inconsistencies in the events of these years need no explanation when it is realized that the Texans were not a unit in opinion, endeavor or character; that an act of rashness in one section is not a basis of judgment against the whole people. In the shifting uncertainties of the time, even the wisest were at loss, and many acts and many opinions can with difficulty be harmonized with the stricter code of right and patriotism. Later, when the revolution became inevitable, all classes became united in the one purpose of independence and war against despotism, and the principles of duty and patriotism became clearly defined.

## CHAPTER XVI

### EVENTS LEADING TO THE REVOLUTION

In April, 1833, Austin proceeded to Mexico alone as public agent of the people for the purpose of securing the admission of Texas as a separate state. He found the capital still in turmoil. Months passed and his petition slept in a committee of congress. In despair of obtaining anything, he wrote to the people of Bexar recommending the organization of a local state government, in the hope that the general congress would eventually recognize and approve this *de facto* organization. Finally, after six months of well-nigh fruitless labors, he started home, in December. The letter he had written to Bexar having been sent to the federal authorities, he was arrested, brought back to the capital and imprisoned in the dungeon of the old Inquisition, charged with having promoted treason against the nation. After three months of solitary confinement he was transferred to another prison and the rigors of imprisonment abated, but he was detained, practically a prisoner, in Mexico until the summer of 1835. His trial was referred from one tribunal to another, and in fact he was never tried. His detention appears to have been more as a hostage for the good behavior of his fellow citizens, and when it was thought that his conservative influence would be worth more to Santa Anna if he were at home, he was released.

During his stay in Mexico, Austin evidently became convinced that the best interests of Texas would be promoted by close political and commercial union with the Mexican states, and as a result of the gracious treatment he received from Santa Anna he was led to believe, for a time at least, that Texas had a real friend in the dictator. The arguments by which he reached the former conclusion are interesting. He states them most succinctly in his "Prison Diary," under date of February 20, 1834, where he answers his question, "What is the real interest of Texas?" by declaring that it is not in separation from Mexico. Nor is it to the advantage of the United States to extend its territory over Texas.



"All the rivers of Texas take their rise in Texas . . . and do not enter the territories of the North, so as to form bonds of union, as does the river Mississippi with Louisiana and other states adjacent. There is no market in the north for the produce of Texas, and there is in Mexico. . . . As regards the commerce with Europe, the Mexican flag is equal to that of the north. What, then, is the true interest of Texas? It is to have a local government to cement and strengthen its union with Mexico instead of weakening or breaking it. What Texas wants is an organization of a local government, and it is of little consequence whether it be a part of Coahuila or as a separate state or territory, provided the organization be a suitable one."

In October, 1834, a council was held by Santa Anna, at which Austin was present, to determine a policy concerning Texas. The result was the suspension of the law of April 6, 1830, prohibiting immigration from the United States. Aside from this, the council gave only assurances of the benevolent intentions of the general government respecting Texas. It was decided that the time was not yet mature for the separation of Texas from Coahuila. But of greatest importance to the destiny of Texas was the decision that four thousand soldiers should be introduced into Texas for the ostensible purpose of guarding the frontiers against Indians and assisting in the collection of revenues.

In May, 1834, Santa Anna had dissolved the general congress, and in January of next year convened a congress the majority of whose members were favorable to his designs. The aristocratic and church parties were largely represented, and politically the members were pronounced centralists. The congress ceased to be a popular branch of republican government, and was merely a council to pass the decrees of the president-dictator.

Among the first acts of this congress was a decree reducing the militia of the different states to one for every five hundred population and disarming the remainder. Compliance with this demand would have left the citizens defenseless against the tyranny of military oppression. This measure alone was enough to provoke resistance from all who were still loyal to republican principles.

The revolution in favor of centralism did not take place without opposition. The federal party resisted Santa Anna's encroachments, and the sharp division between centralists and federalists had important results for Texas. In the State of Coahuila-Texas, in 1834, the regular government, with capital at Monclova, was federalist in sympathies and

**protested** vigorously against the dissolution of the general congress and the arbitrary administration of Santa Anna. The centralists in the state, rallying at the former capital of Saltillo, then set up an opposition government, supporting Santa Anna and centralism. The result was civil war, with rival legislatures and executives assuming to govern the state, and each contending for recognition from the general government. Towards the close of 1834 this quarrel was adjusted through the mediation of Santa Anna, who decided for the legitimacy of the Monclova government. But in the meantime, while the state was under the disputed authority of two governors, the period designated by law for holding the elections for governor and other state officials had expired, and the state was thus disorganized. How this condition of affairs affected Texas will be mentioned later, and attention will now be directed to the progress of centralism in the republic and state.

To remedy the situation brought about by the civil war in the state, Santa Anna ordered a special election for governor and legislature. These officials were not installed and the regular administration in operation until March, 1835. It is important to consider the work of this legislature, the last legislature of the united state of Coahuila-Texas. Notwithstanding Santa Anna's precautions, the governor, Augustin Viesca, and a majority of the other officials were of strong republican tendencies and showed no willingness to accept the unconstitutional decrees of the central government. While thus opposed to Santa Anna on the one hand, on the other they proved venal and extravagant in handling the business of the state, particularly in their acts affecting Texas. It is necessary to state briefly the results of these two attitudes taken by the state government.

April 22, 1835, the governor and legislature addressed a petition to the general congress "requesting that the federal constitution may not be reformed except in the manner therein provided." It declared a firm determination to sustain the constitution and an intention to recognize no acts of the general government not consistent with that fundamental law. It also demanded the repeal of the decree diminishing the civic militia, the only available defense against Indians and the only force for preserving law and order. In this latter request, the government of Coahuila-Texas was supporting the state of Zacatecas, which had forwarded a similar protest.

The second point—the acts of the legislature of 1835 respecting Texas—brings up the subject of land speculations as one of the con-

tributing causes of the Texas revolution. An act of the legislature, March 26, 1834, had superseded all previous colonization laws and provided for the sale of the vacant lands of the state "at public auction." In response to this act, a large quantity of eleven-league tracts were sold to both Mexicans and foreigners, at \$250 a league. This method of disposing of lands, unhampered by the requirements of the former colonization contracts, had attracted a number of speculators, and when the new legislature assembled in 1835 a committee from a company in the United States were present to urge an even more liberal sale. The result was the decree of March 14, 1835, permitting the governor to dispose of four hundred leagues of vacant lands, "for attending to the present public exigencies of the state." The "exigencies" were afterwards defined to mean an empty treasury and the necessity of providing for the defense of the frontier against Indians. The deal was at once closed between the governor and the committee, the purchase price being \$30,000 for the four hundred leagues—hardly two cents an acre. A loud outcry was at once raised against this wanton squandering of the public domain of Texas, and this act more than any other disgusted the great body of Texans with the state government. The effects of this transaction were peculiar. While it rendered the Texans extremely hostile to the state and revived the old agitation for separate statehood, the measure was also opposed by the general congress, which passed a decree (April 25) annulling the state law. And when Santa Anna sent his armies against the rebel government of Coahuila-Texas, one of the reasons assigned for this step was a purpose to punish the land speculators. The latter, being thus disappointed in their plans, retired to Texas, where they joined the war faction and at once became the most active agitators for Texas independence. The presence of these men in Texas during the revolutionary period should be remembered in connection with subsequent events.

After the convention of 1833, Texas remained for two years outside the disturbances of revolution, though public opinion was in a continual ferment. A great restraint was laid upon aggressive action because of Austin's detention in Mexico, and his letters written from prison were always in counsel of patience and non-interference with the troubles of the federal government. After the repeal of the law against immigration, and in consequence of the favorable laws enacted by the state legislature in 1834, there was comparative peace and the conservatives were inclined to hope for better things under the rule of Santa Anna. The

extremists, however, continued the agitation for separate statehood and were by no means willing to let matters rest, though whether from motives of real patriotism or of self-interest, it is difficult to determine.

Soon after came the civil war in Coahuila, and that renewed the old question of statehood. In October, 1834, a number of citizens of Coahuila met in council with citizens of San Antonio and issued an address declaring that the state government had ceased to exist, the inhabitants being under no obligation to obey either of the rival governors, and in consequence they recommended that the people of Texas meet in convention at San Antonio in November to deliberate on means to save the country from "such unparalleled anarchy and confusion." This letter was followed by an appeal from the political chief of the department of Brazos (Henry Smith) for the organization of a separate state government so that Texas might be best prepared to meet any of the dangers that threatened because of the disorganization in both the state and republic. But this plan was denounced in a circular from the grand central committee that had been appointed in the convention of 1833. The committee, while admitting the inconveniences resulting from the revolution, declared that Texas could not justify herself by adopting the unconstitutional methods which she had all along so strongly opposed. Furthermore, until Austin had exhausted all resources as representative of the Texans, and had returned safe, it was necessary for the people to exercise patience with the harassed general government and keep as free from offense as possible.

The conservative influence still prevailed, and Texas acquiesced in the reorganized state government so far as to send her representatives to the legislature. Then, early in 1835, when the centralists in Mexico gained full control and began putting their plan into effect by ordering the disarmament of the militia and full submission to the decrees of the central congress, events hastened rapidly to a crisis.

Several of the states raised feeble opposition to Santa Anna, but the most stubborn opponents of his ambition were the states of Zacatecas and Coahuila-Texas. The governor of Zacatecas, refusing to disarm the militia, instead, called out the entire citizen soldiery in resistance. Santa Anna brought a large force of his disciplined troops to the state, and meeting the untrained Zacatecans on the plain of Guadalupe, in May, 1835, in one brief struggle crushed all republican aspirations in that state. In the meantime, General Cos, commandant general with headquarters at Matamoras, was ordered to Monclova to compel the obedi-

ence of the resisting legislature. The legislature escaped punishment only by adjourning *sine die*, in April, 1835. The governor and his council attempted to escape and remove the seat of government to San Antonio, but were captured on the way and taken to Monterey. Santa Anna then deposed all the state officials, and during the remainder of the year the state was under an appointed governor and military authorities.

After the fall of Zacatecas and the expulsion of the Coahuila-Texas legislature, Santa Anna turned his attention to perfecting the new plan of government in Mexico and no attempt was made to invade Texas. An answer to the question why he did not immediately proceed to the subjugation of Texas is important only in a consideration of the moral aspects of the relations between Mexico and Texas. If it be asserted that there was no direct provocation for the invasion at that time, who were responsible for the developments which called for invasion later in the same year? If no reason existed for a military expedition to Texas in May, and there was such a reason in October, then it might appear that the Texans had in the meantime committed aggressions demanding punishing by the federal government. For the moment taking the Mexican point of view, it is necessary to admit that causes had arisen in the meanwhile demanding either a vigorous assumption of the federal power over Texas or a complete surrender of that territory. Yet this answer does not satisfy all the particulars of the case. Santa Anna was in no hurry to extend his conquest to Texas. He still had Austin in Mexico, and through him hoped to hold the Texans in check until he could strengthen his organization in other parts of the republic. There was no intention of allowing Texas to escape submission to the central sovereignty, but pacific means were to be employed at first, and if these failed the power of arms would be invoked.

In Texas the center of public opinion was shifting from the older and less vital questions to the one problem, whether to submit to a departmental administration imposed by Santa Anna, or to form an independent government on the basis of the constitution of 1824. The independents continued to inflame and agitate despite threats and reassurances from the federal authorities. The majority were willing to await the coming crisis, advocated a policy of not stinging until trodden upon, hoped for a fair solution of difficulties. But the agitators—many of them refugee Mexican liberals, foes of centralism and Santa Anna—played on every string of race antipathy, pictured the threatening despotism, the certain dispossession of the settlers from their lands—and

thus the leaven of revolution worked until the whole body politic was ripe for war.

Two events had already gone far to precipitate war. In 1834 the collection of maritime revenues was resumed in Texas, the custom houses at Anahuac and Matagorda being opened. Captain Tenorio with a company of soldiers was sent to Galveston bay to protect the collector. The collection of the revenues was very irregular. Smuggling was a business carried on with little concealment or dishonor. The position of Captain Tenorio was an unenviable one at best. The embarrassments that hampered his actions, as well as the inefficiency of his force, allowed the dishonest traders to land their goods without payment, while the honest merchants who complied with the customs regulations were thus put at a decided disadvantage with their competitors. The office was unpopular and badly managed, and the conduct of the citizens of the vicinity was no less open to criticism. In April, 1835, the ayuntamiento to Liberty issued an order, declaring it to be the duty of all citizens to obey the laws of the nation, that the imposition of revenue duties was an indisputable right of government, and calling upon all persons to desist from violence, threats or illegal acts against the collector. In spite of this advice a collision soon took place. In the latter part of June, as the climax of the quarrel, a party of Texans, choosing W. B. Travis as their leader, attacked the fort, compelled Captain Tenorio and his garrison to surrender, and sent the prisoners off to San Antonio. This proceeding was at once denounced by the majority of Texans, but it compromised them all because of their unwillingness to arrest and surrender the perpetrators of the mischief.

When the report of this attack reached General Cos, he sent a vessel under command of Captain Thompson, a renegade Englishman in the Mexican service, to Anahuac. Thompson proved as insolent and blustering in his conduct as Bradburn had three years before, and went so far as to attack and capture a vessel engaged in the Texas trade. The San Felipe, which had been fitted out with cannon at New Orleans, gave fight to the Mexican vessel while it still lingered on the coast. Thompson was forced to surrender, and was then sent to New Orleans on charge of piracy in interrupting trade between the United States and Mexico.

The Mexican government could not overlook these offenses. For the first affairs it was necessary to inflict punishment either on those actually engaged in the attack or on the whole body of Texans, provided the latter assumed to protect the perpetrators. The attack by the

San Felipe involved the United States and increased the fear of Americans which was always more or less present in the minds of the Mexicans. Orders were soon issued from Mexico for the arrest of the actors in the Anahuac affair, as well as for the apprehension of the principal men of the deposed state government who had taken refuge in Texas, and the execution of these orders was one of the purposes of the subsequent invasion of Texas.

The summer of 1835 was marked by numerous meetings throughout Texas. In May, committees "of safety and correspondence" were appointed by each of the three municipalities of Mina (Bastrop), Gonzales and Viesca, and by July these committees were in existence in practically all the settlements.

In July, Ugartechea arrived at San Antonio with five hundred troops, these being the first considerable force introduced for the purpose of military occupation. July 4th, General Cos issued a circular to the inhabitants of Texas (supplemented by a letter from Ugartechea on the 15th), giving assurance that the military forces would be used only to uphold the laws of the republic, but warning the people of the consequences of improper zeal for the enemies of the government. "If the Mexican government has cheerfully lavished upon the new settlers all its worthiness of regard, it will likewise know how to repress with strong arm all those who, forgetting their duties to the nation which has adopted them as her children, are pushing forward with a desire to live at their own option, without any subjection to the laws."

July 14th, at a meeting of the Austin colonists in San Felipe, it was resolved that "an early consultation of the people of all Texas by their chosen delegates is necessary to the attainment of union, concert of act and determination of conduct in the protection and defense of our rights and liberties."

Meanwhile General Cos had issued orders for the arrest of numerous individuals in Texas, among them Lorenzo de Zavala, former adviser and friend of Santa Anna, but now one of the latter's most active enemies. The Texans showed no willingness to surrender any of these political refugees, and for several reasons the commandant at Bexar deferred sending troops to execute the orders.

The declarations published by the various committees and councils indicated, in part, a firm determination to stand for constitutional rights and resist invasion, and, in part, a desire to conciliate the federal government and a purpose to abide by all reasonable measures for the enforce-

ment of law and order and the collection of revenues. As Yoakum says, there were three divisions in public sentiment, the first demanding immediate war, the second being for orderly procedure until resistance was compelled by the actions of the enemy, and the third opinion being held by those who were willing to submit without protest to the central government. The presence among the first faction of some of the land speculators and state officials who had contrived the unpopular land laws prevented many citizens from lending their support to any plan of organized resistance.

However, the idea of a general convention to consider and provide for the welfare of Texas had been growing in favor for a long time. The subject was given definite form at the meeting at Columbia, August 15th, when it was resolved that "a consultation of all Texas" was indispensable, and a committee was appointed to address and co-operate with the other civic districts of Texas in calling such a consultation. The last resolution of this meeting was in defiant tone—"we will not give up any individuals to the military authorities." It was arranged among the various committees that the election of delegates for the consultation should take place on October 5th.

On the first of September, Stephen Austin arrived from Mexico. As the most influential citizen of Texas, much depended on the part he would choose to play in this critical stage of affairs. His first public expression was a speech delivered at a dinner in Brazoria, in honor of his return. He had returned, hoping, he said, to find Texas at peace, but instead found "all disorganized, all in anarchy, and threatened with immediate hostilities." As to affairs in Mexico, he said: "The revolution in Mexico is drawing to a close. The object is to change the form of government, destroy the federal constitution of 1824, and establish a central or consolidated government. The states are to be converted into provinces. Whether the people of Texas ought or ought not to agree to this change, and relinquish all or a part of their constitutional and vested rights under the constitution of 1824, is a question of the most vital importance, one that calls for the deliberate consideration of the people, and can only be decided by them, fairly convened for the purpose." He repeated Santa Anna's assurances of friendship for Texas and a desire to promote her prosperity; but he had warned the Mexican officials against trying to coerce Texas by arms. "I gave it as my decided opinion, that the inevitable consequence of sending an armed force to this country would be war. I stated that there was a sound and correct



moral principle in the people of Texas that was abundantly sufficient to restrain or put down all turbulent or seditious movements, but that this moral principle could not and would not unite with any armed force sent against this country; on the contrary, it would resist and repel it, and ought to do so."

During the month of September it became apparent that Mexico would insist on the surrender of her political enemies and compel the disarmament of the militia. The question of obeying or resisting these two demands had to be answered either with war or submission. This was the immediate problem confronting the Texas people. The solution of this involved the greater but more remote subject of accepting or rejecting the plan of a central government. It is important to remember that in the first stage of hostilities, Texas was answering the immediate question, and, because of a lack of unity in public opinion on the matters of controversy, the campaigns had the character of a volunteer and extempore effort.

The decision of the problem, and principles involved, were stated in the circular of September 19th, sent out by the committee of safety at San Felipe and signed by Austin as chairman. It recommended: That the people should insist on their rights under the constitution, that every district should participate in the general consultation, that the militia should be organized and drilled ready for emergency. "This committee deem it to be their duty to say that, in their opinion, all kind of conciliatory measures with General Cos and the military at Bexar are hopeless, and that nothing but the *ruin* of Texas can be expected from any such measures. They have already, and very properly, been resorted to without effect. *War* is our only resource. There is no other remedy. We must defend our rights, ourselves, and our country, by force of arms."

## CHAPTER XVII

### THE CAMPAIGN OF 1835

In Gonzales was a cannon which had been loaned the citizens for protection against the Indians. The return of this was now demanded by Colonel Ugartechea. This was a step in carrying out the decree of the republic to disarm the people. The alcalde of Gonzales refused to comply with the order. Word was sent to Bastrop for volunteers to assist in repelling the attack which was certain to follow. The alarm spread rapidly and volunteers hastened from all quarters to the scene of the expected hostilities. As chairman of the committee at San Felipe, Austin advised (September 29th) that the volunteer force should act entirely on the defensive, retaining the cannon and protecting themselves on the ground of constitutional rights. A troop of cavalry had been sent from San Antonio to seize the cannon, but was prevented from crossing the river by a small number of Gonzales citizens. Every possible means was taken to delay the Mexicans until an adequate force could be assembled. Then, on October 1st, deeming it best to act on the offensive before the enemy could be reinforced, the Texans crossed the river and early in the morning of the next day attacked the Mexicans. Occupying a conspicuous place in the foreground of the battle was the very cannon in dispute, and before its fire, and the fusillade from the Texas riflemen, the enemy were in flight before the morning mists had lifted from the prairie.

Thus the die was cast, and there could be no more thought or possibility of peace. A "defensive war" it was declared to be, but the war spirit, once aroused by easy success, was not content while the enemy held a single post in Texas. No doubt, the majority of discerning men at that time foresaw that this movement would not cease until the fragile bonds of federation and loyalty to the republic had been destroyed.

In the meantime, the diversion of the colonists at Gonzales had enabled General Cos to land five hundred troops at Matagorda and without hindrance reach San Antonio in October. On October 4th a circular issued and signed by Austin illustrated the sudden concentration of pur-

poses under the influence of the victory at Gonzales. "War is declared against military despotism. Public opinion has proclaimed it with one united voice. The campaign has opened. The military at Bexar has advanced upon Gonzales. General Cos has arrived and threatens to overrun the country. But one spirit, one common purpose, animates everyone in this department, which is to take Bexar, and drive all the military out of Texas before the campaign closes."

It should not be forgotten that the appeals sent out for volunteers to this campaign came from only semi-official committees. There was as yet no organized government in Texas, no authority to command the people to take up arms. The army that was now assembling at Gonzales was, therefore, composed of "volunteers," it was altogether a voluntary organization acting in accord with the various committees of safety but in no wise subject to their orders, and responsible only to its own organic conscience and the spirit of patriotism in which it originated. In the light of this consideration, the subsequent campaign becomes the more admirable for its success, and the points of weakness in the army are the more excusable.

The volunteers assembled at Gonzales to the number of several hundred, and on October 11th, they elected Austin as their commander in chief. Two days later the march was begun for San Antonio. In the meantime, cheering news came from Goliad, where, on October 9th, Captain Collingsworth had surprised the Mexican garrison and, after a brief struggle, forced it to capitulate. Thus a large store of arms and supplies fell into the hands of the patriots, and this event had the further effect of bringing to the support of the campaign many hesitating Texans. Enthusiasm was also being aroused across the Louisiana border, and two American companies soon came to the assistance of their former fellow citizens. Without the resources of arms, supplies and volunteers that came from the United States, it is doubtful if this campaign could have succeeded. Early in November the Mexican post at Lipantitlan, near San Patricio, was captured by a company of Texans, and thus San Antonio alone remained to the enemy.

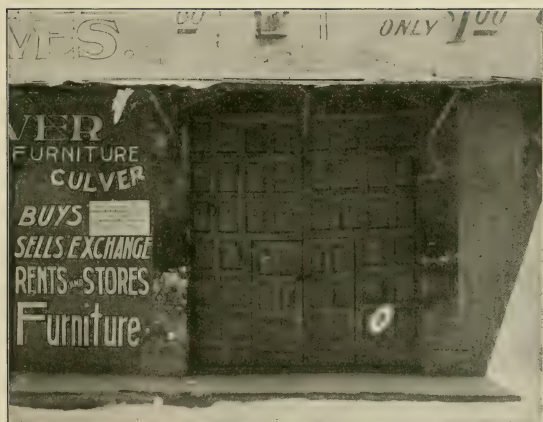
From his camp on Salado creek, on October 27th, Austin sent Colonel James Bowie and Captain James W. Fannin with ninety-two men to reconnoiter in the vicinity of San Antonio. Bowie encamped for the night near the old Mission Concepcion, and when day broke his position was nearly surrounded by four hundred Mexicans. The Texans were well sheltered by the river bluff, and the enemy's volley firing did no

harm, but the wonderful skill of the Texas riflemen wrought havoc among the close ranks advancing against them. The Mexicans brought forward a field-piece, but the Americans dropped the gunners as fast as they stepped to their places, and the gun was fired only five times during the engagement, being finally left in the hands of the victors. In this battle of Concepcion only one Texan was killed, while the Mexican forces were defeated and lost heavily in killed and wounded.

After this encouraging victory the volunteer army moved up to the east side of San Antonio across the river, and laid siege to the town. Their camp was north of the Alamo, in the vicinity of the river ford. The majority of the men were eager to storm the place, but the fortifications were strong and there were no siege guns to reduce them, so the officers hesitated to risk so many lives in an assault. The siege operations were continued for a month with no important result. Discontent was brewing among the men, who wished for quick action that they might return to their homes which needed them. The ranks were rapidly thinning, though new recruits also kept arriving. Austin, having been appointed commissioner to negotiate aid in the United States, resigned the command in the latter part of November, and was succeeded by Col. Edward Burleson.

Occasional skirmishes varied the monotony, among them the "grass fight," in which the Texans again proved their superiority over greater numbers. Cos and his army were quite effectually cooped up, and supplies were often interrupted by the vigilant besiegers. Reports of a large body of troops marching from the south to raise the siege increased the necessity of decisive action. Finally a general assault was ordered, and then was countermanded, because the enemy were supposed to have been informed, by a deserter, of the proposed attack. This augmented the chafing of the patriots. Just then, however, information came that the Mexican garrison was weaker than was supposed, and, taking advantage of this opportune juncture, Col. Ben Milam dramatically appeared before the soldiers and, waving his hat, called out, "Who will go with me into San Antonio?" This appeal fired the enthusiasm of every volunteer, and three hundred at once placed themselves at his command in readiness to storm the town.

Early on December 5th the intrepid band forced its way into town, in two divisions. To cover the movement, the attention of the enemy was diverted by artillery fire directed at the Alamo, while the two attacking columns advanced on the west side of the river among the brush and



VEREMENDI PLACE

Mexican *jacals* toward the center of town. The first division of the storming party, under the immediate command of Colonel Milam, took possession of the house of Don Antonio de la Garza. The second division, under Col. F. W. Johnson, took possession of the house of Veremendi.\* These positions were a block north of the Main Plaza, the Veremendi house being on the east side of Soledad street, and the Garza house one block west. "The last division was exposed for a short time to a very heavy fire of grape and musketry from the whole of the enemy's line of fortification, until the guns of the first division opened their fire, when the enemy's attention was directed to both divisions. At 7 o'clock a heavy cannonading from the town was seconded by a well directed fire from the Alamo, which for a time prevented the possibility of covering our lines, or effecting a safe communication between the two divisions. In consequence of the 12-pounder having been dismounted, and the want of proper cover for the other gun, little execution was done by our artillery during the day." The night was spent in strengthening the position and extending trenches. At dawn on the morning of the 6th, "the enemy were observed to have occupied the tops of the houses in our front, where, under cover of breastworks, they opened through loopholes a very brisk fire of small-arms on our whole line, followed by a steady cannonading from the town in front, and the Alamo on the left flank." The first division advanced and occupied a house to the right of the Garza house, and extended their trenches, but otherwise little progress was made during the day.

"At daylight of the 7th, it was discovered that the enemy had opened a trench on the Alamo side of the river, and on the left flank, as well as strengthening their battery on the cross street leading to the Alamo." Their fire from these positions was silenced about 11 o'clock. "About 12 o'clock, Henry Carnes of Captain York's company, exposed to a heavy fire from the enemy, gallantly advanced to a house in front of the first division, and with a crowbar forced an entrance, into which the whole of the company immediately followed him, and made a secure lodgment." "At half past three o'clock, as our gallant commander, Colonel Milam, was passing into the yard of my position [Johnson's, in the Veremendi house], he received a rifle shot in the head which caused his instant death." Late in the evening the Texans forced their way into and "took possession of the house of Don Antonio Navarro, an advanced and important position close to the square." At 9 o'clock on the following

\* Report of F. W. Johnson, colonel in command after the death of Milam.

morning another advance was made, into the "Zambrano row," at the northeast corner of Military Plaza and a block west of the Main Plaza. The party at this point was reinforced during the evening, and, news of the arrival of Mexican reinforcements having been received, at half-past ten in the evening "Captains Cook and Patton, with the company of New Orleans Grays, and a company of Brazoria volunteers, forced their way into the priest's house [on the north side of Main Plaza] although exposed to the fire of a battery of three guns and a large body of musketeers. . . . Immediately after we got possession of the priest's house, the enemy opened a furious cannonade from all their batteries, accompanied by an incessant volley of small-arms against every house in our possession and every part of our lines, which continued unceasingly until half-past six o'clock, a. m., of the 9th, when they sent a flag of truce, with an intimation that they desired to capitulate."

The negotiations were conducted until early the following morning, when the terms were signed. Cos was given a guard of soldiers and ordered to take his convict troops beyond the Rio Grande, while the other Mexican soldiers were allowed to keep their arms and remain in Texas or return home, as they should choose.

In the storming of San Antonio fell two Texans, while twenty-six were wounded. The Mexican loss was much larger. By the middle of December Texas was again free from the Mexican military, the citizen volunteers had dispersed to their homes, and only small garrisons remained at the important outposts.

## CHAPTER XVIII

### THE GENERAL CONSULTATION AND PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT.

The general consultation of Texas was delayed because of the hostilities on the western frontier. The battle at Gonzales had occurred before the election of delegates, and before the date fixed for their assembling Goliad had been captured and the citizen army, including many of the delegates, was on the march to San Antonio. October 16th thirty-two delegates met in San Felipe, but on the next day, a quorum being incomplete, adjournment was taken to November 1. In the meantime, a "general council," a sort of improvised, unofficial body, made up of representatives from the various committees of safety, managed affairs, and its acts were afterward sanctioned by the general consultation. Besides assisting in procuring and forwarding supplies to the army, the council assumed the responsibility of suspending the land offices, of authorizing a loan of \$100,000 in New Orleans, and commissioned privateers to cruise for Mexican armed vessels.

The consultation did not get assembled for business until November 3. Branch T. Archer was chosen president. On the 6th a test was made of the sentiment regarding independence. On the question of a provisional government on the principles of the constitution of 1824, the vote was 33 to 14, but a succeeding motion to prepare a declaration of complete independence was lost, 15 to 33. By this time a majority of the leaders were in favor of independence. The Mexican residents were almost unanimously opposed to separation from Mexico, and a considerable portion of the American inhabitants were indifferent on the question of political allegiance. But it was not so much for the purpose of conciliating these elements that the consultation voted against independence. Texas alone was unable to defy Santa Anna and protect her borders. The colonists were poor, they were not organized on a war footing, they lacked the munitions and resources for continued war, and war is expensive. Two sources of aid were possible in this dilemma.



One was the enlistment of the anti-centralists of Mexico in a general war for the constitution. This failed, and the failure nearly involved Texas in destruction. The other resource was the sympathy and material assistance of the people of the United States. To recommend the cause of Texas in the United States it was deemed best to adopt a policy of defensive resistance to threatened despotism. For a handful of Texans to have revolted and sought to set up an independent state of their own would have appeared a desperate undertaking and not entirely justified by circumstances. Americans are quick to lend aid in the resistance to tyranny and oppression, and the Texan leaders recognized the importance of emphasizing this feature of their struggle.

Hence, the "declaration of the people of Texas in general convention assembled," adopted November 7th, declared that Santa Anna had by force of arms overthrown the federal institutions of Mexico, and in consequence the people of Texas had taken up arms in defense of their rights and liberties and in defense of the republican principles of the constitution of 1824. Though Texas was no longer bound by the compact of union, yet her people offered their support to other Mexican states against military despotism; they refused to acknowledge the government by the present authorities, and proposed to carry on war as long as the troops were in the limits of Texas; and, while establishing an independent government during the reign of despotism, they were willing to continue faithful to the Mexican government as long as that nation was governed by the constitution.

November 12th the consultation chose the officers of the provisional government which was to act during the adjournment of the consultation or until another convention was assembled and another government established. Two candidates were proposed for the office of governor, Henry Smith receiving thirty-one votes and Stephen F. Austin, twenty-two. J. W. Robinson was unanimously elected lieutenant governor. The legislative branch was to consist of a "general council," each Texas municipality having one representative. The membership of this body was constantly changing during its existence. The plan of provisional government provided for the creation of a regular army, and Sam Houston was appointed major general and the commander-in-chief of all the forces. Three commissioners were also appointed to negotiate in the United States for means to carry on the war, B. T. Archer, W. H. Wharton and Stephen F. Austin being chosen for this important duty. The plan of government was adopted and signed on November 13th, and the

following day the consultation adjourned until March 1st. It was provided that the governor and council in the meantime might order another election of delegates to supersede the old body.

Before adjourning, the consultation, having declared Texas the champion of republican government, for all the states of Mexico, gave approval to the schemes of the anti-centralists and especially of certain exiled citizens of Coahuila, who desired, after the invaders had been expelled from Texas, to lead the volunteer army across the Rio Grande and co-operate with the Mexican republicans. This contemplated extension of the war was also for the not disinterested purpose of restoring some large estates that had been confiscated by the Santa Anna party.

Even before the storming of Bexar, the volunteer army was almost broken up by the leaders in this enterprise. After the success of the Bexar campaign, a large force of soldiers was left without other occupation than guarding the frontier posts. In December it was reported that about 750 men were in the army, the larger portion being at San Antonio. Most of the citizen volunteers and actual Texas residents had returned to their homes, and the regular force left in the field consisted chiefly of those who had come to Texas from the United States, several states besides Louisiana then being represented by companies in the Texan service. These were restless and adventuresome spirits, willing to follow leaders on any enterprise and disposed to chafe at the monotony of post duty.

With the army thus disposed, the provisional government added its sanction to the plan of taking the aggressive against Mexico. An excuse for this was found in the declaration of the consultation that Texas was making war in behalf of the constitution and offered support and assistance to other members of the federation. In this war Texas was involved in affairs outside of her own border. Instead of strengthening the outposts and placing the frontier in a state of defense, the troops were drawn off for the hazardous enterprise across the Rio Grande.

The general council passed a resolution, over Governor Smith's veto, authorizing Colonel Fannin to collect an auxiliary force and lead an expedition for the capture of Matamoras. It was argued that the possession of this city would give Texas a key position in the war against Mexico, and that its reduction would be followed by a general revolt among the northern Mexican states against Santa Anna. The futility of this plan was afterwards clearly shown. Earlier in the campaign the attack might have succeeded, and was indeed advised by Austin and

others, but the fall of Bexar and the humiliation of Cos' army caused the Mexican people, both centralists and republicans, to be united temporarily in their hostility to Texas, and before the council passed its resolution Matamoras had been fortified and strongly garrisoned by Mexican troops.

This action of the general council gave an independent authority to Colonel Fannin, in disregard of the law making General Houston commander-in-chief of the entire Texas army. As a result, while volunteers were gathering under Fannin for the foreign expedition, General Houston was left powerless to concentrate the army effectively against the advancing forces of Santa Anna. Despite his protests the general council ordered men withdrawn from the posts to join the Matamoras expedition, and by vesting command in other leaders practically superseded Houston as head of the army.

This diversion of the army to Matamoras was the principal cause of the quarrel between Governor Smith and the council. Until after the fall of Bexar, the provisional government was conducted with a fair degree of harmony, and gave such aid as was in its power to the volunteer force in the field. Beyond this, it is impossible to credit this governing body with a record of wisdom or efficiency. Any account short of a detailed history would fail to characterize properly this remarkable assemblage. Except for its active contribution to the lamentable events of 1836, already alluded to, little need be said of the provisional government. The resolution for the prosecution of the Matamoras expedition was adopted by the council January 7th. Two days later the governor replied with a hot and intemperate message denouncing this plan and criticising the character and methods pursued by the council. January 11th, the council answered with equal vehemence and declared the governor deposed and the lieutenant governor his legal successor. After the 18th of January the council was without a quorum for the transaction of business, and thus continued until the provisional government was succeeded by the convention on March 1st.

Thus, with the governor and the council at cross purposes, with a powerless commander in chief, citizens in a state of lethargy, and with the military diverted to bootless filibuster, Texas lay dull and stupefied, requiring the fearful sting of the Alamo massacre to rouse her into a writhing agony of action.

## CHAPTER XIX

### ALAMO AND GOLIAD

When the ordinary American speaks of *the* revolution, he usually means the war in which the freedom of the American colonies from Great Britain was won. But not so with the old-time Texan, who, indeed, takes due pride in the war waged by his colonial forefathers, but *his* revolution was the memorable struggle in which the yoke of Mexican domination was removed and Texas became a free and sovereign nation.

The Texas revolution proper opens with two tragedies. In a broad sense, the Texas revolution may be said to include all the events which have been described in the two or three chapters preceding, and there is a sequence in these events by which one leads to another up to the declaration of independence and the final campaign. But, from another point of view, there was, during the formation of the storm cloud and before it broke, a change of spirit in Texas. Hitherto the fight had been made, nominally at least, for the constitution of 1824. But with the opening of the year 1836, and some weeks before the actual declaration of independence, it became evident that all temporizing with Mexico was useless and that Texas must either be defended and made independent or must be abandoned entirely to Santa Anna.

In Mexico, too, a different spirit animated the government. The defeat of Cos at Bexar, the uncompromising attitude of Texans towards Mexican political methods and institutions, the readiness with which the people of the United States supported the rebellion of their fellow countrymen, all conspired to change the Texas colonists into most dangerous enemies of the Mexican government. It was no longer a question of controlling the Texans—they had to be practically exterminated and the border permanently closed against all American immigration and influence. Such was the substance of Santa Anna's determination when he set out on his campaign early in 1836, and looking at the situation from his standpoint it seems that he had adopted the only practical course to

prevent the ultimate alienation of Texas from Mexico. The barbaric cruelties to which he resorted in his campaign of conquest were repugnant to all methods of civilized warfare in the nineteenth century, but the conquest of Texas was clearly a necessary part of his program to establish and preserve a centralized empire.

In command of the garrison at San Antonio at the beginning of 1836 was Colonel Neill. His force had been reduced, and many necessary supplies taken, by Doctor Grant, the citizen of Coahuila who had been so prominent in arousing interest in the campaign across the Rio Grande. There were hardly enough soldiers to guard the town. It was known that Cos and his defeated troops had joined another force under General Sesma, south of the Rio Grande, and that a general advance into Texas would occur early in the year. Appeals went to Houston for reinforcements, but that general's hands were tied by the actions of the provisional government. It is notable that among the Texans themselves was little eagerness to enlist. This was due to several causes, their false sense of security and contempt of the enemy, and also probably their distrust of the movements against Matamoras. About the middle of January, Houston sent instructions to Neill to destroy the fortifications and retire with the artillery. But there were no means of transporting the cannon, so the commander chose to remain, though with hardly eighty men in the garrison. Governor Smith later sent Colonel Travis with an additional force, and on the departure of Neill, Travis assumed command, having not more than one hundred and fifty men under him.

February 23d Santa Anna arrived at the head of his army and the same day entered the town. Travis withdrew his men across the river and took his final stand in the old Alamo mission, on the walls of which he hoisted the tri-colored Mexican flag, "with two stars designated to represent Coahuila and Texas." Thus Travis and his men fought for the constitution of 1824, though the declaration of independence had been signed four days before the flag fell from the walls.

The place known as the Alamo contained the usual buildings of a mission. The building familiarly called the Alamo is the old mission church, and was only one feature of the group of buildings and enclosures which composed the Alamo mission. To the north of the church was the walled convent yard, on the west side of which was situated the convent itself, a long and narrow, two-storied building, divided by partitions into rooms which were used for barracks. To the west of the

convent, and also extending some distance north and south, was the square or plaza of the mission, rectangular in shape and enclosed with walls of masonry several feet thick. From the southeast corner of this square ran a diagonal stockade to connect with the church.

This was the scene of the Alamo siege. It was invested by the army of Santa Anna on February 23, and for a week was bombarded without effect, the Texans using their limited supply of ammunition only when the enemy came in range. On March 1 thirty-two men under Captain J. W. Smith made their way through the enemy's lines into the fort. Thus, there were, according to the best estimates, one hundred and eighty-three men to hold this fortress, against five thousand Mexicans. Among the heroes destined to shed their life-blood in this place were the well-known names of Travis, who had been throughout one of the most eager and consistent advocates of Texas independence; Col. James Bowie, a veteran of many frontier battles; Davy Crockett, pioneer statesman, hunter and soldier; and J. B. Bonham, of South Carolina, besides many others of not less dauntless courage.

At the beginning of the siege, Travis sent a letter to his fellow citizens which shows the spirit that animated the patriots. The letter, written February 24, was addressed to "the people of Texas and all Americans in the world," and was as follows:

Fellow Citizens and Compatriots—I am besieged by a thousand or more of the Mexicans under Santa Anna. I have sustained a continual bombardment and cannonade for twenty-four hours and have not lost a man. The enemy has demanded a surrender at discretion, otherwise, the garrison are to be put to the sword if the fort is taken. I have answered the demand with a cannon shot, and our flag still waves proudly from the walls. *I shall never surrender or retreat.* Then, I call on you in the name of Liberty, of patriotism and everything dear to the American character, to come to our aid with all dispatch. The enemy is receiving reinforcements daily and will no doubt increase to three or four thousand in four or five days. If this call is neglected, I am determined to sustain myself as long as possible and die like a soldier who never forgets what is due to his own honor and that of his country. *Victory or Death.*

For a week the siege went on, each day the position of the garrison becoming more critical. Three days before the end Travis sent to the president of the convention, then meeting in Washington, the last official report of the siege. Since the 25th, he said, the enemy had continued the bombardment from their battery on the opposite side of the river in

the town. They had also encircled the Alamo with entrenched encampments, at the La Villeta on the south, at the powder-house on the southeast, at the ditch on the northeast, and at the old mill on the north. Yet up to that time not a man of the garrison had been killed. "The power of Santa Anna is to be met here, or in the colonies; we had better meet them here, than to suffer a war of desolation to rage in the settlements. A blood-red banner waves from the church in Bexar, and in the camp above us, in token that the war is one of vengeance against rebels. . . . Their threats have had no influence on me, or my men, but to make all fight with desperation, and that high-souled courage which characterizes the patriot, who is willing to die in defense of his country's liberty and his own honor."

After the ineffectual bombardment Santa Anna called a council of war and determined to carry the walls by general assault. Sunday, March 6th, was the fateful day of the fall of the Alamo. Twenty-five hundred Mexicans were arranged in four columns on all sides of the fort, and at daybreak hurled their strength against the walls so weakly manned as to numbers. But the calm courage of the Texans, their unerring marksmanship, and the hail of lead from their cannon, twice brought the assailants' lines to halt and repulse. Then came the final charge. The columns were deployed to the north wall of the square and to the stockade on the south, and, driven on by their officers, the Mexicans crowded up under the walls below the cannon, rushed through the breaches or climbed over by ladders, and brought the conflict into a melee of hand-to-hand struggle. Travis was shot down while working a cannon, Crockett fell near the stockade, and Bowie, too ill to rise from his bed, was found and bayoneted, but not till he had dispatched several of the enemy with his pistols. From the plaza and stockade the heroes retired to the convent, where in final desperation they held each room until overpowered by the superior forces, and the fight to death went on in close quarters, where man touched man, clubbed with his musket, and slashed right and left with his knife, dying with the ferocity of the cornered wild beast. The church was the last point taken, and within an hour after the first assault the Alamo tragedy was over and its defenders had breathed their last. The few who did not fall fighting were butchered in cold blood by the ruthless order of Santa Anna, and of all who had been in the beleaguered fort but six lives (three women and three children) were spared, including the wife of Lieutenant Dick-

inson and her infant daughter. She was supplied with a horse and allowed to depart, bearing a proclamation from Santa Anna and the tale of the Alamo massacre to the colonists. Upon the heaped-up bodies of the Texans was piled brush and wood, and on this funeral pyre was soon consumed all that was mortal of the Texas patriots. But their spirit and the memory of their sacrifice were destined to survive all time and awake a vengeance from which was born the Texas republic.

In the meantime, across the country in the vicinity of Goliad, were being enacted other scenes of blood and treachery, so that henceforth the name of Goliad was spoken with only less inspiration to patriotism and retaliation than the Alamo. General Houston had succeeded in persuading most of the citizen volunteers not to participate in the Matamoros expedition. After the volunteers left, the force contained mainly the soldiers from the United States and the revolutionary Mexicans, and when news came that Matamoros was being strongly reinforced by Santa Anna the principal object of the undertaking was given up entirely. Two of the leaders, however, continued with a small force on toward the Rio Grande, but at San Patricio they separated, and shortly afterward each detachment fell prey to Mexican vengeance and hardly a man escaped the slaughter which characterized the Mexican policy throughout this war.

Colonel Fannin, after the failure of the expedition, marched to Goliad and took up his position there, where he built his Fort Defiance. He had altogether something over four hundred men, and his force was now recognized as a part of the general Texas army under General Houston. The latter deemed it wise for Fannin to abandon Goliad and sent orders for him to retire to Victoria. But Fannin had sent a detachment under Captain King to protect the Refugio mission, and later reinforced him with additional troops under Lieutenant-Colonel Ward. General Urrea, with the eastern division of the invading army, had arrived in the vicinity of the Irish settlements on the Nueces. Colonel Ward made his first stand in the old Refugio mission, on March 14th, but being short of ammunition and unable to defend the position, he retreated to Victoria, where on the 21st he surrendered to the enemy as prisoners of war. Captain King, having left Refugio with a small party to reconnoitre, found his return cut off and then attempted to join Fannin at Goliad, but was surrounded and forced to surrender. A few



hours later he and his followers were shot and their bodies left by the roadside.

Fannin had delayed his retreat from Goliad that King and Ward might rejoin him or that he might learn something of their fate. His delay was fatal, and before he began the movement from Goliad the enemy had come up. He proceeded so leisurely to the north that he was overtaken and completely surrounded in the afternoon of the same day, when near the Coleta river. He had to draw his men up in a depression on the prairie, forming them into a hollow square. The enemy made three assaults during the day, and each time were repulsed by the terrific artillery and rifle fire of the Texans, who were plentifully supplied with guns and ammunition. Notwithstanding the heavy slaughter of the Mexicans, they were in such force that the Texans had no show of escape, and besides were without water to relieve the wounded or swathe out their cannon. It seemed best, therefore, on the following morning, to treat for surrender, and a capitulation was arranged on the understanding that the Texans were to be treated as prisoners of war.

The doomed men were brought back to Goliad, and a few days later Ward's men were also added to the band. On the evening of the 26th it is said the prisoners were in good spirits, certain of their early release. Several were playing on their flutes the strains of "Home, Sweet Home." The following day was Palm Sunday. Early in the morning the captives were formed into three columns, and with a line of guards on each side were marched from the town in different directions. They had gone but a short distance when the guards suddenly stepped into single line, and with the muzzles of their guns almost touching the Texans, fired point-blank one withering volley after another until the dreadful execution was complete. Over three hundred were thus massacred, twenty-seven managing to escape in the confusion.

The responsibility for this deed has been fixed upon Santa Anna, and his officers claimed to have been shocked by its ruthlessness. The one excuse that could be offered was that the prisoners were mostly inhabitants of the United States and by strict construction filibusters, who by a decree issued in 1835 were to be treated as pirates and shown no mercy. However, the affair on the whole was in keeping with the barbaric character of Mexican warfare. In the light of such atrocities, both the previous and subsequent forbearance and freedom from the spirit of mean revenge in the Texans is one of the remarkable and praiseworthy qualities of their character as a people.

But the men of the Alamo and Goliad were not to have died in vain. The indignation kindled by their death more than any other cause gave principle and unity to the Texas revolution. Against such an implacable despot as these acts proved Santa Anna to be, unconquerable resistance was henceforth the only hope, and war under such circumstances became the highest and noblest duty of men born to liberty and political equality.

## CHAPTER XX

### THE CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION AND DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE

In Washington on the Brazos, in a half-finished building hastily constructed for a convention hall, was assembled on March 1, 1836, the convention of delegates from the various municipalities, superseding the provisional government which had been the source of so much discord and detriment to the country. The delegates had been apportioned as far as possible on a basis of population, and thus this convention was more nearly representative than the former consultation. Though there had been spirited rivalry in some of the municipalities in the election of delegates, in which the war and peace factions had contended, the progress of events since the election on February 1st had brought about an almost unanimous agreement among the delegates when they assembled that Texas must declare for absolute independence of Mexico. Early in December of the previous year a resolution for independence had been adopted by many of the Brazoria citizens. A number of Goliad citizens had adopted on December 20th what is known as the "Goliad declaration of independence," though it was considered premature at the time. In January, Austin had written from New Orleans that immediate declaration of independence was necessary.

Accordingly, immediately after the organization of the convention, a committee of five was appointed to draft a declaration of principles. On the following day, George C. Childress, as chairman, reported "The unanimous declaration of Independence made by the delegates of the people of Texas, in general convention at the town of Washington, on the 2d of March, 1836," which was adopted and signed by fifty-eight delegates. The declaration recited the duplicity and broken pledges of the Mexican government; its failure to maintain constitutional liberty and a republican form of government; the despotic changes made by Santa Anna, the establishment of military rule, the dissolution of the

state government, the delays of the law, the denial of religious freedom, and the general ineptitude and weakness of the Mexican system.

"These, and other grievances, were patiently borne by the people of Texas, until they reached that point at which forbearance ceases to be a virtue. We then took up arms in defense of the national constitution. We appealed to our Mexican brethren for assistance: our appeal has been made in vain; though months have elapsed, no sympathetic voice has yet been heard from the interior. We are, therefore, forced to the melancholy conclusion, that the Mexican people have acquiesced in the destruction of their liberty, and the substitution thereof of a military government; that they are unfit to be free, and incapable of self-government.

"The necessity of self-preservation, therefore, now decrees our eternal political separation.

"We, therefore, the delegates, with plenary powers, of the people of Texas, in solemn convention assembled, appealing to a candid world for the necessities of our condition, do hereby resolve and declare, that our political connection with the Mexican nation has forever ended, and that the people of Texas do now constitute a free, sovereign and independent republic, and are fully invested with all the rights and attributes which properly belong to independent nations; and, conscious of the rectitude of our intentions, we fearlessly and confidently commit the issue to the supreme Arbiter of the destinies of nations."

This done, the next action was to provide for the immediate necessities of the infant nation. The most important of these was to repel Santa Anna's invasion, and on the 4th General Houston was appointed commander in chief of the armies, both volunteer and regular, with entire authority over their operations. Male citizens between seventeen and fifty were made subject to military duty, and generous land grants were offered for service in the army. On the 15th General Houston's report of the fall of the Alamo was read in the convention, and the announcement urged the convention to a quick completion of its work.

The constitutional committee had reported on March 9th. On the 16th an "executive ordinance" was passed, establishing a "government, *ad interim*, for the protection of Texas," which was to have all the powers granted under the constitution except legislative and judicial, and was to administer the affairs of the nation until the provisions of the constitution could be put into execution. The personnel of this government was to consist of a president, vice president, secretaries for the departments of state, war, navy and treasury, and an attorney general. These officers were appointed before the adjournment of the convention, David G. Burnet being chosen first "President of the Republic of Texas," and

Lorenzo de Zavala vice president. Also, the government was authorized to borrow a million dollars and pledge the faith and credit of the republic for its payment.

On the 17th the constitution was formally adopted and signed, and the convention then adjourned *sine die*. This constitution of the Republic of Texas was modeled after the constitution of the United States, with its provisions, of course, conforming to the requirements of a single sovereign state. By statute the common law was to be made applicable to cases not covered by constitutional or legislative enactment. There were the three usual departments of government. A system of education was to be established as soon as feasible. All connection between the civil government and religion was guarded against by making priests and ministers of the gospel ineligible to congress or the presidency. The distribution of lands, which had been subject of extensive frauds, was regulated, and the extensive land grants made by the Coahuila-Texas legislature in 1834 and 1835 were annulled. Each head of a family was to have a league and a *labor*, and a single man over seventeen years of age a third of a league. As to slaves, congress had no power to manumit them, nor could a slaveowner free them without consent of congress; free negroes could not reside in the state without congressional consent. The foreign slave importation was declared piracy, and slaves could be introduced only from the United States.

## CHAPTER XXI

### THE WINNING OF INDEPENDENCE—SAN JACINTO

The actual winning of Texas independence was consummated during one short campaign lasting hardly six weeks. Within three months after the fall of the Alamo and the massacre at Goliad the Mexican forces were retreating to the Rio Grande, and domination from the south was never again seriously threatened.

Throughout the session of the convention there were alarms of invasion, the hostile army was known to be on Texas soil, the letters of Travis from the Alamo told the condition of the siege at that place, although the news of the fall did not reach the town of Washington until the 15th. Immediately on his reappointment as commander in chief, Houston set to the work of preparation for war, sending orders to Fannin to join him that he might march to the relief of Travis. But the impossibility of getting an adequate army together prevented any aggressive movements, and Houston was still at the headquarters in Gonzales when the calamity of the Alamo was reported. He had arrived at Gonzales on March 11th and taken command of "three hundred and seventy-four effective men, without two days' provisions, many without arms, and others without any ammunition"—according to his own report.

Rumors of the fall of the Alamo having reached Gonzales, on the 13th Houston sent out Deaf Smith, Henry Karnes and R. E. Handy to discover the exact fate of Travis and his command. About twenty miles from Gonzales they met Mrs. Dickinson, who, besides confirming the worst fears concerning the Alamo, reported that a division of the Mexican forces under General Sesma was already marching eastward. The return of the scouts, with Mrs. Dickinson, created consternation at Gonzales. The families of the thirty-two patriots, who a short time before had joined the Alamo garrison, were frantic with grief over their loss, while the approach of Sesma's forces threatened all the survivors with a similar fate. Aware that his force was too small to resist, Houston

at once prepared to retreat. The baggage was thrown away, the only cannon were cast into the river, and by midnight inhabitants and soldiers were hastening to the Colorado on the first stage of the "runaway scrape," the burning buildings of the town lighting up the sky in their wake.

Leaving Gonzales on the 13th of March, the army moved eastward to the Colorado, where it arrived, in the vicinity of the present town of Columbus, on the 17th. By this time the force had increased to six hundred men. Two days were spent at Burnham's on the west side of the river, when a crossing was effected and the Texans moved around the bend to Beason's ford. Hardly had this position been taken when a division of the Mexican army under General Sesma arrived on the opposite side of the river.

After the fall of the Alamo and the successful operations of his forces in the vicinity of Goliad, Santa Anna underestimated the remaining strength of the rebellion. The retreat of the Texan army and the hasty evacuation of the country by the settlers certainly confirmed his opinion. Thus deceived, he gave his attention to occupying the country at the key positions, for this purpose dividing his army into several divisions. General Gaona was ordered to march up the San Antonio road to Nacogdoches, Generals Sesma and Woll toward San Felipe and thence to Harrisburg, while General Urrea was to advance along the coast. Santa Anna himself was preparing to return to Mexico, when he was informed of the concentration of Houston's forces at the Colorado. He then ordered Gaona, after crossing the Colorado at Bastrop, to direct his course toward San Felipe, and Urrea to proceed to Matagorda and thence to Brazoria. Santa Anna and Filisola, with their staffs, left San Antonio on March 31st, and on the 5th joined Sesma's division at the Colorado.

Houston and his army remained on the east side of the Colorado a week. Volunteers arrived until his force was between twelve and fourteen hundred. The number of Mexicans opposed to him were no greater. This seemed a most opportune time to deal the invaders a crushing blow, and why Houston did not take advantage of the occasion does not seem ever to have been explained satisfactorily, unless he had mapped out a general plan to withdraw into eastern Texas and engage the enemy when at a distance from supplies and when overconfident with previous success. From this point on to the final overthrow at San Jacinto every detail of the campaign became a theme of subsequent controversy. While the debate has clouded the glory of individual actors, the

actual performances cannot be disputed, and later generations are probably disposed to accept the facts and let the credit go.

There was a burst of indignation on the part of the Texans when, on the 26th, continued retreat to the Brazos was ordered. The movement left the settlements unprotected, and several hundred of the volunteers left the army either from dissatisfaction with the policy of the commander or for the purpose of aiding their families in what had now become a general exodus to the eastern frontier. On March 28th the army reached San Felipe, and the next day proceeded up the west bank of the Brazos, on the 31st camping in the timber opposite Groce's landing, a few miles south of Washington. Here was the steamboat Yellowstone, the possession of which gave the army means of crossing the river. Mosely Baker, with his company, remained at San Felipe to dispute the enemy's passage there, while Wiley Martin guarded the crossing at Old Fort (now Richmond). On the 29th the reported approach of the enemy caused a rapid withdrawal from San Felipe, and the town was burned by the retreating Texans.

Meanwhile the retreat of the army and the removal of the seat of government from Washington to Harrisburg threw the country into panic. After the atrocities committed by the Mexicans in the west, the settlers could hope for no mercy from the invaders. Every family, therefore, taking only such property as the limited means of transportation could convey, hurried across the country, and crowded the passages over the swollen streams which every few miles opposed their progress. Before the victorious advance of the invaders, with Houston apparently indisposed to take any aggressive action, it is not surprising that many Texans were among the fugitives, who, under different circumstances, would have been in the army.

Houston's army lay encamped in the Brazos bottoms at Groce's nearly two weeks. In the meantime, on April 5th, Santa Anna had taken command of Sesma's troops on the Colorado, and then advanced to San Felipe on the 7th. Though the town was in ruins, the crossing was still guarded by Baker's company. Being impatient to end the campaign, Santa Anna, with part of his army, marched down to Fort Bend. Keeping Martin's company engaged in defending the upper crossing, he succeeded in gaining the lower ferry and putting his troops on the east side of the river. Here he was joined by Sesma on the 13th, and on the following day set out for Harrisburg, thirty-five miles away, where he



arrived on the 15th. Under his immediate command Santa Anna had only about 700 men. Sesma was left at Fort Bend with about 1,000; Filisola was between San Felipe and Fort Bend with 1,800; Urrea was at Matagorda, with 1,200; and Gaona was between Bastrop and San Felipe with 725 troops. This distribution of the troops in such a manner that concentration was impossible short of several days' time was the most important fact in the campaign and proved the salvation of Texas.

On April 12th the Texas army began crossing the Brazos. General Rusk, secretary of war, had arrived from Harrisburg to urge upon Houston the necessity of decisive action. The latter still kept his plans to himself. Perhaps no campaign policy has been subjected to more thorough scrutiny than his, and yet it is involved in uncertainty. There is some reason to believe that he planned to retreat as far as Nacogdoches, where he would make a final stand, and in case of defeat be able to withdraw in safety beyond the Sabine under the protection of the American forces. It is known that General Gaines, the American commander, was eager to assist the independence cause, and held his forces on the east bank of the Sabine in readiness to attack should there occur an open violation of neutrality. But no plausible pretext for intervention arose. Chafing under the delay and uncertainty, many of the Texans threatened to depose their commander in case he should continue the retreat to East Texas.

On the 14th the army left Groce's, going south. Three miles further, at Donohue's, was a fork in the roads, the left leading toward Nacogdoches and the right to Harrisburg. Not until the Nacogdoches road was passed were the soldiers fully convinced that the retreat was ended and the advance upon the enemy begun. After heavy marching over the rain-soaked ground the army arrived, on the 18th, at the bayou opposite Harrisburg. The town had been deserted by its inhabitants on the 14th, Santa Anna had taken possession on the 15th, and after tarrying awhile and setting fire to the houses, proceeded down the bayou to Lynchburg and thence to New Washington (Morgan's Point). Baffled in the pursuit of the government officials, who had fled to Galveston, he then turned back with the evident intention of crossing at Lynch's and carrying the campaign into East Texas.

The Texans were apprized of these movements on their arrival at Harrisburg, and then also received definite information that Santa Anna was with this division of the invading army. On the 19th Houston and

Rusk addressed the troops and gave them assurance that the decisive battle was to be fought and that the Alamo and Goliad were at last to be avenged. The baggage and a guard for the sick and disabled were left at Harrisburg, while an army of 783 men marched down below the mouth of Sims' bayou, where they crossed in boats to the right side of Buffalo bayou, and then followed the route taken by the Mexicans, across Vince's bridge, and with only a few hours' rest, between midnight and daybreak, arrived at Lynch's ferry early in the forenoon of the 20th.

The site of the San Jacinto battleground is the margin of an extensive prairie that lies in the angle formed by the Buffalo bayou at its junction with the San Jacinto river. It was in the semicircular bend of the bayou about half a mile from the junction that the Texas army encamped on the 20th. The banks of the bayou at this point are high, and well screened with timber, the fringe of trees following the bayou off to the southwest. On the left of this position the ground descends to marshy levels along the river, on the opposite side of which lies the village of Lynchburg, reached by Lynch's ferry. From the high ground near the bayou the prairie has an easy descent to a "draw" about two hundred yards to the south, followed by an equally gentle rise to the crest of the prairie about a quarter of a mile distant. At the border of this latter elevation, near the river, is a grove, but with this exception the space before the Texas camp was almost uninterrupted prairie to the south and southwest.

Santa Anna coming up the road along the San Jacinto bay and river toward Lynch's, found, on arriving about noon of the 20th, the position already occupied by the Texans. He accordingly halted his army on the high ground in front of the Texas camp, his right wing being partly protected by the woods near the river, and the rest of his forces being drawn out across the ridge, with his cannon in the center. The Mexicans had one cannon, while the Texans had received, just before leaving the Brazos, two six-pounders, called the "Twin Sisters," which had been presented to Texas by the people of Cincinnati.

Early in the afternoon Santa Anna advanced his cannon, under cover of the cavalry, to a little clump of trees somewhat to the right of the Texas position, and opened fire, which was returned by the Twin Sisters. In this artillery duel Colonel Neill was wounded, this being the first casualty among the Texans. Later in the day Colonel Sherman obtained permission to advance with mounted volunteers and dislodge the enemy

from this position. As soon as Sherman started the Mexicans withdrew their cannon, but when he continued on towards the enemy's left he was met by their cavalry. A lively skirmish ensued in which two Texans were wounded, and Sherman retired without having effected any important advantage.

During the remainder of the day the Texas army obtained refreshment and rest from their strenuous march of the preceding two days. The Mexicans were engaged in strengthening their line by constructing of packs and baggage a fortification about five feet high across the ridge, their artillery being placed at an opening in the center and their cavalry on the left wing. On the morning of the 21st Santa Anna was reinforced by the arrival of some four hundred men under General Cos, so that his total force on the day of the battle was about twelve hundred. "This gave the latter considerable advantage over Houston, and the Texans became apprehensive that in consequence their general would again try to avoid battle and continue the retreat across the San Jacinto. As time passed and no preparation was made to attack, their fears, they thought, were justified, and the old question of deposing the commander-in-chief was revived."\*

The situation was such that all hope of success for the Texans depended upon an immediate attack, while Santa Anna could very well afford to delay action for several days until his armies could be better concentrated. The Texans had no reserves that could be ordered up, and with the exception of a few scattered volunteer companies still en route to headquarters, the sole defenders of the Texas cause were the less than eight hundred men encamped on Buffalo bayou. The arrival of Cos in the morning was a warning that other Mexican troops were probably on the way, so that, barring the impossible alternative of retreat, the only resource was to check the approach of more reinforcements and to crush the enemy where they lay. It was in view of these circumstances that the destruction of Vince's bridge became an important piece of strategy. Though the removal of the bridge was not a permanent obstacle to communication, it did serve to delay any force that might attempt to cross the stream at that point, and had Santa Anna's army been able to retreat in good order or had reinforcements approached before the conclusion of the battle, this delay would have proved a decisive advantage to the Texans. As it was, the destruction

\* Eugene C. Barker in *Tex. Hist. Assn. Quarterly*, Vol. IV.

of the bridge by Deaf Smith and his two companions on the morning of the 21st had no bearing on the issue of the battle.\*

A council of war was held about noon, and the decision taken to make an attack on the morning following. The announcement was sullenly received. It was then determined to get the opinion of the soldiers themselves. Going around from mess to mess the captains put the question of fighting at once or on the morrow, and the eager and almost unanimous answer was for immediate attack. The individual soldiers were in command at San Jacinto, and the rank and file won the victory the laurels of which were subsequently contested among so many of the nominal leaders.

At half past three the officers were ordered to parade their commands. The troops displayed alacrity and spirit and were anxious for the contest.† The conscious disparity of number seemed only to increase their enthusiasm and confidence, and heighten their eagerness for the conflict.

The situation of the camp partly screened by woods made it possible to make arrangements for battle without exposing the designs to the enemy. The first regiment, commanded by Colonel Burleson, was assigned the center. The second regiment, under command of Colonel Sherman, formed the left wing. The artillery was placed on the right of the first regiment, and the cavalry, under Mirabeau B. Lamar, was the extreme right. The first movement was to dispatch the cavalry toward the enemy's left, followed by the entire line in rapid advance. The Texans charged out of the timber so quickly that they had reached the little valley and were pressing up the slope toward the Mexican breastworks before the enemy realized what was taking place. Santa Anna was asleep and most of his followers were resting in their quarters. From their camp the Mexicans could not see the Texans in the low ground, and were apprized of their approach by the firing from the breastworks and the loud battle-cry of "Remember the Alamo" which

\* The statements frequently found that Vince's bayou presented the only obstacles between the San Jacinto and the Brazos seem to overlook the existence of Sims' and Bray's bayou, both of which are southern branches of Buffalo Bayou and, at the present time, much more formidable streams than Vince's. Alphonso Steele, the last survivor of the battle, is authority for the statement that at that time the road between Harrisburg and Lynch's ferry followed Buffalo bayou more closely than the modern highway, and that Vince's, where it was bridged, was a boggy, treacherous place, with high banks, so that the removal of the bridge would have made a wide detour necessary to get over.

† Following Houston's report of the battle.

came up from below. The action was commenced by Sherman's onslaught upon the enemy in the woods near the river, quickly followed by the assault of the whole front on the line of fortification. According to Houston's report, the conflict lasted about eighteen minutes from the time of close action until the Texans were in possession of the enemy's encampment. "The conflict in the breastworks lasted but a few minutes; many of the troops encountered hand to hand, and, not having the advantage of bayonets on our side, our riflemen used their pieces as war-clubs, breaking many of them off at the breech. The rout commenced at half past four, and the pursuit by the main army continued until twilight. A guard was then left in charge of the enemy's encampment, and our army returned with the killed and wounded. In the battle our loss was two killed and twenty-three wounded, six of whom mortally." No accurate report of the Mexican losses could be made, though more than half of their army were either killed or wounded. Many of the fugitives were overtaken in the marshes at the rear of the battlefield and were shot down or slaughtered with the bowie-knife.

As a mere military achievement, San Jacinto has a place among battles that are won by impetuosity of attack and individual gallantry over superior numbers that are perhaps better disciplined but lacking in *morale* and individual effectiveness. In its results this battle was decisive. It marked the triumph of American expansion over the Southwest, and the subsequent war which extended the dominion from the Rocky mountains to the Pacific was, in many respects, a consequence of San Jacinto. From this point, the results of the brief engagement in which the whole number of contestants were little more than two full regiments have continued as active forces through every epoch of American history and affecting every department of national life.

On the following day, near Vince's bridge, while trying to make his escape to the Brazos, Santa Anna was captured, in disguise as a common soldier, and was taken to the Texas camp, where he was soon identified as the dictator and author of all the calamities of Texas. It was with difficulty that the Texans were restrained from hanging him at once, and during his subsequent captivity in Texas he was saved from vengeance only by the vigilance of the authorities. An armistice was soon arranged providing for a cessation of hostilities until a permanent peace could be negotiated, and in the meantime the Mexican troops on the Brazos and vicinity were to be withdrawn.

Soon after the battle Santa Anna was taken to the temporary capital

at Galveston island, whence the government, with the illustrious prisoner, moved to Velasco. Here, on May 14th, Santa Anna signed two treaties, one of them being a secret agreement, according to which he was to send the Mexican forces out of Texas and to lend his aid in securing the recognition of the independence of Texas. The public treaty was forwarded to General Filisola, chief in command of the remaining Mexican troops in Texas, and was ratified by him toward the end of May.

The forces under Filisola were at the Brazos when the news of the overthrow of Santa Anna came, and he at once began concentrating the different divisions and retreated to the Colorado. The Mexicans were almost without provisions and had suffered severely from the long campaign across the abandoned country. The way to the Colorado was one scene of hardships owing to the heavy floods and scarcity of food, and it was an emaciated and worn-out army that reached Victoria about the middle of May. Here the troops that had been stationed at San Antonio joined in the retreat. In the meantime the Mexican government had learned of the disastrous ending of the invasion. Instructions were at once forwarded to Filisola to hold the territory already gained, and that, as the treaty with Santa Anna had been signed while he was a prisoner, it was annulled, and that the independence of the revolting state should not be recognized. But these orders from the central government did not reach Filisola until his troops had crossed the Nueces on the route to Matamoros, and at a consultation of the officers it was decided that, owing to the destitute condition of the army and the treaty already approved by Filisola, the retreat should continue. By the middle of June, therefore, the Mexican forces, once so brilliantly arrayed and well equipped but now so gaunt and disorganized, had crossed the Rio Grande, within less than four months after Travis had sent out final appeals for help from the Alamo.

Santa Anna was detained in Texas, at Velasco and Columbia, for several months, finally being sent to Washington in the United States, and thence returned to Mexico, where he had been previously defeated for the office of president. Mexico by no means resigned her Texas province ungrudgingly, and the treaty of Santa Anna was never ratified. Preparations were begun for another invasion, but owing to political troubles at home the troops at Matamoros never crossed the Rio Grande. The independence of Texas existed in fact from the victory at San Jacinto, and the subsequent expeditions across the borders of the two countries are hardly to be regarded as part of the war for Texas independence.

## CHAPTER XXII

### TEXAS AS A REPUBLIC

The Republic of Texas existed as a unit in the family of nations nearly ten years, or from the declaration of independence on March 2, 1836, until February 19, 1846, when President Jones surrendered the executive authority to the newly elected governor of the state.

In exercise of the powers conferred by the constitution, in September, 1836, occurred an election for the offices of president, vice president, and senators and representatives to congress. Stephen F. Austin and the late governor, Henry Smith, were the first presidential candidates to be put forward. They represented the political factions in Texas before the revolution. Two weeks before the election, meetings at Columbia and elsewhere proposed the candidacy of General Houston. Houston's exaltation in the minds of the people after his successful campaign is shown by the fact that he was chosen by a large majority over Stephen F. Austin, whose noble and consistent patriotism was for the time dimmed by the military glory of the former. Mirabeau B. Lamar was elected vice president. The appointment of Austin to the office of secretary of state and Smith as secretary of war was the result of Houston's determination to harmonize the political factions and secure unity of action for the welfare of the republic.

At the same time with the election of the new government, the people gave unanimous approval of the constitution, and also practically the total vote in favor of annexation of Texas to the United States. By provision of the constitution Houston was not to enter office until the following December, while congress assembled on the first of October. By mutual agreement, the president and vice president of the provisional government retired from office on October 22d, and on the same day Houston was inaugurated, this irregularity being sanctioned by congress.

Excepting the Indians the total population of Texas at this time was estimated at 38,500\*, including 5,000 negroes and about 3,500 Mexicans.

\* Morfit's report.

This population, slightly more than one-third of the present population of Houston, was dispersed in isolated cabins or small villages from the coast to the San Antonio road, from the Sabine to the Nueces. Their actual resources were little more than the soil and season's bounty of crops could supply. Even the bare necessities of life were difficult to obtain, and the arrival of vessels from New Orleans and the occasional capture, by the Texas navy, of a Mexican supply ship, kept army and citizens from starvation. Enthusiasm and hope were unbounded, and it was on the credit of the future that Texas began her independent existence.

Upon the leaders of such a population, with such poverty of means, devolved the task of establishing a national government. Mexico threatened war, and on the frontier the Indians made repeated incursions. So an army and navy were necessary to maintain national existence. Nothing is more costly than provision for war, and the republic had no money and few citizens to spare for this purpose. Had it not been for the many American volunteers coming into the country, it would have been very difficult to maintain any military organization. Aside from a few vessels, most of them fitted out at private expense and commissioned as privateers, the Texas navy during the revolution was of little importance, and for two years following there was practically no navy. After this a few ships were maintained which were finally consolidated with the United States navy.

One of the first acts of congress was to issue bonds, with the public lands as security. But the capital of America and Europe was unwilling to invest in them. Furthermore, the paper notes and scrip of different kinds issued by the government depreciated rapidly. For thirty thousand people to tax themselves for the support of a national government, especially in a new and undeveloped country, seems nothing less than impossible. Though in 1837 the Texas cotton crop was valued at two million dollars, that was the chief item of her productive resources. Meanwhile the public debt at the beginning of the first session of congress was estimated at a million and a quarter dollars. The sale of scrip receivable for public lands had proved unremunerative. Thus it began to appear that the expense of maintaining an independent government was more than the republic could bear, and bankruptcy became a more formidable enemy than Mexico or the Indians.

The first session of congress met at Columbia. The numerous provisions for national and local civil government were made, a postoffice department was created, the courts were organized. The boundary between



Mexico and Texas as claimed by this congress was declared to extend from the mouth of the Rio Grande to its source, thus including a large part of what is now New Mexico. A national seal and a standard were adopted. The former was much like the present state seal in general design, while the first flag was an azure ground upon the center of which was a golden star. This was later changed to a tricolor, with a blue vertical field next to the staff and upon it the Lone Star, and two horizontal stripes, the white above the red.

Only a few weeks after the first congress of the republic assembled, Texas lost two of her greatest citizens, Lorenzo de Zavala and Stephen F. Austin. The latter will always be revered as the founder of modern Texas and the most powerful of the steadying influences which preserved the country during its most trying crisis.

The first congress adjourned from Columbia to meet in the temporary capital at the new town of Houston. There were two sessions of the congress in 1837. The most important work undertaken was the settlement of the land question. The land offices had been suspended by the general consultation in November, 1835, and up to this time it had not been deemed prudent to open them. In less than half a century three successive national governments had controlled the public domain of Texas, so that the titles to lands in the older parts of Texas exhibit a remarkable complexity of origin. As soon as Texas was freed from the Coahuila-Texas state, the provisional government was very generous in its land bounties to the volunteers during the war for independence, as also in its inducements to colonists later. The loose system which had prevailed during the Mexican regime gave opportunities for extensive frauds. Soldiers' headrights were bought and sold by speculators. Old grants were revived, and forged or fictitious claims were not infrequently sold to investors and immigrants. Toward the end of 1837 a general land law was finally passed, which, though defective and not preventing all the frauds, provided the best system available at the time, which while dealing justly with past claims would also give generous opportunities to new claimants.

The Texans inaugurated their national housekeeping with greater liberality than conditions would warrant, and they were compelled to suffer the usual penalty of extravagance. Despite Houston's economy the public debt at the end of 1838 was nearly two million dollars, and the republic's credit was nearly exhausted. The various efforts to raise money had met with only partial success, and Texas paper was below par on all

foreign exchanges and the decline still continuing. The commerce of the country was not large, and, except cotton, there was little production beyond home consumption. At this time therefore the prosperity of Texas was more in prospect than in actuality, and despite the encouraging signs there were many problems for the inexperienced government to solve.

The constitution provided that the first president was to hold office two years, and thereafter the term was to be three years; and that the incumbent was not eligible to a successive term. Houston's first term expired in December, 1838, and the preceding September Mirabeau B. Lamar was almost unanimously chosen president, with David G. Burnet vice president.

Lamar's administration, which lasted from December, 1838, to the corresponding month in 1841, was in many respects a reversal of Houston's, and the republic suffered more from change in presidential policies than from any other one cause. In his first message to congress, Lamar indicated his aversion to annexation to the United States, his advocacy of a definite and progressive educational system, a retaliatory and exterminative warfare against the Indians in contrast with the previous conciliatory treatment, and a progressive building up and strengthening of the national bulwarks and powers.

Problems of finance offered the greatest difficulty, and that they were not well solved is shown by the fact that during this administration the public debt increased from two million to seven and a half million dollars, while the public credit became exhausted, and Texas securities were worth only a few cents on the dollar and were scarcely negotiable anywhere. The land tax and the various tariff laws were of necessity continued, although free trade was the goal to be early sought. Lamar proposed the founding of a national bank, but congress refused to sanction such a plan. The establishment and purchase of a navy drew heavily upon the credit of the government, as also an adequate system of frontier defense. The bond issues of this period, though backed by the strongest pledges of the republic and secured by the public domain and offered at high rates of interest, went begging in the United States because of the wariness of financiers who had lately passed through a panic; while a quarrel between a hotelkeeper and the French minister to Texas caused a suspension of the negotiations for a bond sale which had been nearly arranged between French bankers and the Texas commissioner. Similar negotiations in England also failed. The treasury notes of the republic were

unredeemed and had to be accepted on pure faith. During this period the excess of imports over exports was in the ratio of seven to one.

These facts and other unsuccessful measures of administration made Lamar so unpopular that he retired from the active duties of the presidency and during the last year of his term Vice President Burnet was acting president. But, admitting a lack of executive ability for the crisis then confronting Texas, and that Lamar was visionary and intemperate in many of his acts, it remains to be said that the exigencies from within and the troubles threatening from without were most trying and probably could not have been satisfactorily dealt with by any president.

No state in the Union has suffered more continuously and severely from the Indians than Texas. From the days of LaSalle until their last depredations, only a few years ago, they were a constant menace to all efforts at civilization and permanent growth. For more than fifty years after the American occupation the Apaches and Comanches harried the frontiers and sometimes carried their warfare to the heart of the settlements. During Houston's administration a spirit of conciliation had marked the dealings with the Indian tribes, and there can be no doubt that the failure of his successor and the people in general to observe the proper diplomacy toward the Indians resulted in vast loss of life and property.

It was during Lamar's administration that the famous organization known as the Texas Rangers had its origin. For hardihood, reckless daring, ability to undergo hardship, and individual shiftiness and skill, these men have never been surpassed. This splendid body of men has been a permanent feature of the military defense of Texas from the republic to the present time, and, while in some degree resembling the militia of other states, their almost constant service and their effectiveness under all conditions make them unique among the police organizations of states and nations. They could live in the saddle, and while, for the most part, pursuing the ordinary occupations of their neighbors, they were ready at a moment's notice to fly to the danger point to meet an Indian raid or to avenge the depredations of outlaws. During the early part of Lamar's term several large appropriations were voted to support some twelve hundred of these mounted volunteers for frontier service, each term of enlistment to be for six months.

These Rangers as well as private citizens were kept busy during these years. Immigrants came in rapidly after the cessation of hostilities between Texas and Mexico. Both speculators and settlers found the lands

occupied by the Indians, especially in northeast Texas, the most desirable for their purposes. The Indians of Texas, especially the Comanches, were never reconciled to this invasion of their hunting grounds. Hence, with the progress of settlement, there ensued a war for possession between the two races. It was inevitable that the whites should win, but at the expense of many scenes of bloody and relentless warfare.

As has been mentioned, the Mexican government, impotent itself to prosecute an active war against Texas, resorted to underhanded methods in fostering rebellion and discontent among the inhabitants. In 1838 there occurred what is known as the Nacogdoches rebellion, in which the Mexican population about Nacogdoches and a number of Indians disclaimed their allegiance to Texas, but before the army of the republic could reach them they had dispersed. This was probably part of the movement in which Mexico tried to arouse the natives against the Texans. Shortly afterward Manuel Flores, bearing dispatches from the Mexican government to the northeastern Indians, was pursued and attacked near Austin, was killed, and the papers he carried revealed the plot.

The Cherokees, living north of Nacogdoches, who had been concerned in the Fredonian war, were ready for rebellion. They lived on lands that were among the richest of Texas and consequently much coveted by settlers and speculators. They claimed possession of these lands through an unratified agreement with the Mexican government, and resented all encroachments from white settlers. Perhaps the danger from these Indians and the actual hostilities to which they had been provoked were magnified to suit the purpose of those who wanted their lands. The authorities determined to remove the Cherokees beyond the settlements, and when negotiations for removal had failed General Douglass moved against them with five hundred troops, in two engagements killed over a hundred of the tribe, and drove the rest from their homes.

The fiercest and most troublesome Indians of this period were the Comanches, to the north and west of San Antonio. Matters came to a crisis with them in 1840. Showing a disposition to make peace, twelve of their chiefs came to San Antonio and met in council the Texas commissioners. Some captives which it was known were still held were demanded, and when the chiefs refused to comply with this order soldiers were introduced into the council chamber and the chiefs were threatened with imprisonment until the prisoners were returned. Then ensued a desperate fight both in the court house and between the Indians and citizens outside. The twelve chiefs were killed and but few of their fol-

lowers escaped. A war of retaliation followed. Two attacks were made on Victoria, the town of Linnville on the coast was burned, and after killing a number of persons and gathering large number of stock the Comanches set out for their homes. The Texans quickly organized in pursuit and overtook the enemy a short distance from Gonzales. In the battle the Indians were routed and most of their spoils recovered. A little later Colonel Moore, with about one hundred Texans and Lipan Indians, followed the trail of the Comanches to their village, where he attacked and nearly exterminated the entire population.

During Lamar's term the Mexican federalists endeavored to secure the co-operation of the Texans in a revolution against the central government with the design of forming a separate federation among some of the northern states. This was but one of the phases of the revolutionary struggles then convulsing the entire Mexican republic. Texas was not officially concerned in these movements except so far as her citizens volunteered for service in the campaigns. A number of restless spirits, being without military occupation at home, sought adventure and other rewards across the borders. The "Republic of the Rio Grande," as the proposed federal government was named, was short-lived mainly because of the fickleness and treachery of the Mexican leaders. The Americans who served in the campaigns displayed their characteristic bravery and defiance of overwhelming numbers, and, when deserted by their federalist allies, they on several occasions defeated superior forces and fought their way to safety on their own side of the Rio Grande.

One other military expedition of this period is worthy of note. The Texas congress of 1836 claimed as the southwestern boundary the Rio Grande from the gulf to its source. Within this territory lies Santa Fe and a large part of New Mexico. It was proposed to open commercial relations with this rich city and extend the authority of Texas over that ancient seat of Spanish civilization. The enterprise failed to receive the sanction of congress, but some of the officials, including President Lamar, were interested in it, and the affair was conducted without any concealment. The expedition, consisting of about three hundred soldiers, set out from Austin in June, 1841. It was a thousand miles to Santa Fe, and the way was beset by dangers and privations. There was an insufficient supply of provisions, the desert had little water or grass, and watchful Indians lay in wait for all stragglers from the main company.

General Hugh McCleod was the leader, and others in the company were Colonel William G. Cooke, Major George T. Howard, Captain Cald-

well, Captain Sutton, Captain W. P. Lewis, Lieutenants Lubbock, Munson, Brown and Seavy, Dr. Brashear, the surgeon, Dr. Richard F. Brenham, José Antonio Navarro, George Wilkins Kendall, editor of the New Orleans *Picayune*, George P. Van Ness and others well known in Texas. The commissioners appointed to arrange trade relations were Cooke, Navarro and Brenham. After proceeding in the generally northwestern direction until reaching the Llano Estacado west of Palo Duro, the expedition divided, one party going north and the other to the northwest towards the town of San Miguel. On the way several members of the latter company died, and all were exposed to innumerable hardships and fights with the Indians.

When near San Miguel, on September 14, a detachment was sent forward with letters to the alcalde, expressing the pacific intentions of the expedition and asking permission to purchase provisions. Proclamations were also sent ahead, stating that the Texans had come to establish trade relations, and that if the inhabitants of New Mexico were not disposed to join, peacefully, the Texas government, the visitors would retire immediately.

After proceeding some distance the advance guard were suddenly surrounded by a hundred or more Mexicans, armed with lances, swords, bows and arrows and old-fashioned carbines, under the leadership of Dimisio Salazar, who addressed them as *amigos*. He then informed the party that it was contrary to law for foreigners to enter the province with arms, and requested that all weapons be given into his safekeeping. Hardly had this request been acceded to when the friendly attitude of the captors changed, and had it not been for the interference of one of the Mexicans, who maintained that the prisoners had a right to see the governor before their cases were acted upon, all undoubtedly would have been shot down. As it was, they were taken into San Miguel and placed in prison. The next day they were taken out to meet Governor Armijo, who also greeted them as friends, and informed them that he was an honorable man and not an assassin and, moreover, a great warrior.

While the advance guard were being held at San Miguel, the governor aroused the inhabitants by exaggerated reports as to the intentions of the invaders, and made preparations to capture the main body of the Texans. On September 17th, Colonel Cooke and his men surrendered at Anton Chico, having been betrayed to the enemy by William P. Lewis, a member of the expedition. Three days later they set out,

under guard, on their long march to the city of Mexico. On October 12th the other division of the Texans, more than one hundred and fifty in number, who had been captured in Colorado, were marched into the plaza of San Miguel, and it soon became understood that all the captives were to be sent to the city of Mexico. Armijo released four of the prisoners, but the remainder were started on their long journey to the capital. In several divisions, the prisoners arrived in the spring of 1842. In April some of them were released, at the intercession of foreign ministers, on the plea that they were not Texans and had joined the expedition without being aware of any hostile motives of the leaders. The remainder, after being confined a few weeks in various Mexican prisons, some of them being compelled to work upon the public highways in chains, were released by order of General Santa Anna, June 13, 1842. The only exception was Navarro, Mexican by birth and member of a distinguished family, who was condemned to death. He escaped from prison, however, and ultimately returned to Texas.

This first Santa Fe expedition was not undertaken altogether for the purpose of developing closer trade relations between Texas and Santa Fe and securing a share of the commerce which passed over the Santa Fe trail to the Missouri river. The military character of the enterprise and the well-known desires of the Texans were sufficient warrant for the assertion that the plans also contemplated the acquisition of this rich territory of Texas, with the incidental rewards of the spoils of conquest for the individual members of the expedition.

During this administration the independence of Texas was recognized by foreign nations. This formal act of according the privileges due to an independent nation was performed for Texas by the United States in 1837. The inclination of Texas to a free-trade policy gained her favor in England, resulting in the negotiation of a commercial treaty in 1838, and recognition of her independence was extended in 1842, although not without much opposition from the anti-slavery element of England. In 1839 a treaty was signed between France and Texas, although diplomatic relations were later severed for a time, as already mentioned. And in 1840 Holland and Belgium held out the hand of fellowship to the new republic.

While Lamar was president the permanent location of the Texas capital was decided. Since the beginning of American settlement many towns had the honor of being the seat of official business. San Felipe from its founding in 1824 until 1835 was the official center of the Amer-



ican colonies, corresponding roughly to the modern county seat, and in 1835, through the meeting of the general consultation and the provisional government, became in fact the first capital. From March 1 to 17, 1836, Washington on the Brazos entertained the constitutional convention and provisional government. From Washington President Burnet and his cabinet moved to Harrisburg. The last official transaction there was on April 14th, the day before Santa Anna arrived. Several days later the members of the government assembled on Galveston island. The island was entirely wanting in any accommodation and served only as a place of refuge until after the battle of San Jacinto.



TEXAS CAPITOL BUILDING AT COLUMBIA

On May 8th the government moved to Velasco, which at that time had some reputation as a summer resort and contained houses for the officials. President Burnet resided at Velasco during the summer, and this was the capital till the latter part of September. On July 23rd the president had designated Columbia as the place for the assembling of the first congress, which met there October 3d. Within a few weeks agitation began for the removal of the government, fifteen towns or townsites being applicants for the honor. The vote on the question was taken on November 30th, when Houston, which did not at that time have



a single permanent habitation, was chosen by a bare majority as the capital until the end of the session of the congress beginning in 1840. The first congress adjourned at Columbia December 22, and about the end of the following April the president and other government officials arrived in Houston, and congress assembled at the new location on May 1st.

Though the location of Houston was designed to be temporary, efforts were made to remove the government to a permanent capital before the expiration of the period assigned for its seat at Houston. A commission of five members was appointed in October, 1837, to consider sites for the capital. Bastrop, Washington, Nashville and several other places were offered. The first commission was succeeded in the same year by another commission, which reported in April, 1838, and offered for the consideration of congress a number of sites on the Brazos and Colorado rivers. A vote was taken in joint session, the ballots being distributed among a dozen situations. Eblin's league on the Colorado, adjoining the present town of LaGrange, received 27 out of 42 votes. May 22d, President Houston vetoed the bill on the ground that the congress then in session was not empowered to decide the matter of permanent location, and that subsequent congresses up to 1840 might repeal the act. Another reason, assigned by the citizens of Fayette county, was that the president desired to protect himself and other investors who had bought Houston town lots with the promise that the capital should remain there until 1840. The house of representatives sustained the veto.

The location of the capital became an issue in the campaign of 1838, creating a somewhat sectional feeling between what was then east and west Texas. January 14, 1839, President Lamar approved a bill creating a commission with more extended powers than were possessed by the former bodies. The commission was restricted in its selection to the territory north of the San Antonio road and between the Trinity and Colorado rivers, but had authority to make a final selection without reference to congress or the people. The five commissioners made their report on April 13, 1839. The sites of Bastrop and Waterloo were the only ones considered in the final vote of the commissioners, and Waterloo was adopted. The site contained 7735 acres, and was purchased for the sum of about \$21,000. The settlement at Waterloo had been begun only a few months before, on the edge of the frontier between the white settlements and the Indian domain, so that the transfer of this tract of wild land to the government at a price of nearly three dollars an acre

was a not unprofitable transaction for the original owners. By the terms of the act the capital was to be known as the city of Austin, a name henceforth substituted for the original Waterloo.

Edwin Waller was the government agent appointed to lay off the new city and provide buildings for the government. He arrived on the site in May, and the following August the first sale of lots was held, the aggregate sales amounting to \$300,000, a sum that was applied to the construction of the first houses of government. Mr. Waller displayed such energy in laying out the city and providing accommodations that the capital was ready for the reception of the government by the following October, and his enterprise checkmated all the plans of the opposition to prevent the removal to Austin. An act supplementary to the act providing for the permanent location of the capital directed that the government should be transferred to the new site before October 1, 1839, and congress was to assemble there in the following November. The removal of the archives from Houston took place in the latter part of September, and President Lamar and cabinet reached Austin October 17th. At the close of the year a bill was introduced to reopen the question of capital location, but was decisively defeated, thus confirming Austin as the permanent capital.

General Houston was one of the active opponents of the location at Austin, and in 1842, during his second term as president, and when an invasion from Mexico was threatened, he called the special session of congress in June to meet at the town of Houston. The regular session of December following met at Washington on the Brazos. The citizens of Austin were very much exasperated at this action, and determined that wherever the government might go the archives should remain at the place officially designated as the capital. This gave rise to what was known as the Archive war. In December Houston sent a company of soldiers to bring the most necessary state papers to Washington. The captain in command succeeded in loading three wagons with documents and conducted them out of town, where the guard camped for the night. On the following morning a loaded cannon barred the way and the resolute citizens of Austin compelled the return of the archives to their proper home. During the remaining years of the republic's existence the congress met at Washington—without the archives—, but the convention to consider annexation to the United States assembled in Austin, which has since been the capital of Texas.

At the general election of September, 1841, Sam Houston once more

was the favorite of the people, receiving twice as many votes as his opponent, David G. Burnet. Edward Burleson was elected vice president. On his entrance to the presidential office Houston at once showed a disposition to administer the affairs of the republic very differently from his predecessor. His policy in dealing with the Indians was to make treaties which should be strictly observed by the whites, and to establish trading posts all along the frontier, each with a small garrison, to prevent encroachment on the territory of the settlers and to maintain strict neutrality.

Houston introduced a system of severe economy in the management of the republic. As mentioned in his first message, the nation was "not only without money, but without credit, and, for want of punctuality, without character." The exchequer bills, which were issued, as fiat money, at the beginning of his term, in the course of a year depreciated to twenty-five cents on the dollar, as had been the case with the former treasury notes. Further borrowing was hardly possible, and the only resource in this financial crisis was to cut down expenses. Accordingly, retrenchment was not only the policy but a necessity for this administration. With a white population in the republic of something like one hundred thousand, the salaries paid, in 1840, to the officers of the government amounted to \$174,000, nearly two dollars per capita in a country whose resources were just beginning to be developed, and already taxed to the utmost by revolution and Indian wars. What a scaling down of salaries and elimination of officers were effected during Houston's term may be imagined by the amount of the government pay roll in 1842, which showed an aggregate expenditure of less than \$33,000. While Lamar's administration cost five million dollars, Houston's three years made a total of barely half a million. The result, while in the main wholesome, necessarily weakened the effectiveness of the government especially in frontier defense. The Ranger service was seriously crippled during these years, and the advance guard of settlement at some points, noticeably along the Brazos in Milam and adjoining counties, was compelled to withdraw, and development in these sections was not resumed until after annexation.

In this period Texas had her war of the Regulators and Moderators, which began in 1842. The scene of this was the old Neutral Ground in East Texas, which was still the abode of many ill-assorted characters. The war was really a contest between rival land claimants, and was due to land frauds. Forged headright certificates were in the hands of many, and the character of the men on both sides was such that the settlement

of differences was more often through force and armed display than by court process. Finally a defeated candidate for congress expressed his disappointment by exposing the land frauds, and then gathered a party of Regulators for the purpose of regulating the troubles according to his own prejudices. Their regulation was naturally often irregular, and an opposition society sprang up with the name Moderators. This brought on a kind of vendetta warfare, which lasted several years, until a serious civil war was threatened and the two parties drew up in battle array. Before that juncture, however, President Houston had interfered and sent General Smith with five hundred troops to put an end to the affair. By his mediation the factions composed their immediate differences, and the thunder of actual war died away in echoes of feudism and scattered murders.

The most serious foreign complications of this period were with Mexico. That country was employing all its political craft as well as its feeble military forces to regain dominion in Texas. Although nearly six years passed after the battle of San Jacinto without effective effort to invade Texas, that government continually refused any sign of recognition of independence, an attitude that served to delay formal recognition on the part of other foreign countries.

The first actual renewal of hostilities from Mexico was in 1842. In March General Vasquez suddenly appeared at San Antonio with five hundred men, and, with no opposition from the small Texas force stationed there, took possession of the city, declared the authority of Mexico, and two days later departed. Goliad and Refugio were served in the same manner by other Mexican troops, but the entire invasion was a mere demonstration on the part of Mexico. In Texas the result was to arouse the old fears that had been almost allayed by six years of peace. President Houston issued a proclamation for the people to hold themselves ready to repel invasion, while congress passed a bill for the prosecution of an offensive war. This was for the time a popular measure, and the president's veto aroused much indignation. In July there was a severe engagement on the Nueces in which a large force of Mexicans was repulsed by two hundred volunteers.

Then, on September 11th, General Woll led a second expedition into San Antonio. District court was in session, all the activities of this frontier town on such a day were in progress, and no thought of an enemy's approach was entertained by anyone. It was a complete surprise. Nevertheless, the citizens did not surrender without a valiant re-

sistance. Some of them took refuge on a roof overlooking Main plaza and defended themselves for a number of hours. Finally realizing the presence of overpowering numbers, they surrendered. The number of prisoners was fifty-two, including the district judge, several lawyers, physicians and other prominent citizens.

News of the capture of San Antonio soon spread to the surrounding country. Col. Matthew Caldwell, with a force of over two hundred, collected largely from Gonzales, took up a position in the Salado bottom about six miles east of town. By a ruse he succeeded in drawing out the Mexicans to his well protected position, and in the battle that followed the latter lost heavily. But at the same time a reinforcement, consisting of fifty-three men raised in Fayette county and commanded by Captain Dawson, in attempting to join the main body under Caldwell, were surrounded by the enemy and after two-thirds of them were slain the rest were cut down in pursuit, only two succeeding in making their escape. On September 20, General Woll, after having been in possession of San Antonio a little more than a week, again withdrew beyond the Rio Grande, sending his prisoners on foot to the City of Mexico.

This second invasion, following so closely upon the first, threw Texas into a ferment of military preparation. Volunteers were ordered to rendezvous at San Antonio for an invasion of Mexico, and General Somervell was directed to take command. But as the Santa Fe expedition and other previous attempts had proved, Texas was unable to carry on a successful war beyond her borders. The government only reluctantly yielded to the popular clamor for war. The army was badly equipped, and the whole affair degenerated into nothing more than a retaliatory raid across the Rio Grande. The volunteers wanted General Burleson as their commander instead of Somervell, and this contention also contributed to defeat the undertaking. Somervell, on arriving at Columbus on the Colorado and finding some two or three hundred men collected and awaiting Burleson, disbanded them and himself returned to Matagorda. In October he was again ordered to take command of the army assembled at San Antonio, and when he arrived he found about twelve hundred volunteers, ill disciplined and poorly equipped, but most of them eager to cross the frontier and carry war into Mexico. Somervell displayed no enthusiasm and, perhaps acting under orders from Houston, made little progress toward actual invasion. Consequently many deserted at San Antonio, while the remainder, about seven hundred and fifty in number, set out and reached Laredo on the Rio Grande early in December.

A few days later, permission was granted to those who desired to return home, and about two hundred left and returned to the settlements. Somervell then continued down the Texas side of the river to a point opposite the town of Guerrero, when he crossed and occupied that place. The following day, the command having been brought back to the east side of the river, Somervell ordered his troops to set out on the return to Gonzales. Two hundred chose to obey their commander, but the remaining three hundred were not content with such an ending to the campaign. Refusing to follow, they proceeded to organize an independent expedition against Mexico, William S. Fisher being elected their colonel.

These three hundred composed what is known as the Mier expedition, which, though in a sense a branch of the army of invasion ordered against Mexico by the Texas government, was in fact a self-constituted organization, similar to the Santa Fe expedition.

They descended the river to Mier, and after making a requisition on the alcalde for provisions and waiting in the vicinity several days, a large Mexican force came up and entered the town. On the 25th of December the Americans crossed the river and engaged them. The enemy were several times more numerous, but were well matched by the intrepid attack of the invaders. During the night the Texans occupied the outskirts of the town, and in the morning advanced toward the plaza, which was protected by artillery. For several hours the battle was waged, then there was a parley. The Texans were promised the consideration due to prisoners of war on condition that they surrender, and owing to their dangerous position and small supply of ammunition the majority voted to accept the terms. Two hundred and sixty-one Texans had engaged against more than two thousand Mexicans. The wounded were left at Mier, and the rest, about two hundred, were started to Mexico, being joined at Saltillo by a few of the prisoners taken by Woll at the capture of San Antonio.

When they arrived at the hacienda del Salado, they were placed in a large corral. Their plan having been carefully matured, by a sudden rush they overpowered their guards, seized the arms stacked in the court-yard, and with a fierce charge scattered the cavalry and other guards at the gates, and in a few minutes were masters of the situation. Leaving the wounded to be cared for according to mutual agreement, the Texans began their retreat. Some days later, fearing capture, they left the regular roads and entered the mountains. For a number of days they endured the toil of mountain travel. Their only food was such as could be found

in the uninhabited region they were traversing. Weakened by hunger and worn out by their fruitless wanderings, they surrendered without resistance to a cavalry force that came across their way, and were taken back to Salado.

Here occurred the famous bean lottery. Santa Anna had issued an order for decimation of the prisoners, and the order was carried out in characteristic Mexican fashion. In the bottom of a jar were placed 159 white beans, seventeen black beans being thrown on top without shaking. An officer held the jar up so that the beans could not be seen. The prisoners stepped forward one after another, each drawing one bean. The white bean was life and the black bean was death. The prisoners calmly performed this lottery of life and death, those who drew the fatal prize even joking over their fate. At sunset of the same day the seventeen were seated upon a log, with their backs to the file of soldiers, and volley after volley poured upon them until all were dead. Those who drew the white beans had no joy in their fortune. They were sent on to Mexico, where they endured untold sufferings in the castle of Perote. Several effected their escape by tunneling out, and those who had not in the meantime died were released in September, 1844.

The remaining troubles with Mexico were complicated with the causes leading up to annexation. In 1843 England used her influence with Santa Anna so successfully that a cessation of hostilities was agreed upon, and commissioners from Mexico and Texas were to arrange terms of peace. As result, in February, 1844, an armistice was agreed upon until a permanent peace could be made. Houston refused to accept the armistice because it referred to Texas as a department of Mexico. On June 16th Santa Anna declared a renewal of hostilities, though without any actual consequences of war. Thus, at the close of the republic's existence, it was in a nominal state of war with Mexico.

## CHAPTER XXIII

### THE ANNEXATION OF TEXAS

The interests and natural sympathies of Texas, after American colonization had become the predominant factor in her growth, were closely akin to, if not identical with, those of the United States. If the republic of Texas had existed to the present time, the two nations would have been so united in spirit that the bonds between them would be hardly less binding than those of to-day. During the early years of the republic, the Texans celebrated the independence day of the United States with hardly less enthusiasm than their own, and in all essential respects manifested the same qualities of Americanism that characterized the citizens of the "states." Texas was an outgrowth of the United States, an extension of its people upon foreign territory, a colonization just as much as the settlement of New England was two centuries before. Independence established, it was natural that the colony **would** prefer the protection and federal benefits of the older government **rather** than the isolation of an independent nation. Annexation, therefore, was a natural, if not inevitable, sequence of independence. The achievement of this end was delayed by many causes, some of them of practical and detail nature, others complicated with some of the large problems of national and international politics.

American sympathy with the cause of the revolutionists had proved indispensable, both in the moral and material assistance extended, during 1835 and 1836. The Texan commissioners aroused interest wherever they went, and the contributions of money and supplies and volunteer companies proved the strongest assurance to the Texas cause.

One of the first acts of the Texas government after the battle of San Jacinto was to send commissioners to Washington to obtain recognition of independence. Nothing in this direction was immediately accomplished, although President Jackson and other officials expressed themselves in favor of such recognition as soon as possible. Though the government moved in this matter with becoming dignity, the popular



feeling for the infant republic was so strongly manifested as to give grounds for Mexico to protest a violation of the laws of neutrality, and in October, 1836, diplomatic relations were broken off between the United States and Mexico on this account. The facts of this matter were that General Gaines, of the United States army, had been stationed at the Sabine with instructions to preserve neutrality and to guard against the incursions of Indians or Mexicans into Louisiana. In May, 1836, an attack by Indians on a small settlement at the headquarters of the Navasota, and also news of another invasion from Mexico, induced Gaines to send a detachment of his troops to occupy Nacogdoches. This invasion was afterwards justified as an exercise of police powers in restraining the Indians and guarding the American borders, but in a strict sense it was a violation of neutrality and was so regarded by Mexico. But the latter's protest seems disingenuous. It is evidence that Mexico was grasping, while in the whirlpool of political ruin, at every straw for retaining her weakened hold on Texas.

One of the questions submitted to the people at the first general election after the winning of independence was whether annexation to the United States was desirable. An almost unanimous vote was cast in favor of such a result. Houston referred to its early execution in his inaugural address. November 16, 1836, William H. Wharton was appointed by the president, under congressional authority, as commissioner to negotiate with the government at Washington for the recognition of independence and also for annexation. In his message to congress of the following December, President Jackson said: "Prudence, therefore, seems to dictate that we should stand aloof and maintain our present attitude, if not until Mexico itself or one of the great foreign powers shall recognize the independence of the new government, at least until the lapse of time or the course of events shall have proved, beyond cavil or dispute, the ability of the people of that country to maintain their separate sovereignty and to uphold the government constituted by them." In the following March the independence of Texas was formally recognized by the senate. Yet on the subject of annexation the secretary of state replied to the proposals of the Texas envoy as follows: "Although all you say may be true, and all the advantages to be derived from the annexation of Texas to the United States certain to follow, yet this government will not further listen to or consider the subject." After being thus rejected, Texas did not ardently press her suit again, and

awaited the deliberate action of public opinion in the United States to accomplish the result.

At Washington the annexation question was seldom discussed on its own merits, but as a phase of one or both of the two great problems then absorbing the attention of the American nation. On one side, annexation was regarded in its probable effects on the doctrine of protection and free trade, and also on the then recent Monroe doctrine of non-interference in America by foreign powers. From the other point of view, annexation involved the issue between the antagonists and protagonists of slavery. These questions were then vital among the American people, and were comprehensive enough to involve the matter of annexation.

However, the solution of the larger issues which hindered or promoted annexation only remotely concerned the Texans themselves. During these years they were busied with their industrial and political problems; the representatives were endeavoring to constitute a self-sustaining and self-protecting state, while the citizens were bending every effort to repairing the wastes caused by war, to making homes in the wilderness, and to building up trade and industry and the social community. Nearly all desired the security and prestige and opportunity that would result from closer relations with the United States, but were little concerned about what commercial or political advantage would result to one or another party in the United States from annexation. Texas was working out her own destiny as best she could, and when, through a combination of circumstances, the opportunity came for admission to the Union that lot was gladly accepted.

When the annexation question was brought before the people of the United States the lines of difference on the slavery problem were already tightly drawn, and the struggle which culminated in civil war was already being waged in the houses of Congress and by the press and public opinion. The policy had been established of balancing free state against slave state, and thus keeping both sides equally represented in the national senate. This rivalry resulted in a determined struggle on each side for new territory, and the application of Texas for admission to the Union was considered most opportune to the southern party. At the same time the antagonists of slavery were aligned against Texas. As all treaties, according to precedent, had to be approved by a two-thirds vote of the senate, and as the balance of power was so carefully preserved in the upper house, it seemed doubtful if Texas could be ad-

mitted as long as this situation continued. While, on other grounds, Texas might have been admitted soon after the recognition of independence, the movement was checked until arguments from another point of view pushed the slavery question to the background and allowed the annexationists to have their will.

The republic of Texas was committed to the principle of free trade. At that time the United States was building its tariff wall, and the policy of protecting home industries had made considerable progress. As an independent nation, Texas promised a large market to foreign, and especially English, manufactures, which were kept out of the United States by the high import duties. The conclusion seemed to be that Texas, notwithstanding the close affiliation with the United States, would establish trade relations with those nations that could offer reciprocal advantages. England especially coveted the cotton crops of Texas, and under free trade the Texas product would have an obvious advantage over the cotton of the United States. This commercial reason proved a strong argument for the annexationists. On the other hand it was seen that, if Texas was admitted, the anti-tariff party would thereby be augmented so that the protective policy would be in danger. Thus the Texas question was involved in the economic as well as the social problems of the United States.

When President Lamar delivered his inaugural address in 1838 he declared himself averse to annexation, which he believed would ruin the republic's hopes of greatness. But in the course of his term many reasons appeared to modify the enthusiasm for an independent national existence. The subject, however, did not assume much importance during this term since the people were so busy with more immediate concerns. Then, too, the Van Buren administration was reluctant to interfere in the situation as long as Mexico refused to recognize the new republic and kept up a show of war for its recovery.

During the greater part of Houston's second term active hostilities were in progress between Texas and Mexico, so that the cause of annexation halted. But in the mediation between Santa Anna and the republic, which was brought about largely by England's influence in 1843, the annexation movement entered upon its final stage. England saw in Texas a great field for the exploitation of her own manufactures, for which she would gain an almost unlimited supply of raw material, especially cotton. Mainly for this reason England readily extended assistance in obtaining recognition from Mexico. The activity of the British and

French in behalf of Texas was alleged to be a violation of the Monroe doctrine. And the fear of a commercial alliance between Texas and Europe which might be a formidable rival of American trade was a powerful argument for annexation. These reasons combined with the natural sympathy of Americans for their Texas countrymen to make annexation popular among the great majority of citizens in the United States.

President Tyler was avowedly in favor of annexation. In his message of December, 1843, he declared it was to the immediate interest of the United States that hostilities cease between Texas and Mexico, and that America could not permit foreign interference in Texas or see the sacred principle of the Monroe doctrine in any manner contravened. It was also asserted, though with slight reason, that it was the intention of England to abolish slavery in Texas, thus forcing the southern free-traders into line for annexation.

In September, 1844, Anson Jones was elected president of Texas. Annexation was an issue in the campaign, and while the majority of Texans favored it they elected a president whose attitude to the subject was rather neutral if not hostile. It was supposed that the incorporation of Texas in the Union would be deferred for some years to come. In the previous June the United States senate had rejected an annexation treaty by more than two to one. The situation was a peculiar one, and four nations were concerned in the status of Texas. Mexico threatened war against the United States if Texas was annexed. England was asserting her diplomacy to keep Texas free politically with a view to intimate commercial relations, while France had similar designs.

But in the United States annexation became an issue of the campaign of 1844. James K. Polk was nominated for president by the Democrats over Van Buren mainly because he advocated bringing Texas into the Union. Henry Clay, the popular idol and the candidate of the Whigs, took an attitude to the Texas question which was unfortunate to his success. The election of Polk was a clear evidence of the popular will regarding Texas.

So quickly did Congress respond to the opinion expressed in the recent election, that not Polk but Tyler, who had been an ardent advocate of annexation, gained the honor of approving the bill for admission of the new state. The previous attempts to add Texas to the United States had been by annexation treaty, which was regarded as the regular constitutional means of accomplishing that end. As such a treaty re-

quired a two-thirds vote of the senate, and a similar one had been rejected only a short time before, a new plan was adopted. In February, 1845, a joint resolution was introduced into the two houses of Congress in favor of incorporating Texas in the nation, and received a majority in both bodies, the vote being 27 to 25 in the senate. In some quarters the act was held to be unconstitutional, but its tacit approval by people and courts gave it the character of supreme law. On March 1st, three days before resigning office to Mr. Polk, President Tyler signed this measure, and it thus remained for Texas to make the final decision either for federate statehood or national independence.

On May 5th President Jones issued a call for the election of delegates to a general convention to consider the proposition from the United States. The convention met at Austin on July 4th, and approved the ordinance of annexation with only one dissenting vote—that of Richard Bache, a grandson of Benjamin Franklin. This ordinance, and a new constitution, adopted by the convention, were submitted to the people and almost unanimously ratified in October. In December following President Polk signed the bill extending the authority of the United States over Texas, and on February 19, 1846, the new system went into effect, President Jones surrendering his office to the newly elected state governor, J. Pinckney Henderson.

## CHAPTER XXIV

### THE STATE OF TEXAS, 1845 TO 1861

For fifteen years after annexation Texas remained under the stars and stripes of the United States of America, and these were years of plenty, progress, and broad increase for the commonwealth. Texas gained much by surrendering her sovereignty, for henceforth vexatious foreign affairs form no part of her history.

The population of Texas at the time of incorporation into the Union was about one hundred thousand Americans, with a comparatively small number of Mexicans, besides the Indian tribes. The production of cotton, corn and sugar cane and the raising of cattle and horses and hogs were the principal industries, and, notwithstanding that the inhabitants were, during the first few years, mainly engaged in providing for their immediate necessities, by the time Texas became a state the exports almost equaled in value the imports, and the country had already assumed importance in the markets of the world.

By the new state constitution the governor was elected for a term of two years and was re-eligible. J. Pinckney Henderson, the first governor, was inaugurated in February, 1846. It was during his administration that the war between the United States and Mexico was fought. Mexico had never ceased to claim Texas, by all the legal and logical devices of which her astute statesmen were capable, although she had never succeeded in putting a sufficient force into the field to compel allegiance. But when the annexation resolution was passed by Congress, the time of protest and diplomacy had passed and Mexico had to take effective measures or surrender her former possession forever.

At the time, the war with Mexico was regarded with favor by the majority of American people. The judgment of posterity has justified the results, without attempting sanction of its ethical causes. Two general causes have been assigned for the aggressive war. One "was the desire on the part of the slave-holding states to add new territory to the Union out of which other slave-holding states could be constituted."

This was the same motive that produced the contest for Kansas, and the rivalry between the two sides in the issue actuated most of the territorial expansion before the Civil war.

The other cause for American encroachment in the southwest was the same which had caused the original movement across the Sabine into Texas, the "westward expansion," which brought Americans into conflict with the Spanish races for the possession of territory which the former claimed both by theoretical and practical right.

This defines the generally hostile attitude of the nation toward the Spanish-American possessions. The actual impetus to war was furnished by more immediate cause or pretext (according to the manner in which it is interpreted). Texas, having won independence in 1836, claimed the Rio Grande as her southwestern boundary. During the Coahuila-Texas union, the Medina and Nueces rivers were the boundaries between the two provinces. So far as Mexico had been willing to discuss the boundary question at all, she insisted upon the Nueces as the southern limits of Texas. A very generous interpretation of old territorial claims is necessary to concede the Rio Grande border to Texas, and the claim set up by the first congress was a bold assertion that in the ordinary course of events would have required the power of battles to support it. As a matter of fact, neither Texas nor Mexico made any serious attempt to occupy and defend this desolate border country, which remained as a buffer between the two nations.

Beginning with the overthrow of the dictator Santa Anna by the revolution of 1845, the Mexican government, under the leadership of President Herrera, was disposed to treat with the republic of Texas more according to international usages. But it was too late, since the election of Polk as president of the United States had decided the matter of annexation, and, no longer a nation, Texas could make no response to the conciliatory advances of Mexico.

Accordingly, Mexico's hostility to Texas was now directed against the larger nation in which the republic had been absorbed. So aggrieved did that nation become that her minister at Washington demanded his passports as soon as the annexation resolution was passed, and returned home. The minister of the United States at Mexico likewise left his post, and all diplomatic intercourse was thus broken off. Shortly afterward President Polk appointed Alexander Slidell as minister plenipotentiary to Mexico to discuss and negotiate the subject under dispute. On his arrival Slidell, it seems, failed to use proper tact in dealing with the dis-

quieted Mexicans, and was refused recognition by the government altogether.

The subject of annexation, the disputed boundary line, the rejection of the minister, and the additional failure of Mexico to settle certain claims due to American citizens, all acutely aggravated the war situation. By dispatching General Zachary Taylor with three thousand soldiers to take possession of the country between the Nueces and the Rio Grande and guard the latter as the southwestern boundary, President Polk gave the provocation to the brief war between the United States and Mexico.

Opposite Matamoros General Taylor fortified Fort Brown, his communication with the gulf being through Point Isabel. A Mexican army, crossing the Rio Grande, moved to the north of Fort Brown with the intention of cutting the line of communication and dislodging the Americans from their position. The two armies first collided north of Brownsville at a water hole, since famous under the name of Palo Alto. In a short conflict the Mexicans were driven back, and at nightfall retreated to Resaca de la Palma. Here the second battle of the war took place. Another decisive victory for Taylor's troops resulted in the withdrawal of the enemy to the other side of the Rio Grande. These were the only battles of the war fought on Texas soil, and at their conclusion the chief objects of the United States had been accomplished, the Rio Grande having been established, temporarily at least, as the Texas boundary.

But the news of these initial engagements brought from President Polk his famous assertion—"War exists, and, notwithstanding all our efforts to avoid it, exists by the act of Mexico herself." Congress accepted the declaration that "war exists" and voted money and volunteers to carry the war to a satisfactory conclusion. Fifty thousand volunteers were called for. An Army of the West was directed to be formed under the command of Colonel Stephen W. Kearney, which was to take possession of New Mexico and proceed thence to California. An Army of the center, under General John B. Wool, was ordered to assemble at San Antonio and march into Coahuila and Chihuahua. General Taylor was directed to proceed against the northern and eastern states of Mexico. The naval forces under Commodores Stockton and Sloat on the Pacific, and Commodore Conner on the Gulf of Mexico, were ordered to cooperate with the land forces and to do all in their power to aid in the subjugation and capture of Mexican property and territory.

The Americans were victorious on all occasions, and in a short time



General Taylor was conqueror of all northern Mexico; Kearney was in possession of New Mexico; Fremont occupied California; and General Scott completed the campaign by fighting his way from Vera Cruz to the city of Mexico, which was captured in September, 1847.

In this war Governor Henderson took command of the Texas volunteers, about eight thousand having responded for service from the state. The Texans displayed unexampled bravery wherever there was a difficult position to be stormed or the brunt of an assault to be sustained, and the Texas Rangers especially won lasting renown and respect for their dashing courage. "The efficiency of these mounted troopers was marked wherever the army advanced. Serving equally as well on foot as on horseback, they would storm a height or charge the enemy's cavalry with the same indifference, intrepidity and success. On the road they were the terror of the guerilla bands, and in the towns objects of dread to antagonists, and of awe to non-combatants. Their uncouth, wild and fierce appearance, their strange garb, and their reputation for contempt of every form of danger, gained for them in Mexico the belief that they were more than human—that they were beings intermediate between man and devil."

The second governor of Texas, who took office in December, 1847, was George T. Wood, with lieutenant governor John A. Greer. In 1849 P. Hansborough Bell was elected governor, and re-elected in 1851. The office was filled in 1853 by the election of Elisha M. Pease, with David C. Dickson lieutenant governor, and by re-election Pease served to 1857. The most noteworthy events of state history during these administrations were those relating to the settlement of the western boundaries, to the state debt, and to the Indians.

The boundary affair and the adjustment of the state debt went together in their eventual settlement. The boundary trouble was a result of the claim of Texas to the territory east of the upper courses of the Rio Grande, including a large part of what is now New Mexico. It would be difficult to show the adequacy of Texas's claims to all this region, but the pretensions were vigorously contested. By the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo in 1848, New Mexico was a part of the vast territory surrendered by Mexico. In the same year the Texas legislature passed an act extending its jurisdiction as far as the Rio Grande in this territory. But when a Texas judge endeavored to hold court in the territory he came into direct conflict with the federal authorities, and for a time

it looked as if the two sides might resort to arms. The rivalry of authorities continued into the administration of Governor Bell.

When Texas surrendered her nationality she likewise turned over to the federal revenue department the customs and other general revenues. But all the loans of the republic had been based on these revenue receipts as security, and the bondholders at once applied to the United States to guarantee the bonds. The question whether the federal government should be responsible for these obligations was discussed in both houses of Congress. The boundary matter became involved in the same discussion.

The complex nature of the problem, involving, as it did before final settlement, many considerations apparently remote from the real issues, is well stated in a review published at the time. After referring to the failure of Texas to determine her western boundary, the writer says: "A portion of the disputed ground, the tract lying between the Nueces and the Rio Grande, as it is of little value to either claimant, and can never support a population large enough to support a state by itself, will probably be abandoned to Texas without controversy. Not so with the Santa Fe district and the other portions of New Mexico lying on the east bank of the upper Rio Grande. The native inhabitants of this region cherish sentiments of bitter hostility towards the Texans, who now threaten to extend their disputed dominion over them by force. A border warfare must ensue if Congress does not intervene. Slavery cannot be introduced into this region, which is too elevated, too barren, and situated too far north to recompense any other than free labor; but if the laws of Texas are extended over it, it becomes a portion of a slave state, and whatever political power it may subsequently obtain will be lost to the cause of freedom. Both humanity and policy require, therefore, that the north should submit to any reasonable sacrifice for the purpose of severing this region from Texas and adding it to the free territory of New Mexico. Now, by the terms of the proposed compromise the sacrifice required is a very trifling one. Texas is willing to sell her claim to the disputed region for what she calls a fair price—a few millions of dollars; and the United States are bound in equity to cause the creditors of Texas to be paid a sum at least equal to this price, because the revenue from the customs of Texas, which is now paid into our national treasury, was formally and solemnly pledged to these creditors as a security for their debt. Having taken away the security, our government is bound to see that the debt is paid, and it can be paid with the price of the claim to the

disputed region. The south makes no objection to this arrangement; Texas, as we have said, consents to it, and the north ought to be satisfied with it, because, first, it will preserve the national faith, and, secondly, it will rescue a large tract of country from the dominion of a slave state and by joining it to New Mexico add it to the 'area of freedom.'"

The compromise outlined above was part of the great compromise measures, under the authorship of the venerable Henry Clay, which afforded the last breathing spell for the two sections of the nation hurrying on to inevitable conflict. The great battle of politics had reached its height at Washington early in 1850, and by the influence of Mr. Clay the opposing factions were brought together in the compromises which were enacted into law the following September.

The essential points of the compromise were as follows: The admission of California as a free state. The organization of two new territories—Utah, including Nevada, and New Mexico, including Arizona—without the Wilmot proviso, that is, with no conditions prohibiting slavery. The slave trade was abolished in the District of Columbia, and, in return, a stringent law was passed for the arrest of fugitive slaves in northern states. Involved in these acts was the provision that Texas should be paid \$10,000,000 for surrendering her claim to the territory east of the upper Rio Grande.

The measure, known as the Boundary Act, after passing the two houses and being signed by the president, was submitted to the Texas government. Great opposition was presented to the act, but towards the end of November its propositions were accepted. The provisions of this act settled—with the recent exception of Greer county—the permanent boundaries of Texas as we know them today. The east and northeastern boundaries were fixed by the treaty with Spain in 1819. By the act of 1850 the present northernmost limit of the state—the top of the Panhandle—was to run along the parallel of 36 degrees and 30 minutes north, from the 100th to the 103d meridian west. This is an extension of the old Missouri Compromise line. From the latter point of intersection the boundary was made to run due south to the 32d degree of north latitude, and thence run west to the course of the Rio Grande, which, thence to its mouth, formed the southern and southwestern line of the state.

Outside of these limits Texas was to surrender all claims to territorial possessions, and also to relinquish her claims upon the United States for settlement of the outstanding debts of the old republic. The

United States, on the other hand and in return for this relinquishment, agreed to pay Texas ten million dollars in five-percent bonds. Not more than five million dollars of this amount was to be issued until the creditors of the state had filed at the United States treasury releases for all claims on account of the bonds of the Texas republic—a provision for insuring proper use of the money which caused much dissatisfaction in Texas. The first payment of five million dollars was accordingly made to Texas in February, 1852.

But with the boundary question at rest, the settlement of the debt continued to vex the state government for several years. The bonds of the republic had been sold to investors at far below their guaranteed face value. Their redemption at less than par could not be accomplished, according to modern commercial practice, except as a result of compromise between the two parties in interest. Nevertheless, the Texas legislature undertook to classify these liabilities and to scale down the payment to correspond proportionately with the actual amount received from the bonds at their sale. The entire liabilities of this class as calculated in 1851 amounted to more than twelve million dollars, but by the scaling process this amount was reduced to about seven millions. Over the governor's veto the legislature finally determined to settle the debt on that basis at half the par value of the bonds. This law, as passed in January, 1852, did not offer terms satisfactory to the bondholders, and few of the claims had been liquidated up to 1855. During the administration of Governor Pease the matter was finally adjusted.

In the meantime Texas had produced another claim against the federal government. It was alleged that over half of the first payment of five million dollars had been expended for protection against the incursions of Indians from Mexico. The expense of Indian defense, it was argued, should no longer be a burden on the state but on the general government. While the bondholders were appealing to the United States against the repudiation measures of the Texas legislature, the latter was filing the bill of costs of Indian protection.

Under these circumstances Congress interfered, set aside the scale of reductions as adopted by the legislature, and, adding \$2,750,000 to the five millions retained in the treasury, apportioned the entire sum, pro rata, among the creditors; refunding, however, to Texas all claims previously paid by the state, and providing that Texas should finally relinquish all claims upon the federal government. Against much opposition this arrangement was accepted by Texas, and the matter finally adjusted.

The first payment of five million dollars from the national treasury was a Godsend to the young state government, and was advantageously employed not only in meeting the old obligations of the republic, but in paying the immediate running expenses of the state government, so that taxes were for several years remitted to the respective counties to be used for the erection of court houses and for other local improvements.

During this period, the Comanches had proved the most troublesome of the Indian tribes. Their depredations were usually committed during the course of an extended raid into Mexico, which was their favorite field of operations. As the settlements of northern Texas made considerable progress during the fifties, they were exposed to the raids from the tribes across Red river in the Indian Territory.

The Texas Indians were being crowded from their homes. The settlers were rapidly taking possession of all the region east of the high western plains of the state, and when the whites came the Indians had to depart. In the fifties the Texas government undertook, as the national government had done some years before, to colonize the tribes on reservations. Two reservations were set apart in Young county near Fort Belknap. At first the colonies seemed to be in a prosperous condition, agriculture flourished, and the agents reported that the residents were well behaved. But in two or three years the white settlements had surrounded the reservations, and the melancholy story of the Indian was repeated. A number of white ruffians leagued themselves with the Indian renegades, and depredations among the surrounding settlements became so frequent that retaliation soon followed. The blame was placed without discrimination on the Indians of the reservation, and the innocent and guilty alike were compelled to suffer the expatriation which has been the doom of their race. In December, 1858, a number of Indians were massacred on the Brazos. Although this atrocity was denounced by the governor, race hatred had been kindled to a point where the only remedy was the removal or extermination of the red men. The settlers were collecting under arms, and neither the agents nor United States troops could afford security to the inhabitants of the reserves. The result was the decision to remove the Indians altogether beyond the settlements. In August, 1859, the Indians to the number of about fifteen hundred were exiled, under guard of the United States regulars, across the Red river. So sudden was their departure that they were not given time to gather their crops nor collect their cattle.

Indian troubles continued unabated after the removal of the tribes

into Indian Territory, and the federal troops and the rangers had all they could do to protect the wide extent of frontier. The attacks were so sudden and unexpected, were made by such small parties and in such widely separated localities, that permanent relief from this danger was never secured until settlement had grown so compact that neither white nor Indian desperado could with impunity continue his crimes.

Texas politics assumed a new phase during the fifties. Strict party lines were not drawn in Texas until during Pease's administration. Up to that time personal popularity had been the deciding factor in the elections, and it was several years after annexation when party alignment, so closely observed in the nation, became a feature of the political life of the new state. Texas being admitted under Democratic rule, and the majority of the people being of southern origin, the political sentiments of the state are easily accounted for. But party politics was of somewhat later origin. About 1854, after the wreck of the Whig party and while the elements of the Republican party were slowly coalescing, a wave of Know-nothingism passed over Texas. It was a political excrescence, having at its root the old "native" party, whose one definite principle was to keep naturalized foreigners from holding office. This fundamental doctrine was now enlarged to include a proscription of Roman Catholics. The entire movement became a cult rather than a political faction, having many mysterious rites and promulgating principles, it was claimed, contrary to the federal constitution. Its lodges became numerous and its influence in elections for a time was serious. In 1855 this party succeeded in electing a congressman, but failed to elect a governor, and after this defeat the organization and its power rapidly faded from Texas politics.

During this period occurred what is designated in Texas annals as the Cart War. As may be supposed, the feelings of the Americans toward the Mexicans in Texas were not yet freed from the animosity of revolutionary times. It was inevitable that the latter people should suffer discrimination if not actual outrage in their competition for the ordinary occupations of life. Moreover, the Mexicans in Texas were mainly of the lower orders, many of them peons, who readily associated with the negro slaves. In 1856 a conspiracy was discovered in Colorado county by which was contemplated a general insurrection of the negroes and a massacre of the whites. This was put down with great severity, and, on the ground that the Mexican population were implicated in the affair,

the latter were ordered to leave the country on pain of death. This was the first open rupture between the two races, but the antagonism increased.

The Mexican population in Texas in 1856 was estimated by Olmsted as 25,000. Of the status and pursuits of the Mexicans the same writer said: "The Mexicans appear to have almost no other business than that of carting goods. Almost the entire transportation of the country is carried on by them, with oxen and two-wheeled carts. Some of them have small shops, for the supply of their own countrymen, and some live upon the produce of farms and cattle ranches in the neighborhood. Their livelihood is for the most part exceedingly meager, made up chiefly of corn and beans. . . . The old Mexican wheel of hewn blocks of wood is still constantly in use, though supplanted to some extent by Yankee wheels, sent in pairs from New York. The carts are always hewn of heavy wood, and are covered with white cotton, stretched over hoops. In these they live, on the road, as independently as in their own house. The cattle are yoked by the horns, with rawhide thongs, of which they make a great use."

In July, 1857, Charles G. Edwards, who kept a small store and a mill on the San Antonio river, was attacked near Goliad by a party of seventeen men and dangerously wounded. At the time he was in charge of a small train of carts transporting merchandise from the coast. The assault was charged to the guerillas conducting the predatory campaign against Mexican cartmen. The sentiment of the people of San Antonio, as voiced in the *Daily Herald*, branded the entire movement as outlawry, the expressions of abhorrence at the outrage being concluded as follows: "Persons here in whose judgment we have confidence recommend a call for volunteers from among us, and the formation of a body of citizens sufficiently large to repair to the scene of conflict and chastise the miscreants in a summary and effective manner. The whole subject is full of difficulty; but of one thing there can hardly be a doubt—inaction will never stop the outrages. . . . To admit that our people will ever give up the employment of Mexican carts and Mexican cartmen would be equivalent to signing the death warrant to the prosperity of San Antonio."

Opinions as to the causes of this so-called Cart War were divided. It was said that the opposition to the cartmen was caused in consequence of their hauling at lower rates than American and German wagoners

would. Yet for the preceding ten years, it was asserted as another reason, the citizens on the Goliad road had complained of the thieving of cartmen upon their stock, and the citizens had long threatened they would not submit to it.

A wordy war was carried on between Goliad (in which vicinity many of the outrages occurred) and San Antonio. Citizens of the latter place alleged that the warfare was conducted with the practical connivance of Goliad authorities; while the people of Goliad replied that outlaws from San Antonio were taking a leading part in the hostilities against legitimate carting and also in the thieving itself.

It was charged that the teamsters with "four-wheeled carts" (Americans) were endeavoring to supplant the "two-wheeled cart owners," and such a distinction must have had a conveniently invidious force in such a contest. Undoubtedly race antipathies were complicated in the hostilities, and those actively concerned in the attacks excused their actions with this prejudice.

The conflict, whatever may have been its causes, resulted in much economic loss and interruption to business. For a time it was found necessary to provide military escorts for wagon trains between Lavaca and the inland towns. Commenting on the serious aspects of the problem the *Austin Intelligencer* said (September, 1857): "The subject affects not that place (San Antonio) alone. The driving of the Mexican carts out of the trade has already withdrawn a portion of the teamsters accustomed to deliver freights at Austin from this trade; and as a consequence, our merchants are paying an increased price of 33 cents on their freights. The rise is attributed by the Lavaca forwarding merchants alone to these cart difficulties. Consumers are thus enormously taxed for the benefit of the selfish, murderous butchers who are making an exterminating war upon cheap labor. It is useless to disguise the matter. This is the sole cause of the war. It has been gaining ground in all the western counties ever since the short-sighted movements here in 1853 (referring to attempts to drive out the Mexican population). It has been excused under the various pretexts which lawless violence always assumes."

Eventually Governor Pease called out the militia to put a stop to the outrages, and thereby, according to some accounts, aggravated the tension between the two parties. The governor in his special message to the legislature on this subject enclosed some documents from the secretary of



war at Washington, showing that the matter had assumed a national importance. The secretary's letter refers to protests from the Mexican minister in relation to "an organized system of persecution, violence, expulsion and even murder, which it is alleged is directed against peaceable Mexican citizens resorting to Texas in the prosecution of their lawful business." The Mexican minister's letter reads, in part, as follows; "It is averred that in the neighborhood of San Antonio de Bexar committees of armed men have been organized for the exclusive purpose of hunting down Mexicans on the highway, spoiling them of their property and putting them to death. It is stated, moreover, that the number of victims is rising of seventy-five; whilst it is also affirmed that from the neighborhood of San Antonio de Bexar the residents of Mexican origin have been expelled. . . . Sundry families, the victims of these persecutions, had commenced reaching the Mexican territory in utter destitution."

Somewhat later, beginning with 1859, the Rio Grande border became a scene of conflict between the settled communities and an army of desperadoes. Cortina was a Mexican who, while confining himself to civilized pursuits, was a stockman, but, finding that occupation desultory, he turned cattle thief and bandit, gathered a crowd of similarly-minded ruffians about him, and later, under the guise of carrying on a war for the defense of his Mexican kindred oppressed by American rivalry, led his forces against the armed soldiery and set law and order at defiance. In his role as protector and champion of his people during the Cart war, he gave greater dignity to his predatory operations than they deserve so that the hostilities under his leadership have been distinguished as "Cortina's rebellion."

In July, 1859, Cortina and some of his followers got into trouble at Brownsville, and in September he led an attack against the town, took possession, killed one or two men, terrorized the inhabitants, and then retired. He issued a proclamation of his purposes in engaging in hostilities against the Americans, and declared he would relieve the state of all enemies of the Mexican inhabitants. A little later his lieutenant was captured by the Texans and hanged, an act that aroused the bandit leader to vengeance. Towards the latter part of October the American troops, reinforced by a Mexican company from Matamoras, attacked Cortina, but were discomfited. This was followed by an ambuscade of an American company, and for a time the Mexican seemed to be master of the situation. In the latter part of November another ill-organized attack

of the Americans failed, and Cortina's forces rapidly increased. But in December a company of United States regulars and a troop of Texas Rangers captured one of Cortina's camps, and then rapidly followed him to the vicinity of Rio Grande City, where he was completely defeated and driven out of the state. This was not accomplished, however, until a large area of country had been devastated and many lives lost.

## CHAPTER XXV

### THE CIVIL WAR PERIOD

It was the happy lot of Texas that she lay outside the main path of destruction wrought by the Civil war. The lives of thousands of her sons and the resources of the new but vast empire were offered for the southern cause. While the youth of the state were in camp and fortress in other states, the aged and weak, with the women and children, were engaged in the equally important task of protecting the homes and institutions of the state and producing the bread and clothing and equipment so much needed in other parts of the Confederacy. The borders of the state were blockaded and harassed by contending armies, but the mighty battles of the war and the desolating invasions of hostile troops were outside of Texas. For this reason Texas recuperated more rapidly than the states which were the main theatre of the war. At the same time the scourge fell heavily here, and if enterprise was not entirely destroyed as in other states, it was at least paralyzed for years, so that the effects of the war can be traced in every locality and in every social activity.

Texas was a logical slave state. Her geographical latitude, her climate, her industrial opportunities aligned her among those divisions of the world which were the last to break away from an institution that had been fastened upon both barbarism and civilization from times unrecorded. The institution had its roots in the past, tradition sanctioned it; to the southern people it was regarded as an indispensable condition of industry. Its abolition by a part of the nation which had only theoretical interest in the subject was a violation of local privileges and pride which could never be tolerated. Thus the sectional issue, originating in the slavery questions, reached its crisis under a quite different form, namely, whether the individual states might dissolve the federal compact and by seceding regain their original sovereign powers.

When it came to deciding whether a long-established institution in

the commonwealth should have its foundations threatened by the general government, and whether the rights and powers of a state over its internal affairs should be subordinated to the will of the federal union, the previous history of Texas indicates her natural attitude to the issue. Twenty-five years before, the war of independence had been fought against the despotism of a too strongly centralized government. Those who fought at San Jacinto would naturally resent what they regarded as undue usurpation of authority by the government at Washington. Texas on becoming a nation legalized slavery. Having voluntarily surrendered her national powers on entering the Union, she had accepted statehood with an implied guarantee of the institution of slavery. Hence it appeared that Texas, of all the southern states, was most justified in renouncing the act of union when the privileges and guarantees accompanying that act were about to be withdrawn.

The election of Hardin R. Runnels, the Democratic candidate, over Sam Houston, in 1857, by a majority of about nine thousand, was the first definite sign of the approaching conflict in Texas. In 1820 Henry Clay's Missouri Compromise had forbidden slavery north of latitude 36 degrees and 30 minutes—the southern boundary of Missouri. In 1846 the doctrine was promulgated in the Wilmot Proviso that slavery should not be extended into the territory annexed from Mexico. In 1850 the venerable Clay again compromised so that California might be admitted a free state and the organization of the other territory south of the original compromise line might be effected without restrictions as to slavery. Then in 1854 came Senator Douglas with his famous "squatter sovereignty," which practically annulled the Missouri Compromise and applied, in the organization of the territories of Kansas and Nebraska, the doctrine of local option as to slavery. About the same time was issued the decision in the Dred Scott case by which slaves were declared to be the same class of property as horses or cattle and therefore could be taken from slave into free states without losing their character of slaves. Following the squatter sovereignty enactment ensued the contest between the slave and anti-slave elements for the possession of Kansas, with all the bloody and disgraceful border warfare which eventuated in that territory entering the Union as a free state.

As a result of the Kansas controversy, Texas first expressed an official attitude toward the great sectional issues. Governor Runnels, and advocated the doctrine of secession. A state Democratic convention in his message of January, 1858, described the state of affairs in Kansas

about the same time proposed an election of delegates to a convention of the southern states, and declared that the rights of individual states were being threatened by the federal government. February 16, 1858, a joint resolution of the legislature, which recited the great danger threatened by the Kansas situation, provided for the appointment of delegates by the governor to a convention of the southern states whenever a majority of said states should decide that the crisis demanded such a convention.

The Runnels administration represented the extremes of slavery extension in Texas, and many of its supporters favored a resumption of the slave trade. This radical element did not compose a majority in the state, and in the following election in 1859 the conservative party rallied around Houston—who had been previously defeated largely because of his opposition to the Kansas-Nebraska bill—and elected him by a large majority to the office of governor.

By the time Houston was inaugurated the north and the south were so embittered that compromise and peace were no longer possible. Kansas had come into the Union as a slave state, John Brown's raid had provoked indignation throughout the south, and in December, 1859, South Carolina's legislature affirmed the right of any state to secede from the federation of states, and issued a call for a convention of the slaveholding states.

In his message to the legislature concerning these South Carolina resolutions, Houston argued vehemently against nullification and secession, asserting that separation from the Union would not cure the evils from which the south suffered, and remonstrated against sending delegates to the proposed convention. The debate over this message resulted in two sets of resolutions, which expressed the divergent courses of general opinion in Texas before the war. The majority resolutions declared that the Union should be preserved but that federal aggression on the separate states was intolerable; deprecated the black abolition movement in the north which might, by obtaining control of the government, use federal laws for the abolition of slavery; and that, if necessary, organized resistance among the southern states should combat northern aggression. The minority resolutions opposed premature action among the southern states; believing that the north had not as yet violated any of the constitutional rights of the southern states; and asserted the principle that only when the federal government should prove unable to protect the individual

states in their inherent rights would there be cause for the dissolution of the Union.

In 1860, by the disruption of the Democratic party, Abraham Lincoln was elected president, and politically the north became dominant in the nation. The secession tide running so strong in the south, now reached its flood. Extreme radicalism and disunionism, hitherto a strong minority only, now gathered strength and attracted the support of all the elements except the stanchest conservatives and unionists of Houston's stamp. Within two months after the national election all the southern states east of Texas, South Carolina leading the way, had seceded.

It was Houston's opposition that delayed the secession movement in Texas. The legislature was not in session, and the governor persistently refused to call it together. In the absence of the legislature the chief executive was practically the entire state government, and he used his position to combat the approaching crisis as long as he could. Finally, in December, by extra-legal means, the people were asked to elect delegates to a state convention to meet at Austin, January 28, 1861. Though this convention was constituted in an informal manner, it was clearly a popular measure. Under these circumstances Houston yielded to the importunities of the political leaders and called a session of the legislature to meet one week before the convention assembled. The legislature when it met disregarded Houston's counsel for moderation, and sanctioned the calling of the convention, declaring it to be empowered to act for the people.

On February 1st, the convention passed an ordinance of secession, by a vote of 166 to 7, and referred the measure to a general election for approval. February 23d the ordinance was accepted by the people in a vote of forty-four thousand to thirteen thousand. The vote was counted in the legislature on the same day that Lincoln was inaugurated president. The convention also appointed a committee of safety and delegates to the Confederate convention at Montgomery, Alabama.

Houston was throughout consistently opposed to all these steps. A few days before the secession ordinance was submitted to the vote of the state, he delivered a speech in Galveston in which he pictured the horrors of civil war and the ultimate triumph of the north over the south, but in his peroration expressed his determination to stand by "my state, right or wrong." That he could thus talk directly in the face of such a storm of secession shows the esteem in which he was held by the people, who could tolerate his candor and integrity even in the heat of their contrary

passions. On March 16th Houston was summoned before the convention to take the oath of allegiance to the Confederate government, and on his refusal the office of governor was declared vacant, and the lieutenant governor, Edward Clark, installed in his stead. Houston protested to the legislature and the people, but the former sanctioned his removal. He acquiesced in this judgment and remained in retirement until his death, which occurred in 1863.

Thus Texas was aligned with the states that withdrew entirely from the federal Union, and for over four years her troops bore a gallant share in the strife that all but wrecked the nation. Resources and men were sacrificed without stint, Texas furnishing the names of many illustrious leaders and organizations to the annals of this war. The broad track of the war was down the east side of the Mississippi, across the center of the Confederacy to the sea, and in the Virginias. Texas was not in this path. No northern invasion of her territory was permanently effective. During most of the war this state was the one reliable source of communication and of supplies for the entire south. The federal squadrons soon had the Atlantic and gulf ports of the other states thoroughly blockaded and all commerce cut off, while the armies ravaged and desolated inland from river to sea. But the long line of Texas coast and the numerous harbors could not be effectively guarded. Blockade runners were constantly slipping in with provisions or out with loads of cotton and other products. Nothing could prevent the trade across the Rio Grande with the states of Mexico, although the width of the frontier presented an obstacle to this traffic. Except in the few places where the enemy secured a foothold, Texas experienced little of the ruinous havoc of battle and invasion, though the people endured the other hardships and poverty in common with the rest of the south.

Before the actual outbreak of hostilities, the committee of safety had conferred with General Twiggs, who was in command of the federal forces of the state, but was a southern sympathizer. He indicated his willingness to surrender his post at San Antonio provided a show of force was made. Col. Ben McCulloch, therefore, on being assigned to command at San Antonio, collected a volunteer force, appeared before the city, and received the surrender of the garrison. Over a million dollars' worth of property and munitions were thus delivered into the hands of the Confederates. All the other forts in Texas were similarly surrendered or abandoned, Colonel Ford taking possession of Fort Brown opposite Matamoras, commanding the Rio Grande border. By Novem-

ber, 1861, fifteen thousand soldiers had been enrolled in Texas for service in the war.

The governors of Texas during the Civil war were Francis R. Lubbock, who was elected in 1861, and Pendleton Murrah, elected in 1863.

In the summer of 1861 Texas troops took a prominent part in the movement to gain New Mexico for the Confederacy. Lieut. Col. John R. Baylor crossed the Rio Grande into the territory and captured a force of seven hundred federals. In the following February General Sibley, commanding the Confederate army, met and defeated the Union troops under General Canby at Val Verde. Santa Fe and Albuquerque then fell into the possession of the former. But the invasion as a whole was unsuccessful, and the battle at Apache Canyon repulsed the aggressive character of the movement. The Confederates then retreated down the Rio Grande, and by July, 1862, the territory was entirely abandoned, after many Texans had lost their lives in the campaign.

The border defenses of Texas were as a rule too strong for the federal armies to penetrate. In September, 1862, a naval force captured Corpus Christi, but occupied it only a brief time. In October of the same year the port of Galveston was captured by the federal squadron. During the rest of the war the island was almost depopulated, most of the inhabitants seeking shelter on the mainland. On New Year's day of 1863 General McGruder, by a combined land and sea attack, destroyed or captured three of the vessels in the harbor, drove the others out to sea, and by a successful assault on the fort compelled the surrender of the garrison. For the rest of the war Galveston remained in the possession of the Confederates, although the port was closely blockaded.

A few weeks later the blockade of Sabine Pass was temporarily raised as a result of the capture of two Union vessels by two Confederate boats after a hot conflict, and thereafter Sabine City was protected by a strong fort. In the latter part of 1863 General Banks undertook to carry out his plan for the conquest of Texas. The expedition was to land at Sabine Pass and carry on operations from that point. On the morning of September 8th the gunboats attacked the fort. Then ensued the battle of Sabine Pass. Two of the gunboats were destroyed, over a hundred men killed and many more captured, while the garrison of two hundred Texans, only forty-two of whom participated in the battle, came out almost unscathed. The transports then returned to New Orleans and the expedition was abandoned.



Late in 1863 General Banks directed a large naval and land expedition against the Texas coast and got control of nearly the entire line except at Galveston and the mouth of the Brazos. This occupation lasted only a few months, the blockade by sea continuing as the only restriction on the activities of the coast.

In March, 1864, General Banks and General Steele co-operated in what is known as the Red River Expedition with the intention of capturing Shreveport and entering Texas from the northeast. But their army met a decisive defeat at Sabine Crossroads, and their advance was effectually checked. This was the last considerable campaign against Texas during the war. In the battle of Sabine Crossroads and in the following federal victories at Pleasant Grove and Pleasant Hill, the Texans played a prominent part. It was at Pleasant Hill that Sweitzer's regiment of Texas cavalry, to the number of four hundred, hurled themselves desperately against the enemy's line, and hardly more than ten of them escaped death or wounds.

There befell Texas and her people the usual train of evils resulting from war. Loyalty was the prevailing feeling through the state, and those who gave active opposition to the war were comparatively few. It was a conflict that aroused the bitterest animosities among those who differed in opinion. That was true in the north wherever southern sympathizers secretly or openly espoused their anti-union convictions; doubly rancorous was the enmity in the border states where former neighbors and friends ranged themselves on opposite sides; and likewise in Texas, the conservative unionists who did not actively support the Confederacy had to endure opprobrium, to escape which many voluntarily left the state.

Many who voted against secession afterwards gave their active service in behalf of their state. Yet there remained, especially in southwest Texas, a considerable element of Union men. Along the Rio Grande, in and around the towns of San Antonio, Austin and Fredericksburg, and in the counties of Austin, Fayette and Colorado, the Union sentiment was very strong. In 1862 was organized the First Texas (Union) Cavalry, of which E. J. Davis was colonel. This regiment operated along the Mexican border and at the mouth of the Rio Grande, and on several occasions came in conflict with the Confederate forces.

The loyalty of the Texans was severely tested by the exigencies of war. With certain classes excepted, all able-bodied males from eighteen to forty-five years were liable to military service, and as the war pro-

gressed and the resources of the south became taxed to the utmost, conscription was employed to renew the depleted ranks. In November, 1863, the governor reported that ninety thousand Texans were in the Confederate service, and when it is recalled that the number of voters at any one election had never equaled seventy thousand the sacrifice and devotion of Texas to the southern cause can be better understood. The state being the great supply center of the Confederacy, not only was the tax upon all exports very high but large amounts of cotton had to be exchanged for state bonds and thus go directly to the support of the government. And so, though the year 1863 was a banner year in the production of corn and cotton, practically all the surplus went to keep alive the waning vitality of other sections.

With other southern states, Texas suffered from monetary depreciation, the Confederate notes becoming almost worthless before the close of the war. The most strenuous efforts of the state government failed to keep the paper issues at par, and trade as far as possible was carried on by the old methods of barter and exchange.

In the meantime the war was approaching its end. The armies of Grant and Sherman had broken the back of the Confederacy by their wide sweep down the Mississippi valley and through the center of the south, and eventually came the fall of the capital of Richmond, the surrender of Lee and Johnston, and the final quenchings of the flames of civil strife. Of interest is the fact that Texas was the last skirmish ground in the great struggle. General Kirby Smith continued the resistance in Texas for a month after the eastern armies had surrendered. General Sheridan was sent at the head of a large division of the federal army to subdue this last stronghold of the Confederacy, but before he reached the state Smith surrendered, on May 26th, to General Canby. On May 13th was fired the last shot of the war. Curiously enough, the engagement took place at the old battlefield of Palo Alto, where Taylor won his victory over the Mexicans. The conflict, which only deserves the name of a skirmish, ended in a reverse for the federals, so that the first and last battles of the war were Confederate victories. And also, as was the case in the war of 1812, the final engagement was fought after the virtual conclusion of hostilities. But happily for all concerned, peace came, and in the months that followed the veterans came home from the east to take up the heavy responsibilities involved in the restoration of industry and political reconstruction.

## CHAPTER XXVI

### RECONSTRUCTION

On the final triumph of Union arms, Governor Murrah retired to Mexico, and General Granger of the United States army became military commander of the state. In the meantime A. J. Hamilton was appointed by the president as provisional governor. On May 29, 1865, a general amnesty was granted, with certain exceptions, to all persons who had taken part in the war. Boards were appointed by the provisional governor to register all loyal voters and thus put the political machinery of the state in operation. Governor Hamilton showed much generosity toward former political offenders, and pursued the policy of reconstruction approved by President Johnson.

Then followed the unfortunate conflict in the national government between the president and congress. In the bitterness engendered by the struggle between the executive and the legislative branch, the measures for reconstruction of the south became characterized by increasing harshness, prejudice, and the blindness of political theorizing. By the thirteenth amendment, nearly four hundred thousand ignorant and helpless, though politically free, negroes were added to Texas citizenship. For several years this element, controlled by carpetbag politicians, together with the least respectable of the white citizens, ruled the state. Although Texas did not suffer the same organized political plundering as some other southern states, yet the course of events following the war was so exasperating and the progress of reconstruction was so slow that of the ten seceding states Texas was the last to be readmitted.

January 8, 1866, were elected delegates to a state constitutional convention. By April the labors of this convention were completed and the constitution was ratified by the people on June 25. The constitution was largely a duplication of the organic law adopted when Texas became a state, with such changes and amendments as the results of the war made necessary. It recognized the abolition of slavery, extending civil

and political privileges to the freed-men, declared the principle of secession obsolete, repudiated the southern war debt, and assumed the proper share of United States taxes levied since the date of secession. With the ratification of the constitution, J. W. Throckmorton was elected to the office of governor.

The first session of the legislature took up the question of approving the fourteenth amendment to the federal constitution. The third section of this amendment, by its exclusion from state and national offices of all persons who had before the war taken the oath of office and subsequently engaged in rebellion, would have operated to keep, for years to come, the best citizens of the state from the direction of its affairs. The amendment was accordingly almost unanimously rejected in Texas, as it was by most of the other southern states, although it was approved and became part of the constitution through adoption by the northern states. This legislature also resolved that the presence of United States troops was no longer needed in the interior of the state, and should be withdrawn for the protection of the frontier against the Indians or entirely removed from the state.

Thus Texas seemed to be restored to her place in the Union. But Congress decided that the president's plan of reconstruction was too liberal, and by three acts of 1867 provided for a "more efficient government of the rebel states." Five military districts were created, Texas and Louisiana forming the fifth and General Sheridan being appointed commander of the district. It was resolved that the Confederate states should not participate in the national government until each adopted the fourteenth amendment and allowed the negroes full share in the reorganization of government—from which reorganization, however, many of the best white citizens were excluded by the third section of the fourteenth amendment.

The alleged disloyalty of the south now brought a train of oppressive evils. The "ironclad oath" of allegiance, which was required of all who sought the exercise of civic rights, was an intolerable condition, and rather than accept it thousands voluntarily disfranchised themselves. General Sheridan removed Governor Throckmorton for the reason that he was "an impediment to reconstruction," former Governor Pease being appointed in his stead. The few men who held the offices were not representative, had no sympathy with Texans, and too often were actuated by personal greed. The Freedman's Bureau, organized to assist the freed negroes, by lack of tact, ignorance and undue interference in be-

half of the blacks, helped to widen the breach between the southerners and the negroes, although the industrial prosperity of the country manifestly depended upon harmonious co-operation between the two races.

During the reconstruction period the fifth military district had several commanders. After Sheridan's removal, General Hancock was placed in command, but his leniency was as displeasing to Congress as his predecessor's harshness was to President Johnson, and he was displaced by General Reynolds, and the latter in turn by General Canby.

After the registration of the qualified voters had been completed as directed by the commander of the district, the election of a new constitutional convention was held. This convention met at Austin in June, 1868. Owing to the factional character of the body, it was only after protracted debate and much wrangling that the scheme of government was drafted. One party in the convention wished the constitution of 1866 and all acts of the legislature subsequent to the act of secession to be considered nullified, *ab initio*, and thus that faction was named the "Ab Initios." The liberal and the radical factions also disagreed as to whether the franchise should extend to those who had sustained the Confederate cause. The liberals finally triumphed, but the convention ended in extreme disorder, without formal adjournment, and the completed draft of the constitution was drawn up after the convention had dissolved and at the order of General Canby.

This new constitution was finally submitted to the people in November, 1869, and adopted by a large majority. At the same time state officers and congressmen were elected, Edmund J. Davis being chosen governor and entering office the following January. The legislature convened February 8, 1870, and at once ratified the thirteenth and fourteenth amendments to the federal constitution and elected United States senators. Reconstruction was now complete, and on March 30, 1870, President Grant signed the act readmitting Texas to the Union, and on the following day her senators and representatives took their seats in Congress. A few days later the powers lodged with the military officials were remitted to the civil authorities, all but several small garrisons of federal troops were withdrawn from the state, and Governor Davis, who had previously acted only in a provisional capacity, became the actual executive of the state—thus concluding the reconstruction movement.

Several years passed, however, before political power was restored to its proper owners. During the early seventies, the minority Republican party controlled the state. There was a Republican governor, Repub-

licans held the majority of offices, and the better classes of citizenship were not represented in the government. But the coercion of reconstruction times was now past, and at the next election the natural strength of the Democratic party asserted itself. In November, 1872, the Democrats secured control of the legislature and elected all the congressmen, but the governor, having been chosen for four years, continued in office till 1873.

The new legislature at once instituted some desired reforms, and by passing a measure for the reapportionment of state representation it brought about a special state election for 1873. At this election the Democrats were everywhere triumphant, Richard Coke being the victorious candidate for governor. Mr. Davis, the incumbent of the office, charged that the law under which the election had been held was unconstitutional, and refused to surrender his office.

In January, 1874, the legislature met and formally inaugurated Governor Coke. While the Davis government held the lower floor of the capitol, the new legislature took possession of the upper part of the state house. The Travis Rifles guarded the legislature, while the Davis party had a company of negro soldiers. For a time the two parties contested the possession of the capitol, and fighting and bloodshed were only averted by the discretion of the Democratic leaders, who used every effort to avoid a repetition of the military regime in Texas. President Grant refused to lend the aid of the military in supporting the Davis administration, and as it was hopeless to resist popular opinion without federal backing Davis soon gave up the fight and turned over the records of his office to Coke.

The last stigma of the reconstruction period was removed by the adoption of the constitution of 1876. The constitution of 1869 was defective, and its unpopularity was further increased by the fact that it was largely a product of the reconstructionists. Accordingly, in March, 1875, the legislature ordered the question of calling a constitutional convention to be submitted to the people, who returned a large majority in its favor. The delegates completed the new constitution in November, and in February, 1876, it was ratified by the people. At the general election held on the same day Richard Coke was re-elected governor. The new constitution was purged of all the restrictions and references to the past which had marked the former document, and with the adoption of this organic law Texas began its modern era of political progress.

**CENTRAL AND WESTERN  
TEXAS**





Central and Western Texas, the region which extends from the upper Brazos valley country across the uplands to the limits of the Staked Plains, has a history that is none the less remarkable, because it has been made within the last quarter of a century. Within the easy memory of men now living, the upper Brazos valley was the advanced line of settlement. The city of Waco was a frontier village without a railroad less than forty years ago; just thirty years have passed since the Texas & Pacific railroad operated its trains as far west as Weatherford. West of these points a few cattlemen and sheepmen had ventured, but the greater part of the ranges was still a feeding ground for the buffalo. Railroads, modern stock farming, towns and cities and the institutions and facilities of advanced civilization are all the products of a quarter century.

However, in central Texas, especially in the counties adjacent to the Brazos river, the pioneers had built their homes at a period which is now comparatively ancient. Central Texas comprises a few of the counties which were in the fringe of settlement made while Texas was a republic. During that epoch several enterprising colonizers had attempted to found settlements on what was somewhat indefinitely called "The Upper Brazos," comprising the region of Milam, Robertson, Falls, and McLennan counties. Sterling C. Robertson's Nashville colony, described on other pages, partly occupied this country at the time of the Texas revolution, in 1836. The "Falls of the Brazos," in Falls county, was often referred to in the current news of the time, although it was recognized as being on the extreme frontier, far distant from the principal towns and habitations that composed the true colonial Texas. The vicissitudes experienced by the early settlers in this locality are detailed in connection with the individual sketches of the counties above named.

The beginnings of permanent settlement of central Texas were almost coincident with the admission of Texas to the Union in 1846. Indian hostilities, which the poverty of the Texas republic had been powerless to prevent, had again and again interfered with the frontier settlers. An-

other cause that delayed immigration was the litigation over land titles in a large portion of the Brazos valley. Most of these contests were adjusted about 1850, so that Milam and other counties began to receive their proper share of immigrants.

Under the federal government military posts were established at various points along the frontier. Fort Graham on the Brazos in what is now Hill county, Fort Worth on one of the forks of the Trinity, and Fort Mason and other garrisons on the western courses of the Colorado



McLENNAN COUNTY COURT HOUSE

formed the cordon of protection which the United States interposed between civilization and barbarism. These posts, together with the State Rangers and the militia composed of the settlers, gave a degree of security which was more favorable to permanent occupation. Under these conditions the counties of the Brazos valley were settled, and most of them organized before the period of the Civil war.

In 1846 there were very few settlements north of Milam and Robertson counties. The town of Dallas had received its first pioneers, and a

few families were living among the cross timbers in this region of northern Texas. But Dallas was isolated by many miles of uninhabited Trinity valley from the settlements to the south.

The progress of settlement is illustrated in the successive organization of county governments. A great number of the counties of Texas were formed, as to boundaries and name, by the legislature some years before a sufficient population had settled to justify the organization of local government. The extreme western portion of the state was blocked off into county areas many years ago, though in a few cases the counties are unorganized at the present time. The organization of a county usually proves the existence of a group of permanent settlers at the time, so that it is possible to follow the progress of settlement by observing the time of organization in the various counties.

The first of the counties under consideration to possess local government were Milam and Robertson. As explained elsewhere, Milam originally comprised a vast region now apportioned among a dozen or more central Texas counties. It is usually named as one of the original Texas counties, brought into existence at the close of the revolution, although its organization was not maintained continuously through the troublous period from 1836 to 1845. Robertson county was organized in 1838, having been formerly a part of Milam county. These were the only counties in the central Texas region to be organized while Texas was a republic.

Beginning with 1846, the first year Texas was a state, county organizations followed rapidly, and in fifteen years the territory of the Brazos and Colorado valleys was permanently occupied and divided into counties with separate local governments. The successive dates of organization of county government in this region are given as follows:

Navarro county—July 13, 1846.  
 Limestone county—August 18, 1846.  
 Williamson county—August 7, 1848.  
 Bell county—August 1, 1850.  
 Falls county—August 5, 1850.  
 McLennan county—August 5, 1850.  
 Tarrant county—August 5, 1850.  
 Hill county—May 14, 1853.  
 Coryell county—March 4, 1854.  
 Johnson county—August 7, 1854.

Burnet county—August 7, 1854.  
 Bosque county—August 7, 1854.  
 Parker county—March 1, 1856.  
 Lampasas county—March 10, 1856.  
 Comanche county—March 17, 1856.  
 San Saba county—May 3, 1856.  
 Llano county—August 4, 1856.  
 Erath county—August 4, 1856.  
 Brown county—March 2, 1857.  
 Palo Pinto county—April 27, 1857.  
 Mason county—August 2, 1858.  
 Hamilton county—August 2, 1858.

These twenty odd counties comprise that portion of central Texas that was permanently settled before the Civil war. Several counties of later organization were included in the original area of those named above.

The population and degree of development varied in these counties, and those on the western frontier, Palo Pinto, Erath, Comanche, Brown, San Saba and Mason, were very sparsely inhabited, living conditions were primitive, industry was pastoral rather than agricultural, and for the greater part of two decades following the country and the people were able to accomplish little more than maintain their precarious foothold on the western frontier.

The counties of central and western Texas organized since those above named are as follows:

Coleman county—October 6, 1864.  
 Hood county—December 25, 1866.  
 Menard county—May 8, 1871.  
 Pecos county—June 13, 1872.  
 Shackelford county—September 12, 1874.  
 Tom Green county—January 5, 1875.  
 Somervell county—April 12, 1875.  
 Stephens county—1876.  
 McCulloch county—1876.  
 Callahan county—July 3, 1877.  
 Taylor county—July 3, 1878.  
 Concho county—March 11, 1879.  
 Runnels county—February 16, 1880.

Mitchell county—January 10, 1881.

Nolan county—June 10, 1881.

Jones county—June 13, 1881.

Howard county—June 15, 1882.

Scurry county—June 28, 1884.

Martin county—November 4, 1884.

Reeves county—November 4, 1884.

Midland county—June 15, 1885.

Fisher county—April 27, 1886.

Mills county—September 12, 1887.

Irion county—April 16, 1889.

Coke county—April 23, 1889.

Ector county—January 6, 1891.

Borden county—March 17, 1891.

Sterling county—June 3, 1891.

Crockett county—July 14, 1891.

Ward county—March 29, 1892.

Glasscock county—March 28, 1893.

Schleicher county—July 9, 1901.

Reagan county—April 20, 1903.

Dawson county—1905.

The decades of the seventies and eighties witnessed the real settlement of western Texas. During the seventies the buffalo were finally hunted from the plains, and quickly following them came the great herds of domestic stock and the old-time stockmen. For a few years these latter were supreme lords of the domain of grass-covered prairies.

Not far behind was another instrument of progress—the railroad—which invaded the cattlemen's country and, while co-operating with the stock industry, it also served to introduce the permanent settlers. More than any other factor, the railroad has made west Texas a home for people. Where the railroad has penetrated counties have been organized, towns have been built, fences have divided the prairie from the sown fields. In the regions untouched by railroads lie the few unorganized counties of the state. Along the Texas & Pacific, which was constructed in 1880-81; along the G., C. & S. F., which reached San Angelo in 1888, are the counties which were first and most substantially developed in this western region. Wherever new railroads have been built, or are now under construction, they are the means of transforming the plains into

farms and bringing workers and home-builders to dwell in this once isolated part of the world.

What the railroad has done for the country, and how, in turn, the railroad has benefited by growth of population and industry, is illustrated in an interesting way by some comparative statistics concerning the Texas & Pacific. On the eastern division of this road, from Shreveport to Fort Worth, the gross earnings of traffic increased from \$3,000,000 in 1892 to



STEAM PLOW CUTTING 21 FURROWS

\$5,200,000 in 1909, or about 75 per cent. But on the Rio Grande division, from Fort Worth to El Paso, the increase of gross earnings was from \$1,700,000 in 1892 to \$5,250,000 in 1909, or more than 300 per cent. Thus, measured by railroad traffic, the west Texas region traversed by the T. & P. Railroad has developed four times faster in the same period of time than the eastern tributary country.

Twenty years ago the principal tonnage carried out of west Texas consisted of live stock. The production of the great staples of corn, wheat and cotton was then relatively insignificant. Perhaps the most noteworthy fact in the history of western Texas is the manner in which its inhabitants have adapted the soil and climate to the production of the standard crops. West of the Brazos valley cotton growing was hardly attempted until within the last quarter of a century. Callahan county only twenty years ago began contributing a few bales to the state's crop, but in 1903 raised about 12,500 bales. Cotton is now a crop practically throughout western Texas. Corn, wheat, vegetables and fruits have a similar history. Years of effort have demonstrated that by proper cultivation, selection of crops and conservation of soil moisture these lands, once deemed arid, have tremendous possibilities of production and value.

Equally remarkable is the record of west Texas in the upbuilding of towns and the acquisition of the modern facilities of business and domestic welfare. The slow stages of growth and improvement which characterize the towns and cities with half a century or more of history did not occur here. A west Texas city that was founded in the last quarter century often is more progressive, better improved, than some of the cities of similar size in the oldest portions of the state. Brownwood, Abilene, San Angelo and other conspicuous examples have water works, electric lighting, paved streets, efficient municipal organizations, schools and other institutions as good as are found elsewhere in the state.

In recent years the business leaders of the larger towns have united their endeavors and ideas under the plan of commercial clubs, and the work of some of these has been particularly efficient. The governing ideal of the commercial club is to promote the prosperity of its community and the state in general, and labors for this end along the concrete lines of producing wealth, either by stimulating home industry and capital or by inducing the immigration of settlers and the investment of outside capital, and by promoting the building of railroads and the establishment of other large industrial agencies. Often due to the work of these commercial bodies, individual cities have expanded trade facilities, secured new transportation lines, led the way in municipal improvement, and, as a special feature of commercial club activity, have brought the advantages of particular cities and localities to the knowledge and attention of the world at large.

The figures of the last census permit an interesting study to be made of the movement of population over the central and west Texas region.

It is apparent that this portion of Texas is in a transition period. Under the economic conditions which still prevail to a large degree, the limit of population is soon reached, and the overplus of growth and immigration spread out into the yet unoccupied areas. Thus it is that the older counties of the central Texas region have during the last decade gained very little in population and in some cases show an actual decrease. At the same time the west Texas counties have exhibited all the characteristics of a newly discovered country. In most of them, at least every other inhabitant has come in during the last decade, and in some of them the residents who were counted there at the preceding census are in the scantiest minority. The railroads, the towns, the activities are all as new as the people, and are often equal or superior to the similar facilities of the older regions.

In the development of a new country, population figures are reliable data of progress. Without people no country becomes a factor in economic production, and hence has little relation to the welfare of the world in general. But once a region is "settled up"—that is, possesses a population averaging in number that of similar localities elsewhere—its prosperity depends on other factors than mere numbers. An ancient philosopher stated the matter concisely, as follows, using the word city in the sense of any political community: "They judge of the size of a city by the number of its inhabitants; whereas they ought to regard not their number but their power. A city, too, like an individual, has a work to do; and that city which is to be adapted to the fulfillment of its work is to be deemed greatest."

Applying these generalizations, it will be found that some of the central Texas counties that have remained stationary in population have nevertheless advanced remarkably in wealth, in diversification of industry, in improvement of living conditions. Bell county, whose population increase of only 8 per cent was more than absorbed by the two largest towns, presents one of the fairest and most productive fields of rural improvement and prosperity in the state. The new era of intensive rather than extensive enterprise has only recently begun in this and adjacent counties, and during the next decade the results will be apparent not only in an enormous increase of wealth and living facilities but also in growth of population, for it is the function of such progress to enable more people to enjoy its advantages.

Following is a tabulated statement showing the population of the various central and west Texas counties during the past decades:



Counties.	1910.	1900.	1890.	1880.	1870.	1860.
Andrews .....	975	87	24	.....	.....	.....
Bell .....	49,186	45,535	33,377	20,518	9,771	4,799
Borden .....	1,386	776	222	35	.....	.....
Bosque .....	19,013	17,390	14,224	11,217	4,981	2,005
Brown .....	22,935	16,019	11,421	8,414	544	244
Burnet .....	10,755	10,528	10,747	6,855	3,688	2,487
Callahan .....	12,973	8,768	5,457	3,453	.....	.....
Childress .....	9,538	2,138	1,175	25	.....	.....
Coke .....	6,412	3,430	2,059	.....	.....	.....
Coleman .....	22,618	10,077	6,112	3,603	347	.....
Comanche .....	27,186	23,009	15,608	8,608	1,001	709
Concho .....	6,654	1,427	1,065	800	.....	.....
Coryell .....	21,703	21,308	16,873	10,924	4,124	2,666
Crane .....	331	51	15	.....	.....	.....
Dawson .....	2,320	37	29	24	.....	281
Eastland .....	23,421	17,971	10,373	4,855	88	99
Ector .....	1,178	381	224	.....	.....	.....
Erath .....	32,095	29,966	21,594	11,796	1,801	2,425
Falls .....	35,649	33,342	20,706	16,240	9,851	3,614
Fisher .....	12,596	3,708	2,996	136	.....	.....
Floyd .....	4,638	2,020	529	3	.....	.....
Foard .....	5,726	1,568	.....	.....	.....	.....
Freestone .....	20,557	18,910	15,987	14,921	8,139	6,881
Gaines .....	1,255	55	68	8	.....	.....
Glasscock .....	1,143	286	208	.....	.....	.....
Hamilton .....	15,315	13,520	9,313	6,365	733	489
Hill .....	46,760	41,355	27,583	16,554	7,453	3,653
Hockley .....	137	44	.....	.....	.....	.....
Hood .....	10,008	9,146	7,614	6,125	2,585	.....
Howard .....	8,881	2,528	1,210	50	.....	.....
Irion .....	1,283	848	870	.....	.....	.....
Johnson .....	34,460	33,819	22,313	17,911	4,923	4,305
Jones .....	24,299	7,053	3,797	546	.....	.....
Knox .....	9,625	2,322	1,134	77	.....	.....
Lampasas .....	9,532	8,625	7,584	5,421	1,344	1,028
Limestone .....	34,621	32,573	21,678	16,246	8,591	4,537
Llano .....	6,520	7,301	6,772	4,962	1,379	1,101
Loving .....	249	33	3	.....	.....	.....
Lynn .....	1,713	17	24	9	.....	.....

Counties.	1910.	1900.	1890.	1880.	1870.	1860.
McCulloch .....	13,405	3,960	3,217	1,533	173	.....
McLennan .....	73,250	59,772	39,204	26,934	13,500	6,206
Martin .....	1,549	332	264	12	.....	.....
Mason .....	5,683	5,573	5,180	2,655	678	630
Menard .....	2,707	2,011	1,215	1,239	667	.....
Midland .....	3,464	1,741	1,033	.....	.....	.....
Milam .....	36,780	39,666	24,773	18,659	8,984	5,175
Mills .....	9,694	7,851	5,493	.....	.....	.....
Mitchell .....	8,956	2,855	2,059	117	.....	.....
Navarro .....	47,070	43,374	26,373	21,702	8,879	5,996
Nolan .....	11,999	2,611	1,573	640	.....	.....
Palo Pinto .....	19,506	12,291	8,320	5,885	.....	1,524
Parker .....	26,331	25,823	21,682	15,870	4,186	4,213
Pecos .....	2,071	2,360	1,326	1,807	.....	.....
Reagan .....	392	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Reeves .....	4,392	1,847	1,247	.....	.....	.....
Robertson .....	27,454	31,480	26,506	22,383	9,990	4,997
Runnels .....	20,858	5,379	3,193	980	.....	.....
San Saba .....	11,245	7,569	6,641	5,324	1,425	913
Scurry .....	10,924	4,158	1,415	102	.....	.....
Shackelford .....	4,201	2,461	2,012	2,037	455	44
Somervell .....	3,931	3,498	3,419	2,649	.....	.....
Stephens .....	7,980	6,466	4,926	4,725	330	230
Sterling .....	1,493	1,127	.....	.....	.....	.....
Tarrant .....	108,572	52,376	41,142	24,671	5,788	6,020
Taylor .....	26,293	10,499	6,957	1,736	.....	.....
Tom Green .....	17,882	6,804	5,152	3,615	.....	.....
Upton .....	501	48	52	.....	.....	.....
Ward .....	2,289	1,451	77	.....	.....	.....
Williamson .....	42,228	38,072	25,909	15,155	6,368	4,529
Winkler .....	442	60	18	.....	.....	.....

In this area these counties show a decrease of population during the last decade:

	Per cent.
Milam .....	7.3
Robertson .....	12.4
Llano .....	10.7

The following counties of the central region show a percentage of increase less than that of the whole state (27.8 per cent):

Per cent.	Per cent.
Bell ..... 8.0	Bosque ..... 9.3
Williamson ..... 10.9	Hamilton ..... 13.2
Falls ..... 6.9	Mills ..... 23.4
Limestone ..... 6.3	Johnson ..... 1.9
Burnet ..... 2.0	Somervell ..... 12.3
Mason ..... 2.0	Hood ..... 9.4
McLennan ..... 22.5	Erath ..... 7.1
Coryell ..... 1.9	Comanche ..... 18.1
Lampasas ..... 10.5	Parker ..... 2.0
Navarro ..... 8.5	Stephens ..... 23.4
Hill ..... 13.1	

The counties, all lying west of the above, that have grown more rapidly than the whole state but have added less than 50 per cent to the figures for 1900 are:

Per cent.	Per cent.
San Saba ..... 47.2	Eastland ..... 36.0
Menard ..... 34.6	Callahan ..... 47.9
Brown ..... 43.2	Sterling ..... 31.6

The population of the following counties has nearly doubled in the last decade, increasing between 50 and 100 per cent:

Per cent.	Per cent.
Palo Pinto ..... 58.7	Coke ..... 84.3
Shackelford ..... 70.7	Irion ..... 51.3
Borden ..... 79.9	Ward ..... 57.7

Those countries whose increase has been more than double are principally in the region where new railroads have been built or where the former cattle ranges have been occupied by farmers, all in west Texas. The exception is Tarrant county, with an increase of 107.3-per cent, due, however, to the remarkable growth of its central city. The other counties in this class are as follows:

	Per cent.		Per cent.
McCulloch .....	238.5	Howard .....	251.3
Coleman .....	114.5	Upton .....	943.8
Concho .....	366.4	Midland .....	989.7
Runnels .....	287.7	Martin .....	366.6
Taylor .....	150.4	Dawson .....	618.7
Jones .....	244.5	Crane .....	549.0
Tom Green .....	162.8	Ector .....	209.2
Nolan .....	359.5	Andrews .....	1,020.7
Fisher .....	239.7	Gaines .....	2,181.8
Mitchell .....	213.7	Winkler .....	636.8
Scurry .....	162.7	Loving .....	654.5
Glasscock .....	300.0	Reeves .....	137.3

## THE LIVE STOCK INDUSTRY.

There occurs nowhere in literature a happier description of the position of the range cattle business in the history of our country than in the following terse and characteristically vivid words, of Alfred H. Lewis:

"With a civilized people extending themselves over new lands, cattle form ever the advance guard. Then come the farms. This is the procession of a civilized, peaceful invasion; thus is the column marshaled. First, the pastoral; next, the agricultural; third and last, the manufacturing;—and per consequence, the big cities, where the treasure chests of a race are kept. Blood and bone and muscle and heart are to the front; and the money that steadies and stays and protects and repays them and their efforts, to the rear. Forty years ago about all that took place west of the Mississippi of a money-making character was born of cattle. The cattle were worked in huge herds and, like the buffalo supplanted by them, roamed in unnumbered thousands. Cattle find a natural theatre of existence on the plains. There, likewise, flourishes the pastoral man. But cattle herding, confined to the plains, gives way before the westward creep of agriculture. Each year beholds more western acres broken by the plough; each year witnesses a diminution of the cattle ranges and cattle herding. This need ring no bell of alarm concerning a future barren of a beef supply. More cattle are the product of the farm regions than of the ranges. That ground, once range and now farm, raises more cattle now than then. Texas is a great cattle state. Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Iowa and Missouri are first states of agriculture. The area of Texas is about even with the collected area of the other five. Yet one finds double the number of cattle in Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Iowa and Missouri than in Texas, to say nothing of ten-fold the sheep and hogs. But while the farms in their westward pushing do not diminish the cattle, they reduce the cattleman and pinch off much that is romantic and picturesque. Between the farm and the wire fence,

the cowboy, as once he flourished, has been modified, subdued, and made partially to disappear."

Perhaps it is unnecessary to repeat the well known aphorism that the welfare of a state rests upon the basic art of agriculture. With the realization of the proper possibilities of agriculture in the western counties and the extension of railroads and a farming population into those regions, has resulted the development of a splendid empire which it is the province of this work to describe. The range stock industry naturally rested upon the surface, was not anchored in the soil, and, like the picturesque "tumbleweed" of the plains, it was moved hither and thither by the natural influences of the seasons and topography. While the vast ranges were free, when nature without effort provided her native grasses, the stockman could herd his cattle on the free pastures and, on similar terms with the gold miner, could reap the profits produced by nature's own bounty. For twenty years West Texas has been undergoing the changes incident to the forward march of agriculture and the breaking up of the free range, and the range cattle industry is now practically a thing of the past. Modern stock farming, which is still the main source of wealth in West Texas, is a very different business from the range industry, which forms the principal subject of this chapter. The range industry preceded the railroad epoch and in a sense was hostile to the approach of civilization; the modern live-stock ranching is co-efficient with the tilling of the soil, and both are phases of the **present** era of industrialism.

The settlers who came in from the border states during the forties and fifties, bringing with them at least a small capital of live stock, carried on their farming and stock raising in co-operation. There is no definite time to be set when the stock industry became independent of farming and was engaged in as a great enterprise requiring altogether different methods of management.

In the early years there was little market for cattle outside of supplying the local demand, and therefore no special incentive to engage in a business which in its palmy days depended altogether on the eastern markets. It has been well said that the world had to be educated to eat beef, and it is only as a great want has arisen through that process of dietary training that the supplying of the world with fresh beef has become one of the largest and most systematically organized industries. A writer in describing the region about Fort Belknap and Camp Cooper about 1847 states that cattle were raised in considerable numbers in that vicinity, but that the only market was afforded by the Indian agency and the mili-

tary post, the prices which he quoted per head being, according to modern standards, ridiculously low. New Orleans was the principal cattle market before the war, but it is not likely that any large number of West Texas cattle found their way thither.

In view of the fact that the movement of cattle to market has so generally taken an easterly direction, the west supplying the east with meat, it is an interesting piece of information that during the years immediately following the great gold discovery in California, thousands of beef cattle were driven from Texas and Mississippi valley points across the plains to feed the hordes of gold seekers and the population that followed in their wake. During the brief period of the existence of this demand many herds passed through El Paso, encountering the frightful difficulties of the trail and the worse dangers from the Indians, and seldom did a party on this long drive escape the attack of Indians, and, too often, the loss of most of their stock.

Although the range cattle business had attained sufficient importance by the middle of the century to give Texas a reputation as a great cattle state, the operations were still confined to the eastern and southern parts of the state. The driving of cattle to the northern markets, which until less than twenty years ago was the most picturesque feature of the Texas cattle business, was inaugurated about 1856, when several large herds were trailed into Missouri, some being taken to the St. Louis markets. During the remaining years before the war, St. Louis and Memphis received large quantities of Texas cattle, most of them from the northeastern part of the state.

The commencement of hostilities broke all commercial relations between the North and the South. The drives across the country stopped while the blockade of the gulf ports ended exportation to foreign markets. Before the capture of Vicksburg in 1863 and the interposing of that river as a federal barrier between the east and the west Confederacy, there had been only a moderate demand for Texas cattle in the states east of the Mississippi, and as, in the latter half of the war food supplies of all kinds became scarcer, so also to transport them from the west through the federal lines became an increasingly difficult task.

The paralysis of the cattle business during the war was coincident with that which befell all other activities. Not only were the avenues of trade blocked, but also the former active participants in the business were now for the most part in the service of their country as soldiers. Destructive drouths were also a feature of this period, and all conditions seemed to conjoin in throttling the life out of the young industry of

stock raising. These conditions caused at least one very noteworthy consequence. By stress of circumstances many stock owners had been compelled to abandon their herds, and from lack of sufficient guarding many cattle had wandered away from their regular range. At the close of the war therefore many thousands of half-wild range cattle were shifting for themselves in the remote districts. Incursions of Indian and wild beast had made them almost intractable and had increased the qualities of ranginess and nimbleness of hoof to a point where they were more than ever able to take care of themselves. When settled conditions once more came upon the country, it is said that more than one poor but enterprising cowman got his start by rounding up and branding these "mavericks,"\* and from the herd thus acquired built up a business equal to that of many who in the beginning had been more fortunately circumstanced.

The revival of the cattle business after the close of the war was swifter than that which followed in other industries; and perhaps for the reason based upon facts already presented: Given a good range on the one hand and an attractive market on the other, the principal conditions of a prosperous range stock business are satisfied and the industry will spring into large proportions in a short time. The reopening of the markets of the North for southern cattle, and the fact that war-time prices for beef prevailed in those markets for some time after the war, gave a decided impetus to Texas stock-raising. To supply this northern demand a large number of cattle were collected in the spring of 1866 and driven across the Red river to principal shipping points. The *Dallas Herald* in April of that year estimates that from twelve to fifteen thousand beef

---

\* Edward King gives this version of the Maverick story: "Colonel Maverick, an old and wealthy citizen of San Antonio, once placed a small herd of cattle on an island in Matagorda bay, and having too many other things to think of, soon forgot all about them. After a lapse of several years some fishermen sent the Colonel word that his cattle had increased alarmingly, and that there was not enough grass on the island to maintain them. So he sent men to bring them off. There is probably nothing more sublimely awful in the whole history of cattle-raising than the story of those beasts, from the time they were driven from the island until they were scattered to the four corners of western Texas. Among these Matagordian cattle which had run wild for years were eight hundred noble and ferocious bulls; and wherever they went they found the country vacant before them. It was as if a menagerie of lions had broken loose in a village. Mr. Maverick never succeeded in keeping any of the herd together; they all ran madly whenever a man came in sight; and for many a day after, whenever any unbranded and unusually wild cattle were seen about the ranges they were called 'Mavericks.' "



cattle had crossed the Trinity within the past month or six weeks, bound for the North.

The general quality of these herds was greatly inferior even to the general run of the old-time "Texas longhorn." In fact, many of the cattle driven north in 1866 were recruited from the herds of wild cattle then wandering in great numbers over the state. The presence of these wild animals in the drove gave the cowboys no end of trouble, for the least untoward event would set the suspicious brutes on the stampede, every such occasion meaning the loss of hundreds of dollars to the owner of the herd. Then, there were other gauntlets of danger and difficulty to be run by these drovers. The "Texas fever" was the *bete noir* of cattlemen, not so much because of the actual destruction wrought among the cattle by the disease, as by the general apprehension excited in the public mind that all Texas beef was fever-tainted and that Texas cattle were carriers of the disease among northern stock, all this operating for some time as an almost effectual bar against the sale of cattle from south of the Red river. To resist this invasion of disease, some of the inhabitants of Kansas and Missouri whose farms were along the general route of the Texas drives took exceedingly rigorous methods of stopping the passage of Texas drovers through their neighborhoods. Instances are known in which Texans were severely punished by lashing or other maltreatment and their cattle scattered through the woods and ravines beyond all hope of recovery. Originating in an honest desire to protect their live stock against imported disease, this hostility to Texas cattlemen became a cloak for the operations of gangs of blackmailers and outlaws such as would put to shame the banditti of the middle ages. Says one who wrote of that period from knowledge at first hand: "The bright visions of great profits and sudden wealth that had shimmered before the imagination of the drover were shocked, if not blasted, by the unexpected reception given him in southern Kansas and Missouri by a determined, organized, armed mob, more lawless, insolent and imperious than a band of wild savages. Could the prairies of southeast Kansas and southwest Missouri talk, they could tell many a thrilling, blood-curdling story of carnage, wrong, outrage, robbery and revenge, not excelled in the history of any banditti or the annals of the most bloody savages." It became necessary for the drovers to avoid these danger-infested regions, and instead of going directly to the nearest shipping point—which was then Sedalia, Mo.—they detoured to the north or the south, reaching the railroad either at St. Joseph or at St. Louis.

The prejudices against Texas cattle and the dangers of the trail

gradually subsided, though not till many a cattleman had gone bankrupt or suffered worse injury. In 1867, however, a new status was given the cattle traffic. Up to that time the Missouri river had furnished the nearest and most convenient shipping points for the Texas cattleman, and the trails thither were long and, as we have seen, often dangerous. It was to relieve these conditions that, in the year 1867, Joseph G. McCoy selected, along the route of the newly built Kansas Pacific Railroad, the embryo town and station of Abilene as the point to which all the cattle trails from the south and southwest should converge and disgorge the long-traveled herds into waiting cars, thence to be hurried away over the steel rails to the abattoirs and packing houses of the East. Abilene was no more than a name at the time, and McCoy and his assistants set about the building of immense cattle pens and the equipments essential to a shipping point. These were completed in time for the fall drive, and Abilene was thus launched upon its famous and infamous career as "the wickedest and most God-forsaken place on the continent," a detailed description of which is, happily, no part of this history.

By proper advertising of its advantages as the nearest and most convenient railroad station for Texas shippers, by the year following its establishment all the trail-herds were pointed toward Abilene as their destination. There the buyers would meet the drovers, who, having disposed of their cattle to best advantage, would usually turn their steps to the flaunting dens that offered iniquity in every conceivable earthly form. It is estimated that 75,000 Texan cattle were marketed at Abilene in 1868, and in the following year twice that number.

As is well known, the Texas "longhorn" of those days had characteristics of figure, proportion and disposition which were of equal fame with his value as beef. Texas fever or almost any evil imputation could more easily lodge against this animal than against the more sleek and docile appearing "farmer cattle," so that it is not strange that on the cattle exchanges "Texans" were usually quoted distinct and at marked disparity of price compared with those brought by other grades. The process of grading which worked out from Texas herds this longhorn breed was a long time in accomplishment, and in time practically covers the epoch of the range cattle industry as distinct from modern cattle ranching. Though the Texan cattle thus labored against adverse influences both at the hands of the buyer and of the consumer, none the less the range business, both through the profits to be derived and through the nature of the enterprise, attracted thousands of energetic men to its pursuit as long as the conditions necessary to its continuance existed.

The decade of the seventies was marked with many developments in the cattle industry. Prices were up, the demand for cattle from Texas was not so critical, and it is estimated that 300,000 head were driven out of the state to Kansas points in the year 1870. Another factor that made the cattle traffic for that year profitable was a "freight war" between the trunk lines reaching to the Atlantic, the reduction in freight rates simply adding so much extra profit to the cattle shipper.

In 1871, as a consequence of the prosperity of the preceding year, the trails leading to the north were thronged with cattle, and the constant clouds of dust that hung daily along the trail, the ponderous tread of countless hoofs, and the tossing, glistening current of longhorns, presented a spectacle the like of which will never be seen again. Six hundred thousand head of Texas cattle went into Kansas in 1871, and these numbers were swelled by contributions from the other range states. But the drovers were not met by the eager buyers of the year before; corn-fed beef from the middle states had already partly satisfied the market; the economic and financial conditions of the country were not so good as in the year before; railroad rates were again normal—and as a result half of the Texas drive had to be turned on to the winter range in Kansas. A rigorous winter, with much snow following, and much of the pasturage having already been close-cropped, thousands of cattle perished, and the year goes down in Texas cattle history as almost calamitous.

About this time the railroads were extending their lines to absorb the increasing cattle traffic, and several roads penetrating the cattle regions caused a change of base with regard to the movements of cattle. The Santa Fe reached the Colorado line late in 1872, and about the same time the M. K. & T. reached the Red river, furnishing a shipping point for Texas cattle at Denison. With the year 1872 the town of Abilene begins to lose its lurid reputation, its business advantages as well as its sins being transferred to other railroad points; the extension of the railroads had much to do with this, but in the winter of 1871-72 there had also been a determined revolt on the part of the better element of citizenship, with the result that Abilene became a comparatively "straight" town and what it lost as a cattle center was recompensed by substantial business prosperity.

The year 1872 saw only about half the number of cattle in the preceding year driven north, although better prices prevailed and the average quality of the stock was better. About this time Texas stockmen began the practice of transferring their cattle to the northern ranges for fatten-

ing, a method which soon became one of the important features of the business.

Practically all the activities of North Texas came to an abrupt pause as a result of the panic of 1873, and the cattle business, being more "immediate" in its workings, suffered more severely than others. The pall of depression hung over the business world even before the colossal failure of Jay Cooke in September, so that the 400,000 Texas cattle that were driven north found the buyers apathetic to say the least. Many held off for better prices in the fall, only to be met with overwhelming disappointment when the crash came. Naturally, the range cattle fared worse in competition with the farm cattle, which was nearly equal to the market demand. Everywhere there was oversupply and glutting of the markets. Many Texans were in debt for money advanced by banks in preceding seasons, and as no extensions of credit could be made there were hundreds of enterprising cowmen in Texas in that year who faced complete defeat, although Texas pluck and persistence saved them from annihilation. To such straits did the business come in that year that a considerable proportion of the cattle were sold to rendering plants, which were set up in various parts of the state as a direct result of the depression; the hides, horns, hoofs and tallow were more profitable for a time than the beef. Conditions warranted these operations only a short time, and since then there has been no slaughtering of range cattle as a business proposition merely for the by-products.

To quote from a recent publication: "The period from 1865 to the close of 1873 was one of ups and downs in the live-stock industry on the plains; yet, notwithstanding the intervening misfortunes, and the actual disasters of 1873, the net results were represented by a great advance as to territory occupied and an immense increase in the number of animals that were eating the free grass of the ranges."

The cattle trade, said King Edward in 1873, might be called "an indolent industry—for it accomplishes great results in a lazy, disorderly way; and makes men millionaires before they have had time to arouse themselves and go to work. Cattle trading is a grand pastime with hundreds of Texans. They like the grandiloquent sound of a 'purchase of sixty thousand head.' There is something at once princely and patriarchal about it. They enjoy the adventurous life on the great grazing plains, the freedom of the ranch, the possibility of an Indian incursion, the swift coursing on horseback over the great stretches, the romance of the road. Nearly all the immense region from the Colorado to the Rio Grande is given up to stock-raising. The mesquite grass carpets the

plains from end to end, and the horses, cattle and sheep luxuriate in it. The mountainous regions around San Antonio offer superb facilities for sheep husbandry; and the valleys along the streams are fertile enough for the most exacting farmer. There are millions of cattle now scattered over the plains between San Antonio and the Rio Grande, and the number is steadily increasing. \* \* \* The cattle interest is rather heavily taxed for transportation, and suffers in consequence. In 1872 there were 450,000 cattle driven overland from western Texas to Kansas, through the Indian territory, by Bluff Creek and Caldwell, up the famous 'Chisholm' trail. In 1871 as many as seven hundred thousand were driven across. But few cattle are transported by sea; the outlet for the trade by way of Indianola has never been very successful. The Morgan steamships carry perhaps 40,000 beeves yearly that way. The two great shipping points in 1872-73 were Wichita, on the A., T. & S. F. R. R., and Ellsworth, on the Kansas Pacific R. R."

Much interest attaches to the series of developments by which the Texas cattle industry grew in importance during the years before 1873, and how from a limited and unprofitable market at the gulf ports the tide of cattle was turned to the north and was even then being directed toward new shipping centers with almost each succeeding year. New Orleans and the lower Mississippi points were the destinations for the earliest cattlemen. Then Memphis and St. Louis received the bulk of the trade; still later, Sedalia and Kansas City; Abilene had its infamous "boom" as a cowtown, and, later, Junction City, Wichita, Fort Dodge, and other railroad points in southern Kansas; but coincident with the construction of the M., K. & T. Railroad south through Indian territory to Denison, which remained its terminal point for several years, the trail-herds of West and Southwest Texas were directed in an ever-increasing stream toward this part of North Texas. Nevertheless, the railroad mentioned must not be credited with establishing this general route for the drives; although it was a positive influence to this end, and the Denison terminal was a shipping point of more than ordinary magnitude, it remains true that a great part, perhaps a majority, of the cattle were driven past this point and on to the popular herding grounds in southeastern Kansas. The true explanation seems to be that this "Baxter Springs Trail," as it was long known, and which even in the sixties had become, much of the way, a well worn road, was a logical route to the northern markets; that the railroad, in following its general course, merely supplied an iron highway instead of the already favorite trail; and that the convergence of the cattle routes through

Fort Worth, which began to attract marked notice in 1874, and the subsequent extension of the railroad facilities from the Red river to that point, were a series of events, based in the first instance on natural causes, that have raised Fort Worth to its pre-eminence as the cattle market of the Southwest.

It seems proper at this point, since we have adverted to the "Baxter Springs Trail," to note with some degree of particularity the other famous cattle trails with which every old-time cattleman is familiar, but which, being in the same historic category with the well-nigh forgotten stage routes, find little place in the general thought of the present generation.

While Abilene held the center of the stage as a shipping point, the "Shawnee Trail" came into general use. This took its course through a more westerly part of the territory than the Baxter Springs route, crossing the Arkansas river near Fort Gibson, thence through the Osage Indian reservation to the Kansas line, and thence north to Abilene. The promoters of Abilene, in 1868, had this route shortened by surveying a direct trail south to the present city of Wichita, marking the course by small mounds of earth; this being the only instance when a cattle trail was located with anything like mathematical precision. The southern end of this trail, terminating at Wichita, was long used after Abilene ceased to be a shipping point.

There is a distinction to be drawn between the trails that were followed primarily as a route to market and those which were established as a highway of communication between the southern and the northern ranges. The "Baxter Springs Trail" seems to have combined both these features; while the "Shawnee Trail" was principally used as the most convenient way to reach the railroad. Further to the west than either of these was the famous "Chisholm" or "Chisum" trail, which took its name from Jesse Chisholm, a half-breed Indian, and one of the earliest stockmen of the territory. This trail came into prominence after the custom had been established of transferring the southern cattle to the northern ranges, there to be held and fattened for market. Beginning at the Red river, it crossed the western portion of the present Oklahoma into Kansas, and during the seventies so many cattle were driven this way that it presented the appearance of a wide, beaten highway, stretching for miles across the country.

The other trail that deserves mention was the "Panhandle Trail," whose location is explained by the name, and which was likewise used

principally for the transfer of Texas cattle to the ranges in Colorado or more northern states.

These trails, which were so called with laudable exactness of definition, though leading with sufficient accuracy to certain destinations, were as sinuous in their smaller lengths as the proverbially crooked cow-path. This was especially true of the more westerly routes, where it was necessary for the drover to direct his herds so that a sufficient water and grass supply was each day accessible, these prime considerations making a meandering course the only feasible one in the plains country.

Notwithstanding that the years immediately following the panic of 1873 was a time of depression in the cattle business as well as other industries, there was a realignment of forces going on in Texas which was to make its influence felt when the time of prosperity again arrived. The natural economic resources which had lain dormant during the war and reconstruction period were just beginning to be touched by the wand of enterprise when the panic came, and though this cause operated as a serious check, it was only temporary, and when stability was once more restored to financial affairs Texas literally bounded forward along every line of progress. This fact is well stated in the following newspaper comment which appeared in April, 1875: "But a very few years ago the traffic in Texas cattle with the North was a very small affair. The first herds were driven into Kansas about eight years ago. Nearly every succeeding year witnessed an increased number until the aggregate of one season amounted to over six hundred thousand, and when estimated in dollars the aggregate for the past eight years will reach eighty millions. The peculiar condition of our state and people during the eight years in question, immediately succeeding the close of the war, rendered it necessary to expend the greater part of this sum in breadstuffs, clothing, wagons, agricultural implements, etc., so that very little of the money found its way back into Texas. A different state of affairs is manifest today, and the balance of trade is slowly swinging in our favor, being assisted by the increase in home manufactures."

Also, about that time the movement became definite which has resulted in the extinction of the longhorn range cattle, so that at this writing one of the old-time "Texas steers" is a distinguished rarity in the markets. The prophecy of this modern state of affairs was thus couched in a Fort Worth *Democrat* editorial during the spring of 1874: "Several hundred head of blooded cattle have been imported into this



county (Tarrant) the past twelvemonth. These will," the editor states, "in a few years greatly improve the grade of cattle in the county. Stock-raising in considerable quantities will soon become obsolete in this section, and fewer numbers, of much finer grades, will be raised. It is conceded by stock-raisers of Kentucky, Illinois and Missouri that more money is realized by raising a few good cattle than from large numbers of ordinary breeds. Our farmers are beginning to appreciate this fact."

The prices for range stock during 1874 and 1875 remained very low, seldom rising above two dollars per hundred. This continued disparity



HEREFORDS AND ALFALFA

of the Texas cattle in competition with other grades was no doubt a principal factor in convincing the Texas stockman of the necessity of improving his breeds.

About this time there occurred a change in the meat products business which amounted to a revolution and which alone made possible the development of the industry to its present status. This revolution in processes is well described in "Prose and Poetry of the Live Stock Industry" (Denver and Kansas City, 1905), probably the most complete and authentic work of the kind yet published. Relative to this subject we quote:

"The principal influence that was at work indirectly in behalf of western cattlemen at that time was the development of new features and new methods in the packing house industry. Theretofore the markets for



fresh beef from these concerns had been, in the main, local in extent, and much of their beef output was in the form of salt-cured products. Exportation of beef on the hoof slowly but steadily was attaining greater magnitude at that time, but it was so hampered by foreign real or pretended fears of various alleged infections being introduced into Europe by American cattle, and also by agitation there in favor of home production, that it became necessary for our people to devise other ways and means of getting American beef into European markets. In this case the packing house interests quickly solved the problem by sending the foreigners prime dressed beef carcasses that were above suspicion, criticism or objection; and with these went canned beef, and, as the new methods further were developed, a variety of other canned and potted beef products. New vehicles of transportation having been required for the dressed beef trade, they came forth without delay in the form of refrigerator cars on the railroads and refrigerator apartments in the ships. With these the packers at Chicago, Kansas City and other great market centers were enabled to deliver beef carcasses on the farther side of the Atlantic in as perfect condition as that in which they were placed upon the blocks of retailers within sight of the packing houses; and with these cars to extend their home trade in dressed beef to every part of the country accessible by railroad. This new branch of the packing house industry, which within a few years became the larger part of it, made its influence felt strongly in 1876, and in 1877 had risen to greater proportions. Its magnitude in 1878 was reflected in the fact that nearly forty per cent of all the live stock marketed in Chicago during the year, or about 500,000 head, went to consumers in the form of dressed beef from the packing houses of Chicago. At Kansas City and other packing house centers the dressed beef business held about the same ratio to the total number of cattle put upon the market."

The beginning of meat refrigeration and transportation is described in the issue of the *Texas Almanac* of 1870:—

The *San Marcos Pioneer* publishes a letter from General D. A. Maury, of New Orleans, to Hon. S. F. Stockdale, of Indianola, in which it is stated that the plan of Messrs. Howard, Bray & Co., for transporting Texas beef, "killed on its native grasses, to any port of the world, without salting it, and without taint or damage, is generally admitted to be an established success"; and that these gentlemen are preparing to resume in the fall their operations on a very large scale. It is also stated that a cargo of fresh beef, killed and dressed near Indianola, and taken some weeks ago to New Orleans, was pronounced by all who saw and tasted it the best beef ever brought into the market. General Maury visited

the warehouse of the above named company in New Orleans some weeks ago, and saw several thousand pounds of beef hanging in quarters, which had been slaughtered near Indianola nine days previously, and which was then free of any evidence of taint or sourness, and was as fresh and sweet as if it had just been killed. The temperature in the coolest place outside the warehouse was 90°; inside the warehouse it was 35°. We quote the concluding paragraphs of General Maury's letter:

"One can hardly doubt the complete success of this invention and its application, nor too highly estimate the magnitude of its results.

"Henceforth, instead of driving your emaciated, foot-sore, and perhaps diseased cattle to an unfavorable and uncertain market, thousands of miles away, you may establish your slaughter-house in Indianola, kill and dress your beeves with all their juices and freshness in them, hang them in your great refrigerative ships, and send them in perfect preservation to New Orleans, Liverpool, coast of Guinea, or Ceylon.

"There will be but little necessity for hard salt junk, and the consequent scurvy for sailors, and every man may breakfast daily on his tenderloin steak, whether his keel cleaves the Indian Ocean or the Arctic seas; and with due energy and judgment, you gentlemen of Texas may find your cattle, before twelve months have passed, independent of the malign legislation of the northern states, and once more a great staple production used by civilized men all over the world. •

"There are many beneficial applications of the patent owned by these gentlemen, but the first, and the greatest, is the free exportation of your millions of cattle, and the way, too, that seems to have been surely opened to you."

The refrigerator car as an element in the cattle business of Texas receives notice in May, 1877, in the following paragraph from the Fort Worth *Democrat*: "The first carload of fifty beeves in quarters, in a Tiffany refrigerator car, which is just now coming into general use, was shipped yesterday from Fort Worth to St. Louis. Some two years ago a company was formed at Denison for shipping beef in refrigerator cars, but proved a failure. Tiffany has since improved the cars to commercial efficiency, and has provided ventilation so thorough and adapted to both summer and winter use as will enable meats to be carried almost any distance without taint or loss of flavor." Another issue of the same paper, commenting on this "wonderful discovery," goes on to assert that "so soon as the various railroad lines can supply their roads with these cars, beef and other meats will be slaughtered in the localities where raised and will be sent to market in dressed form, saving transportation fees on offal and useless matter."

Quoting again from "Prose and Poetry of the Live Stock Industry": "In 1876 there were probably not 3,000 white people in the whole region between the Eastland-Young-Archer-Wichita tier of counties and the eastern line of New Mexico, with the Panhandle thrown in. These later

westward movements had located herds of cattle along many of the water courses, and there were some sheep scattered here and there on the drier uplands, where there was a shorter growth of herbage; the sheepmen, however, being so few in number, and the abundance of grass and water so plethoric, that their near presence was tolerated by the cattlemen, and therefore the two usually hostile interests got along together with but little friction for several years. The Texas cattle ranges, generally speaking, had hitherto been within the eastern and southern two-fifths of the state, for in 1876 there were not more than thirty or thirty-five cattle ranches that were conspicuous as to size in the central, northern and western parts of the state; an area, thus roughly defined, that contained upwards of 130,000 square miles, and which now embraces some ninety counties. Most of these larger ranches had been located pretty well toward the western side of the state, but many miles apart. Chisum's old ranch on the Concho river near Fort Concho was one of the very large ones; but there were four—the Townsend, the Hittson, the Black, and the Lynch outfits—in the section of which Eastland county is a part, for which 'range rights' were claimed over a scope of country close to one hundred miles square—an area nearly equal to that of the states of Massachusetts and Delaware combined. Fenced ranges were unknown there, and the supply of free grass was practically unlimited. Ranch supplies for most of the outfits had to be hauled by wagons hundreds of miles, communications with the outside world were infrequent, mail was received at long intervals, and the greater part of the market stock was driven northward."

But the climax of the range cattle business was now approaching. Not only were the farmer settlers crowding the cattlemen west, but the stock industry itself was proving so attractive that during the early eighties practically every square mile of the range country was utilized to the point of crowding. The rush to the range cattle country during those years was quite comparable to a mining rush, in the splendid visions of sudden wealth that actuated the participants, as also in the later failure and disappointment that swept into oblivion the majority of such fortune hunters. The glamour of romance and the gleam of riches had been thrown over the cattle range. Its stern aspects, its hardships, its sacrificing toil, were subordinated to its picturesque features, which many an old cattleman will dispute ever having existed elsewhere than on the pages of romance. The titles "cattle king" and "cattle baron," coined probably by some zealous newspaper man, sounded impressive to the uninitiated and were often an all-sufficient stimulus to the ambition of an easterner plod-

ding the slow road to prosperity. As one miraculous cure will establish the world-wide fame of a relic which thousands of other worshipers have adored in vain, likewise a few examples of success in cattle ranching gave dazzling promise to all who would undertake its pursuit. The glowing reports of the western cattle industry that found current in all parts of the world resulted in a large immigration to the range country, and the mania for investment in cattle and for booming every department of the business stimulated a false prosperity that could have but one end. Values rose beyond all precedent, and those who marketed their stock during the first two or three years of the "boom" realized profits that, had they then withdrawn from the business, would have left them well within the realms of wealth. But the contagion of the enterprise seemed to infect the experienced cattleman as well as the tyro. The season's drive ended, the accruing profits were reinvested, and thus the bubble expanded till it burst.

To properly understand the culmination of the conditions which brought the range cattle industry to its climax in the '80s, it is necessary to go back to the origin of the industry and state the "rules of the game" which had obtained as unwritten law as long as free range lasted.

"For a decade or two after the close of the Civil war the range country of Texas was open and free to whosoever might go in and occupy parts of it and nature provided food for the cattle without labor, without money and without price from their owners. The cattlemen of that period thought they 'had struck it rich,' as indeed they had, so far as free grass and a range that appeared to be unlimited and inexhaustible could help them on to fortune. They had also thought that they had a perpetual possession in which these conditions would continue, but little, if any, disturbed, and that their business would go on indefinitely independent of most of the trammels and restraints to which men were subject in the settled parts of the country. The country appeared so endlessly big and its grazing resources seemed so great that it was hard for any man to foresee its 'crowded' occupation by range cattle far within the period of his own lifetime, to say nothing of serious encroachments upon it by tillers of the soil. In these years the methods and practices of the western stockmen as they advanced into the range country were much the same wherever they went.

"The first impulse of a pioneer cattleman who had entered a virgin district with his herd and established his headquarters there, was mentally to claim everything within sight and for a long distance beyond. But when the second one appeared with his stock the two would divide the

district, and each keep on his side of the division line as agreed upon. As others came in, the district would be still further divided, until, according to the very broad views our pioneer friends held as to the length and breadth of land each should have for 'elbow room,' it had become fully occupied. There was nothing to prevent them from appropriating the country in this manner and arbitrarily defining the boundaries of their respective ranges, and with this practice there developed the theory of 'range rights'—that is, of a man's right to his range in consequence of priority of occupation and continuous possession, although none asserted actual ownership of the range land, nor did any of them really own as much as a square yard of it. Still, under the circumstances, the theory of 'range rights' was not an unreasonable proposition.

"For a district to become 'fully occupied' did not at that time imply that the cattle outfits in it were near neighbors. In making claim to a range each stockman kept far over on the safe side by taking to himself a-plenty, and therefore their ranch buildings were anywhere from fifteen to thirty miles apart, and sometimes even farther. As a common rule each man recognized and respected the range rights of his neighbors in good faith, but occasionally there were conflicts."\*

Such were the conditions up to the time of the boom. Then, in consequence of the immigration of farmers and the many new aspirants for success in the range business, the old cattlemen became generally apprehensive for the future of their business. It seemed that even the vast range country, much of which, indeed, has since been proved agriculturally valuable, might at no distant day be filled up by the land-owning, fence-building and generally troublesome farmer, not to mention the restrictions of range freedom that were being set by the greater numbers of cattlemen. Therefore the majority decided to make their shortening days of grace strenuous ones, and to this end began the practice of stocking their ranges to the very limit. Where the long-horn had hitherto grazed the grass from twenty-five or more acres, he was now often limited to ten. This practice of overstocking the ranges became increasingly general, and the several inevitable results were not long in precipitating widespread calamity.

The practice led first of all to an abnormal demand for stock cattle. Prices quickly rose from \$7 to \$8 a head to \$10 and \$12, and large shipments were even sent from the middle states to form the basis for the range herds. Of course this inflation of values deepened the veneer of

---

\* "Prose and Poetry of Cattle Industry."

prosperity which gilded the entire business and increased the recklessness of those who hoped to catch the golden bubble before it burst. The beef-cattle market continued strong. Some Texas "grass-fed" steers selling in Chicago in May, 1882, at \$6.80 a hundred, and upwards of \$6 being offered in the corresponding month of the next year. But the ranges were not capable of supporting the great herds of hungry cattle that cropped their grasses so close and in many cases so trampled them that their productiveness was permanently impaired. A rainy season and an open winter alone could maintain the cattle industry at the high pressure at which it was being driven, and those conditions could not be depended upon. In the hard winter of 1882-83 cattle died by the thousands, and those that were not ruined by nature's penalties did not have long to wait for the economic overthrow. Prices for market stock remained high throughout 1883 and the early months of 1884, but in the fall of that year the decline began and by the middle of 1885 range cattle sold high at ten dollars a head and thousands went for less. The delusive value of "range rights" and "free grass," so often estimated as assets, could not be realized on, and the unfortunate stockmen found the returns from their herds to give them a mere pittance compared with the original investments. A case is recorded in which a Texas cattleman, who in 1883 had refused \$1,500,000 for his cattle, ranch outfit and range rights, sold them all in 1886 for \$245,000.

With the collapse of the great boom of the eighties, it may be said that the doom of the range-cattle industry was sounded, and since then a complete rearrangement has been taking place by which modern conditions have been ushered in. The fiction of "range rights" gave place to the purchase outright or the leasing of tracts of range land. The introduction of wire fences into general use set definite boundaries to each cattleman's possessions and largely did away with the "open range." Railroads went west and south, and were intersected by cross lines, which, more than any other influence, caused the breaking up of the range into ranches and stock farms. The improvement of the grades of cattle, and the gradual elimination of the long-horns, the beginnings of which we have already noted, have been steadily working the transformation which is now so complete that only the older stockmen have any knowledge of the conditions that we have just described. The stock industry is now a business, almost a science, and is conducted along the same systematic lines with other departments of modern industrialism. Cattlemen no longer pursue their calling outside the borders of the permanent settlements, receding before the whistle of the locomotive; they build their

ranch houses along the lines of steel, and their industry has become an organic factor in the world's activities.

During the sixties and early seventies Mr. J. F. Glidden, at his home in DeKalb, Illinois, had been conducting the experiments which resulted in the production of barb-wire, and it is worth while to turn aside and give in some detail the history of the invention which has meant so much in Texas. The first patent covering his invention was secured and bore date November 24, 1874. Smooth wire had already been used to a considerable extent for fencing purposes. It was cheap and answered the purpose to a certain extent, but it was by no means proof against cattle, and in consequence smooth-wire fences were constantly in need of repair. It was while replacing wires that had been torn from the posts by cattle that Mr. Glidden noticed some staples hanging to the wires, and from this conceived the idea of attaching barbs or points firmly to the wire at regular intervals, in this way preventing cattle from exerting pressure on the fence. It was at first only an idea, and there were many things to overcome in perfecting it, but it continued prominent in Mr. Glidden's mind, and after considerable thought he began experiments in perfecting a style of barb and firmly attaching it to the wire. He made his first perfected coil barb by the use of an old-fashioned coffee mill, of which he turned the crank by hand. Later on he devised better and more substantial machinery for this purpose, and would then string a number of barbs on a wire, placing them at regular intervals, and laying another wire without barb by its side, twist the two together by the use of an old horse-power. Thus by the twisting of the wires the barbs were permanently held in place, and the result obtained in this primitive way was sufficiently satisfactory to convince him of the ultimate success of his invention. In the fall of 1874 Mr. Glidden gave, for a nominal sum, a half interest in his patent to Mr. I. L. Ellwood, of DeKalb, and a factory was erected in that city for the manufacture of the new wire. Machinery was designed with which the barbs were attached to a single wire and then a smooth wire twisted with it, to a length of 150 feet; this length was then wound on a reel and the process continued until the reel was filled. Soon afterward a machine was made which coiled the barbs upon one wire, twisted them together and wound the finished wire upon the reels ready for shipment, each machine having a capacity of twenty reels daily.

Such was the inventing and manufacturing side of it. But, as has been the case again and again in the history of machinery, a really excellent device may be lost to the world because sufficient aggressiveness has not been employed in its introduction to the public. The man selected by



Mr. Glidden to show up the merits of his barb-wire was Mr. Henry B. Sanborn (now one of the best known cattlemen of Texas, the founder of Amarillo in the Panhandle). The latter was already prosperously started in business with Mr. Warner, and it required a great deal of persistent urging on the part of the inventor to get him to enter upon this new enterprise. However, he finally became convinced of its worth and possibilities and he and his partner made a contract with Glidden & Ellwood by which Sanborn and Warner were, for a period of two years, to introduce and sell exclusively the entire barb-wire product of the factory. Late in the fall of 1874 Mr. Sanborn started out with a sample panel of barb-wire fence to introduce the invention to the hardware trade, first in the towns adjacent to DeKalb. Conservatism, if not prejudice, worked against the first sale of this article, only two or three reels being sold at Rochelle, Illinois, and some small orders coming during the following months. In the spring of 1875 Mr. Sanborn and Mr. Warner both set out to introduce the wire into the southwestern and western states, where its field of greatest usefulness lay. In the meantime a half interest in the DeKalb plant was transferred to the well known wire manufacturers, Washburn and Moen Manufacturing Company of Worcester, Massachusetts, the contract with Sanborn and Warner being reaffirmed by the new partnership.

In September, 1875, Mr. Sanborn made his first invasion of Texas territory in the interest of the barb-wire industry. He soon found out that fencing material was much needed in this great cattle country, but the prejudice against the use of barb-wire seemed to be very strong. As a sample of the objections, one large cattle owner told Mr. Sanborn that the barb-wire fence would never do; that the cattle would run into it and cut themselves, thus causing endless trouble from the screw worm, which invariably attacks cattle in Texas when blood is drawn. But Mr. Sanborn was proof against all such discouraging sentiments, and he knew that, once get a wedge of sales entered, the entire people would be in time brought over to the new fence. He had a carload of the wire shipped to various points in the state, had Mr. Warner to come on and help him, and then took the field in the country for the purpose of introducing it to the actual consumers. At Gainesville he sold the first ten reels of barb-wire ever sold in the state. Thence he went to other towns, and during a trip of eleven days in a buggy he sold sixty reels; Mr. Warner was at the same time in the country west of Dallas and selling as much or more. At Austin Mr. Warner sold to a firm of ranchmen for their own use the first carload sold to consumers. The aggressive work of the partners soon



introduced the invention to many towns and outlying districts, and after a month or so of effective drumming and advertising they returned to the north. In January, 1877, they made a new contract with Washburn and Moen Manufacturing Company for the exclusive sale of the Glidden barb-wire in the state of Texas, and established their office and headquarters at Houston.

By this time barb-wire had reached the importance of an issue among the people of Texas. Its sincere friends were many and daily increasing, but many more from self-interest as well as conservatism opposed it most vehemently. The lumbermen were unfavorable because its introduction would mean a decrease of the use of wood material for fencing purposes, and the railroads allied themselves with the lumbermen whose shipments would thereby be diminished. Injury to stock was common ground for opposition, and bills were even introduced into the legislature prohibiting its use, but happily a rallying of the friends of barb-wire defeated the inimical measures, and the entire agitation worked for the welfare of the wire fence movement. In a few years the barb-wire sales of Sanborn and Warner in this state ran well up toward the million dollar mark. Messrs. Sanborn and Warner continued their partnership until 1883, when the former purchased the latter's interest, the name of Sanborn and Warner, however, being still retained. The contract with the Washburn and Moen Company continued until the expiration of the original Glidden patent in 1891, since which time the company has continued its Texas business from their branch office at Houston. Long before this, however, the work of introduction, so thoroughly undertaken by Mr. Sanborn, was complete and the trade built up to a steady and permanent demand.

Light on the troubles between the range cattlemen, the small farmer, the fence cutters and other parties to the contest is shown by the following extracts from newspapers in the fall of 1883. The *Austin Sentinel* put the case in the form of a query:

"What is to be done for the man who owns 640 acres, with a little farm on it, depending on the grass on the unfenced portion for maintaining his 25 head of stock, while the big stock-raiser grazes his stock on the outside of his own pasture, saving the grass on the inside for the drouth or winter season, while his thousand cattle destroy every blade of grass which the man referred to depends on to keep his milch cows and work animals alive?"

"It appears to us"—the *Bandera Enterprise* about the same date—"that it is high time some effective steps were being taken to settle the

troubles between the pasture men and their enemies. . . . Considerable blood has already been shed, and dangerous sentiments are rapidly assuming such proportions as to become a rational source of alarm for the character of our great state and peace and security of the lives and property of her citizens. . . . We think the offering of a reward of \$30 by the governor for the arrest and conviction of the fence cutters is totally inadequate to meet the emergencies of the case."

The principal factors that brought the cattle industry to its present orderly and substantial basis were, improved stock, provident management, and individual control of more or less of the land upon which each stockman operated, accompanied by the use of fences. The first attempts to introduce better blood into the rough range stock were made in Texas about 1875, although all that was done in this direction before 1885 was experimental and had little effect in raising the general grade. In fact, there was some prejudice in those days against the heavy farm cattle, which, it was believed, would not thrive under range conditions nor have the hardihood to withstand the hardships of winter and drouth. But after 1885, "a large item in the expense account of every ranchman whose operations were of considerable magnitude represented his outlay for high-grade and Registered bulls, high-bred breeding stock was brought into the range country in numbers that aggregated thousands of head and that, it is no exaggeration to say, cost hundreds of thousands of dollars. These bulls came not only from the stock farms of the East, but from England, Scotland, and continental Europe. Quality was bred into the herds, and the range beef steer was raised to a high plane of excellence."

Continuing, the History of the Live Stock Industry previously referred to says: "The best and therefore the high-priced beef lies along the animal's back, and anyone can understand that a broad-backed steer that has utilized its food in increasing its aggregate of sirloin and porterhouse parts, is far more valuable than the narrow-backed, slab-sided animal, perhaps of nearly the same gross weight, but which has utilized most of its food in the production of tallow. The western cattlemen saw this, and began to produce, with the same amount of food, beeves that yielded the high-priced steaks, worth from 15 to 25 cents a pound in a normal retail market, instead of tallow and medium or low-grade meats, worth whatever the buyer could be persuaded to pay for them.

"So the process of improving and upbuilding the range herds through the introduction of better stock and by selective breeding was undertaken and soon became general. The long-horn and all its kindred were rapidly eliminated. These slender, long-legged, narrow-faced, slabby, nervous

animals, that could run like a deer, that were subject to panic whenever they saw a man not on horseback, and that had horns reaching far out from their heads, within a few years practically became extinct creatures. Their places became more than filled by broad-backed, thick-loined, wide-shouldered cattle that in many instances yielded the largest possible amount of beef from the least possible amount of food, that topped the market, and that were as easy to manage as so many barn-yard heifers; the short-horned and the no-horned, the red-bodied and white-faced, and the black and the mixed-hued, the short-legged and the medium-legged—but all fine beefers.”

Instead of depending entirely upon having their cattle “rustle” a living from the pastures the twelvemonth through, under any and all conditions, the stockmen began providing a reserve supply of forage with which to tide over the hard spells of weather. The pastures still remain the chief dependence, and ordinarily the stock gets along very well upon them; but the West Texas cattlemen have discovered that the soil will produce more than the native grasses. With the breaking up of the ranges, some portion of each ranch is devoted to the production of Kaffir corn, milo maize, and other non-saccharine sorghum plants, with which the cattle are fattened at home, instead of the old way of driving them from the range to the northern feeding grounds. Instead of being left standing till the cattle cropped them, the tall and succulent grasses are now cut with mowing machines and stacked for the winter’s use. Furthermore, the modern stockman will not hesitate to import winter feed for his cattle, although such providence in caring for the stock would have been considered folly by the old-timers in the business.

Ranch management in all its details is being systematized. Instead of driving his herds from place to place in search of grass and water, the cattleman of to-day is fencing in small areas, driving wells and building dams and reservoirs, and raising the food for his cattle, feeding them with his own hands, watering them and looking after them closely, which would have been considered absurd and effeminate a few years ago. The “water holes” and surface streams that formerly furnished all the water for stock are now supplemented by wells. Twenty-five years ago the average cattleman would have ridiculed the idea that he was driving his herds over a vast lake of pure water or that it would be easier to tap the supply and draw it to the surface than to continue to drive his cattle to a stagnant pool ten miles away. But the underground lake exists, as the plainsman finally realized, and he has since been working out the prob-

lem of getting the water to the surface. For this purpose windmills have been generally employed, and the traveler through the plains country finds the numerous windmills the most impressive feature of the landscape, Midland and other towns being worthy the name of "windmill cities."

#### THE CATTLE RAISERS' ASSOCIATION OF TEXAS.

The Cattle Raisers' Association of Texas was organized February, 1877, at the town of Graham, Young county, Texas. Col. C. L. Carter of Palo Pinto county was elected its first president, and was elected each succeeding year, except one, to the time of his death in July, 1888. The term which he did not serve he was nominated, but requested that he be allowed to retire from his office on account of his age, and that it be filled by a younger and more active member. Col. C. C. Slaughter was elected to take his place in March, 1885, and served one year with honor to himself and satisfaction to the membership. At the annual meeting in 1886, Col. Carter was again chosen President by acclamation, without a dissenting voice, and was President when he died. Col. Carter was a pioneer cattle and frontiersman, having settled in Palo Pinto county in 1885, on the place where he died. He experienced many trials and troubles with hostile Indians; in addition to the heavy loss of property at the hands of these savages, he lost his oldest son, a bright and promising young man, just as he was growing into manhood, while on a cow hunt on his range. It was the good fortune of most of the older members of the association to have known Col. Carter for many years prior to his death. They are all of the opinion "that no better man ever lived or died; that he possessed many, if not all, of the qualities necessary to make a good man."

After the death of the lamented President Carter, Mr. A. P. Bush, Jr., of Colorado, Texas, was elected each year to fill the position of president up to March, 1899, which he filled with credit to himself and to the entire satisfaction of the members.

At the annual meeting in March, 1899, Mr. Bush declined to be an applicant for the position of president, and nominated Mr. R. J. Kleberg, of Alice, Texas, as his successor. Mr. Kleberg was elected without opposition, the vote being unanimous. At the annual meeting in March, 1900, R. J. Kleberg was re-elected to the office of President without opposition, and served the Association two years, the limit under the present by-laws, with honor to himself and to the satisfaction of the members. At the annual meeting in March, 1901, Mr. Murdo Mac-

kenzie was elected president without opposition. At the annual meeting in March, 1902, Mr. Murdo Mackenzie was re-elected president without opposition and served the Association two years, the limit prescribed by the by-laws, with credit to himself, and his administration unanimously endorsed by the Association.

At the annual meeting in March, 1905, Mr. W. W. Turney was re-elected president without opposition. Ike T. Pryor has been president since 1906.

Mr. J. D. Smith was the first vice-president, holding the position for one term. Messrs. J. B. Mathews and J. R. Stephens were the two vice-presidents selected at the second annual convention. Mr. Stephens was chosen each year for a number of years thereafter, till he would no longer serve, and was then elected an honorary member for life. The other vice-presidents have been Messrs. C. C. Slaughter, J. M. Lindsay, Jno. F. Evans, W. S. Ikard, A. P. Bush, Jr., J. W. Bustér, Murdo Mackenzie, Dr. J. B. Taylor, S. B. Burnett, R. J. Kleberg, A. G. Boyce, L. F. Wilson, W. W. Turney, John T. Lytle, I. T. Pryor and Richard Walsh. The last two were re-elected at the annual meeting in March, 1905.

J. C. Loving, of Jack county, was elected secretary at the organization of the association, and was re-elected each succeeding year to the time of his death. In 1879 he was also elected treasurer, and filled both positions to March, 1893, when E. B. Harrold was elected treasurer, which position he held until March, 1900, when S. B. Burnett was elected treasurer, and has been re-elected each succeeding year since. J. C. Loving also filled the position of general manager of the association from 1884 to the time of his death, November 24, 1902, when J. W. Colston was chosen, by the executive committee, as assistant secretary, to fill out the unexpired term of Mr. Loving.

After a service of nearly twenty-six years as secretary of the association, and eighteen years as general manager, J. C. Loving expired November 24, 1902, at his home in Fort Worth. To him, more than any one man, is due the success of the association, and to his memory will be erected a monument by the association, as a token of appreciation of the man and his valuable services.

At the annual meeting in March, 1905, Captain John T. Lytle was re-elected secretary and general manager, a position he held until his death in 1906.

The association keeps cattle inspectors at the principal markets, shipping points, on trails leading out of the state; also looks after the

range depredations, and gives more and better protection to cattle growers than can be obtained from all other sources combined; has broken up more organized bands of thieves and sent more of them to the penitentiary than could have been done by any other power. This department of the association is under the management of an executive committee, chosen at each annual meeting.

In the beginning of the Cattle Raisers' Association of Texas the scope of its operations geographically were limited. The objects of the association as formed almost thirty years ago were limited to the interests which presented themselves. Conditions have constantly changed, and with the changing conditions the association has adapted itself, its purposes, objects and aims to the necessities which have arisen from time to time.

The protective and detective features were the prime objects of the association's efforts at first, and while these are still insisted upon they are less important now than other questions to which the association has devoted itself to solve. This is an age of combination, and what individual effort is impotent to effect an organization of many whose interests run together has great power to direct to the accomplishment of any wholesome purpose. So it is that the Cattle Raisers' Association of Texas has been foremost in agitating the question of governmental regulation of railroad rates and suppression of rebates and similar practices that now are admittedly the pre-eminent politico-economic questions before the American people for solution. In fact, the association, through its officers, is now credited as an influence of national importance in getting these matters before Congress and in advocating a just and equitable control upon the railroad interests.

In an interview published in the *Texas Stockman-Journal*, in 1907, Mr. Pryor, president of the association, said: "Those veteran cowmen who organized the first Cattle Raisers' Association in Texas at the old town of Graham in the year 1877 did not at that time have the faintest idea they were laying the foundation for what is now one of the greatest and most influential organizations of its kind in the country. This small beginning, the seed of which was planted at Graham in 1877, has grown and spread until its membership is about 2,000 individuals, and it carries on its assessment rolls nearly two million cattle, and, I dare say, controls as many as 5,000,000 head. The membership includes all the prominent cattlemen of Texas, a great many prominent live stock producers from New Mexico, Oklahoma, Indian Territory and Kansas, and quite a number of cattlemen from Colorado.

"The prime object of this organization at its birth was solely a protective and detective association. Nearly all of its members were raising cattle on open range, which created an inviting field for cattle rustlers and brand defacers. Through this organization and its methods of protection, it was enabled to render the sheriffs of the counties embraced within the territory of this association great service, and the effective work done by this organization in bringing to justice those unlawfully handling cattle and defacing brands resulted in great benefits of the cattle raisers in general.

"One of the first rules of this association was to put as many inspectors in the field as its finances would admit. These inspectors in many cases were officers of the law. Where they were not they did great service in helping officers in discovering depredations upon cattle belonging to the members of the association.

"In the evolution of time open ranges disappeared and the invention of barbed wire and the practical use of same by the cattlemen resulted in the open ranges merging into large pastures. This method of course made depredations by thieves more difficult. Nevertheless, this did not in any way prevent or diminish the ardor with which these veteran cowmen, who organized this association and who are entitled to great credit, pushed this organization and increased its membership and usefulness each year.

"It soon became necessary to place inspectors at all the market centers in order to protect the membership from losing cattle that might have been shipped to the market centers, some by intention and others by mistake.

"As the necessity for ranch protection diminished it became apparent to the members of this great organization that other and equally as important matters should claim their attention, until in recent years they have become a large factor in shaping such legislation, both state and national, as is of vital importance to the live stock interests of the entire country.

"It is due as much or more to the Cattle Raisers' Association of Texas that the railway rate bill was finally passed by the United States Congress. The president of the Cattle Raisers' Association was chairman of the Live Stock Transportation Association and an ex-president of the Cattle Raisers' Association was chairman of the executive committee of said Live Stock Transportation Association, and it is due to this association that the twenty-eight hour limit in which stock should



remain on the cars was extended to thirty-six hours by the National Congress.

"The Cattle Raisers' Association took an active interest and did as much or more than any other organization in the country towards defeating a clause in the meat inspection bill compelling packers to pay for the inspection instead of the government. Had it not been for the Cattle Raisers' Association and the active interest it took this measure would no doubt have passed as originally introduced, and the live stock interests would have indirectly been made to pay for the inspection.

"We must not overlook the fact, however, in these great services performed by the Cattle Raisers' Association of Texas, we have been ably and enthusiastically supported in every instance by the National American Live Stock Association. It has joined with us and we have joined with it in every undertaking, and it is indeed gratifying to observe the harmony with which these two organizations work together for the mutual benefit of all.

"I mention these facts to show what a benefit the Cattle Raisers' Association has been to all live stock producers, whether they are members of its organization or not, and it is the duty of those who are not members to join and contribute their part towards the great work being performed by this organization. I could enumerate many benefits the Cattle Raisers' Association has been directly and indirectly instrumental in bringing about that have resulted in great good to the live stock industry.

"Our experience and success attained in securing beneficial National legislation for the interest we represent should encourage us to proceed by the same methods to secure still more benefits, the principal one of which is the extension of our foreign trade in live stock and its products, which should mean better prices, a more stable condition of our markets and permanent prosperity to the great West.

"In this movement we should avoid partisan politics, making such demands as will command the favorable attention of both political parties, thus securing the undivided support of this entire western country."

A writer in *Texas Stockman-Journal*, in 1907, speaks of the future prospects of stock farming as follows: "While there is a great deal of talk concerning the passing of the big ranches and the decadence of the cattle industry in this state, the real facts in the case do not warrant any such conclusions. It is true the big ranches are passing—that hundreds of the large pastures in the state have been sold and cut up into small tracts during the past year, but that does not signify that



Texas is preparing to go out of the cattle business. Any man who takes the trouble to figure the least bit on the situation must realize that Texas must always remain a great cattle producing state. No other state in the Union is so well adapted to the production of good cattle, and the time will never come when Texas will not be engaged in turning out just as good stuff as can be found in the Union.

"The big ranches are going, that is true, but in lieu of the single ranch owners, the land affected is passing into the hands of many. It is simply the natural evolution that accompanies the growth and development of the country, and instead of one man owning many cattle, we are going to see many men owning a few cattle. By the term a few cattle is meant smaller numbers in comparison with the former large herds held by individual ownership. There will be just as many cattle and there will be more owners. That will be about the only change.

"One well informed cowman was discussing this point with the writer only a few days ago. He has been identified with the range country sections of Texas for more than a quarter of a century, and still owns large ranch and cattle interests in that section, steadfastly resisting all temptations to sell. He gave it as his opinion that the time was near at hand when Texas must produce more cattle than ever before. He said as the West settled and developed every man who made his home in that section must gather about him a small bunch of good cattle. As feed crops flourish throughout that portion of the state, they will continue to be cultivated, and the man who produces feed crops must have stock to feed it to. Good stock must always command good prices, and so long as good prices prevail men will continue to produce good stock. As one man succeeds others will feel incited to follow the example, and he believes the cattle business in Texas is just now on the eve of its greatest development.

"Another thing that is going to stimulate the renewed production of cattle in Texas is the general improvement in conditions. Prices this spring are highly suggestive of the good old days embraced in the boom period, and when prices show this stiffening tendency the man who has been sitting back waiting for the return of prosperity invariably proceeds to get busy. It may be that the days of large cattle speculation are gone in Texas, for the business is getting on a different basis, but there need be no apprehension as to the future production of cattle in this state. Opportunity is at hand and Texas cattlemen have not been slow in the past to take advantage of opportunity.

"There is not much real difference after all between ranching and

stock farming. The stock farm is simply an evolution of the ranch. The demand was first made for improved cattle, and when these were provided it was discovered the provision did not go far enough. Improved cattle involved improved methods, including protection and feed. It was found that feed was cheaper when produced on the ranch than when hauled from the feed store, and the ranches began to produce feed. In contradistinction to the practice of agriculture, this was dubbed stock farming, and stock farming it will always remain. The ranchman could never consent to become a straight agriculturist, for consistency is one of his virtues. But it does not hurt very deep to call him a stock-farmer, and he is content to let it go at that. It may be he feels a mistake has been made in the cutting up of the old range and would be glad to see a return to old conditions. But the thinking stockman of the day realizes these things are impossible. The man who would stay in the procession is compelled to get in line with those who are traveling in that direction, and this is just exactly what the great majority of the cattlemen of Texas are now doing."

#### SHEEP HUSBANDRY AND WOOL BUSINESS.

It is recorded that a home market for wool was established, the first wool bought and warehoused in San Antonio in April, 1859. Previous to that time George Wilkins Kendall had established his sheep ranch above New Braunfels and had published his successful results with sheep husbandry. From this time the sheep industry assumed increasing importance in Southwest Texas. The vast ranges were occupied by sheepmen and cattlemen alike, and though their relations were not always harmonious, they recognized that they stood in close relation to each other as concerned outside dangers that threatened their occupation.

The position of San Antonio as a wool market is still well remembered, for until a few years ago it boasted the high honor of being one of the largest and most important wool markets in the world. The rapid rise of the wool market was noted over thirty years ago, when the total wool brought into the city for the year 1874 was 400,000 pounds, and the total for 1875 was 600,000; the price of the latter year ranging from 28 cents for the best grade to 17 cents for the poorer Mexican grade. In short, San Antonio soon became the market center for one of the greatest wool-producing countries of the world, and continued as such until the reduction of the high protective tariffs during Cleveland's second administration. This was a blow to the city's commercial prosperity and to the prosperity of Southwest Texas as well, the full results of which

it would be difficult to estimate. Suffice it to say that hundreds of sheep-raisers were forced out of the business; that one of the greatest sources of commercial profit was taken from San Antonio; and that the sheep industry has never since attained the proportions that it had before the lowering of the tariff wall. The last result, it should be stated, has been partly due to changing conditions in Southwest Texas during the period since 1895.

Perhaps the most interesting phase of the wool business, aside from its general features, was the part it played in politics during the early eighties. The discussions attendant upon free trade are very illuminating



SHEEP GRAZING

of the conditions of the sheep industry at that time. It is especially noteworthy that here, in the Democratic state of Texas, the principles of high protection found some of their staunchest allies and defenders in the persons of the wool growers.

The depth of the sentiment for protection among the sheepmen and their influence with the great body of live-stock producers, is illustrated in the remarks of the president of the Stock Raisers' Association in his annual address in January, 1882. He said:

We are naturally interested—that which conduces to the prosperity of the grower, breeder, and dealer of sheep in one section of the state, either directly or indirectly, aids the sheep men of every section. United we are a power to accomplish any desired worthy purpose we may elect, whether it be in the enactment of

laws for our protection and development, the enforcement of laws already in existence, or as benefactors to our race in our state and nation. We have reason for gratitude because our efforts as growers of wool and breeders of sheep have been so signally blessed during the past few years.

That our climate, soil and grasses are not excelled for the production of superior sheep for both wool and mutton has been fully proven. Though the prices paid for our wools have generally been satisfactory, yet the attempts of intermeddlers to tamper with and reduce the import duties has at various times depressed the markets, lessened the prices of wools and produced uncertainty, both to the manufacturer and producer. It is not the expectancy or desire of the woolgrowers of the United States to build up and protect their own industry at the expense or injury of other vocations, but they believe (and the results of a wise protective system in the past proves this belief to be the correct one) that by placing themselves on a firm foundation with other producers and with the manufacturers every class of laborers will be the beneficiaries, and capital will find ready and profitable investments.

The great tariff convention recently held in New York, where all the industries of the nation were represented, has spoken and given no uncertain sound. Congress is asked to legislate for the protection of home, not foreign industries. It now seems quite certain that the tariff laws are to be acted upon in a manner that will put them to rest for many years to come.

If a just and equitable protective tariff and revenue laws are made permanent, the future of the woolgrowers of the United States will be as bright and certain as the past few years have been prosperous and progressive. I suggest that this association take such action as shall make known to our representatives in Congress our desires, and also provide our quota of means to aid the executive board of the National Woolgrowers' Association in bringing the woolgrowers' interests prominently forward at Washington at the proper time.

Some of our sheep men insist that our state legislators have enacted laws discriminating against woolgrowers, and say "it is time we should let them know just what we want."

The protection interests won, for the time, and with their victory the wool business continued to flourish and expand in Texas and elsewhere. In 1882 and 1883, just after the subsiding of the cattle boom, the people of Texas went wild over sheep. Men who had never owned a sheep bought flocks, and men who owned thousands bought more. They figured out enormous profits, but in the end it came to them as a losing truth that while figures cannot lie, liars can figure. The figuring went on this way: Start in with a flock of 100 ewes, 80 per cent of which will drop lambs, and half of the lambs will be ewes. At the end of a year the flock is increased to 140 ewes and 40 rams (or wethers). The wool averages 8 pounds, worth 25 cents a pound, or \$2 a head, a total of \$200 for the old sheep and about half as much for the lambs. The wethers can be sold for \$3 or \$4 a head, say \$140 for the 40, making a

total income of \$440. That wasn't much for the first year, but it was supposed the man who was doing this had started in on a small scale and was going to build up a large flock. So he estimated that he would begin his second year with 140 bearing sheep, which in turn would yield him 80 per cent lambs, or 112 head, half being ewes. He was supposed to clear up about \$600 the second year, and start in the third year with 196 head, and at this rate in five or six years he would have two or three thousand head, bringing in from their wool and their increase a comfortable income of \$5,000 to \$6,000 a year.



COTTON WAITING TO BE GINNED

No account was taken of the cost of keeping the sheep. That was the day of free grass, when millions of acres were free to the appropriator of the pasturage. And no account was taken of losses, which were bound to be heavy, where no provision was made for protection or subsistence through the winter except that offered by the open prairie. Some of the investors in sheep—a great many of them, in fact—found at the end of the second winter that instead of an 80 per cent increase, they had an 80 per cent death loss.

In 1884 Texas had more than 9,000,000 sheep. The number in the state in 1909, as rendered by the assessors, was about 1,500,000.

The chief end of the sheep in Texas has been the production of wool. When the price of wool went down from 25 or 30 cents a pound

to 10 or 12 cents, the wool-producing sheep ceased to be profitable, and being no longer a source of profit, then owners began getting rid of them. In that way the 9,000,000 and odd head were reduced to a million and a half.

The tide has had its ebb and the flow has set in. Sheep are worth as much now as they were in 1883, or more. Wool is bringing good prices. Having become a money-maker again, the sheep will become as popular as he was before and many will begin to raise sheep, and count their profits before the shearing is done.

"A discouraging feature of the existing condition," writes a close student of the business, "is the lack of quality in our sheep. Our cattle raisers have, in the two decades since 1883, bred up their herds until the old long-horn is a rare animal. The average herd of Texas cattle now weighs fully 50 per cent more than the average herd of like age did in 1883. Good breeding has done it. Our sheep weigh no more and produce no more wool per head than they did then. There are exceptions, but we speak of ruling conditions. Men who have bred good sheep have found always a good market for them and for their wool."

## A BRIEF HISTORY OF RAILROAD CONSTRUCTION.

Every important town and city of Texas, with its adjacent country, owes a large share of its growth and prosperity to the railroad. A railway station was the point of beginning for many flourishing towns, and in the case of those centers of population that were founded before the railroad era, the subsequent fate of such places has usually depended on their success in obtaining railroad communication. Some of the old towns of the state have long since been decadent merely because the railroads passed them by. Not only have the railroads exercised such influence over centers of business and population, but also have changed or given new direction to all the industrial activities. The development of certain localities has been delayed, while that of other places has been correspondingly advanced, by the necessary inequality of progress in railroad building. These general assertions are so abundantly proved in the history of the different localities contained in this work, and in every county the railroad has been such an important factor, that a brief history of railroad building in Texas needs no further apology in these pages.

### FROM 1850 TO THE CIVIL WAR

In 1850 Texas had not a mile of railroad track, engine nor cars. Fourteen years before, December 16, 1836, the first railroad charter had been granted in the republic, but this, with many others, had been forfeited.

The first Texas railroad originated at Harrisburg, and was the Buffalo Bayou, Brazos & Colorado Railway, which was incorporated by the act of February 11, 1850. Harrisburg was the center of railroad enterprise for many years. In 1840 some citizens undertook the construction of what was known as the Harrisburg & Brazos Railroad, and an item in the *Houston Star* (May 16, 1840) says: "Laborers are said to be grading and preparing for laying of rails." This road was chartered (Janu-

ary 9, 1841) as the Harrisburg Railroad & Trading Company. Some grading was actually done, but as the work depended on local capital, it being impossible to secure outside capital as long as the existence of the republic was threatened, the undertaking failed.

Harrisburg offered its unsold lots as a bonus for the railroad, and General Sidney Sherman and associates finally arranged with eastern capital and secured the charter of 1850 under which the first successful railroad enterprise of Texas was begun.

Under the supervision of General Sherman, construction commenced at Harrisburg in 1851. In 1852 the first engine was brought to Texas and placed on the track, its weight being about one-tenth that of a modern locomotive. The first passenger coaches had been used as street cars in the east, and had only four wheels to each car. In August, 1853, the road was completed twenty miles, to Stafford's Point, in Brazoria county, where a barbecue celebrated the event. In 1854 the road reached what is now Sugarland, and by December, 1855, the track terminated on the east bank of the Brazos opposite Richmond. The bridge over the river here was a temporary wooden structure, with center spans that, for allowing the passage of boats, were carried to one side on flat-boats. By the fall of 1859 the terminus was at Eagle Lake, and a year later at Alleyton, on the east side of the Colorado, about two miles from Columbus.

The gauge adopted for this road was four feet eight and a half inches. At that time there was no uniformity of gauge among American railways, and consequently little interchange of rolling stock. A carload of freight could not be switched from one road to another, unless the gauges happened to be the same. Eventually, when the majority of roads adopted what is known as the "standard gauge," the width was the same as that originally determined upon by the B. B., B. & C. Another fact of interest about this pioneer Texas road was that no practicable telegraph was used in connection with operation of trains until 1868, more than twenty years after the invention was first put to use.

The total receipts of this road, eighty miles in length, for the year ending April 30, 1860, were \$132,477. Twenty percent of this was from passengers, 35 percent from merchandise, and 33 percent from cotton. Cotton was then the largest single commodity, and at that time the road tapped the richest cotton region of Texas.

The second railroad to be commenced in this decade was the Houston & Texas Central. The original charter of this road is the oldest in Texas,



that is, was the first of many similar charters that was fulfilled by actual railroad construction. The Galveston & Red River Railroad was chartered by act of March 11, 1848 (two years before the incorporation of the B. B., B. & C. Ry.). In 1850 an extension of time for beginning construction was granted. Two years later the legislature gave another extension, and at the same time legalized the commencement of the road at Houston instead of Galveston. Another amendment (January, 1856) allowed the company until July 31, 1856, to complete the first twenty-five miles. The concession by which the company was permitted to begin building at Houston instead of Galveston was one of the causes that made the former city the railroad center of South Texas. September 1, 1856, another amendment to the charter permitted a change of the original name to "Houston & Texas Central Railway Company."

Some construction work on this line was begun at Houston in 1853, but only two miles was constructed in the next two years. The first locomotive was placed on this short track January 22, 1856. The first 25-mile section, to Cypress, was completed July 27, 1856, and ten miles further, to Hockley, May 11, 1857. The original gauge of this road was five feet six inches. The iron T-rails weighed 54 pounds to the yard. In 1857 the equipment consisted of two locomotives (rather larger than the first one of the B. B., B. & C. Ry.), three passenger cars, ten box cars, ten platform cars. In 1858 construction was continued to Hempstead, and in January, 1860, cars began taking freight to Courtney and Navasota, and in March of the same year to Millican, eighty miles from Houston.

The energy with which Houston originated railroad enterprises which were actually carried out, and also turned to the advantage of the city railroads which originated elsewhere, was the conspicuous feature of this decade of railroad construction in Texas. Other Texas cities have since become great railroad centers, but Houston was first in the field and for half a century has enjoyed the commercial supremacy founded by the enterprising citizens of the fifties.

As soon as General Sherman and his associates had completed the Harrisburg road to Richmond, Houston citizens undertook the building of a tap line, over which a large share of the commerce of the Brazos valley might be diverted to the Bayou City. The Houston Tap Railroad was chartered January 26, 1856. For the construction of the road the city was authorized to levy a tax on property of one percent, and a license tax was also voted unanimously. The construction of the seven miles

of the road, to Pierce Junction, was begun in March, 1856, and was completed at a cost of \$120,000, a schedule of trains being put in operation October 1st. One locomotive was used, while the "passenger coach" was not unloaded at the dock for several weeks after the road began operation. The schedule announced that cars left Houston daily except Tuesdays and Thursdays at 8 a. m., returning in time for the mail steamer to Galveston. According to a report in the *Telegraph*, "the cars run, all things considered, with very little jar."

September 1, 1856, a charter was granted for the Houston Tap & Brazoria Railway Company. Nominally this was a separate corporation, but the object was really an extension of the Houston Tap beyond the Harrisburg road into the rich plantation district of Brazoria county. A company was organized under the charter in July, 1857, the first president being J. D. Waters. The seven miles of the Houston Tap was purchased, and construction work was commenced toward Columbia on the Brazos. An official report, dated August, 1859, stated that thirty-five miles from Houston was in operation, and the line was finished to Columbia by the end of the year. It was planned to continue the road into Matagorda and Wharton counties, and some grading was done west of the Brazos. The war proved a permanent interruption, and the terminus still remains where it was fifty years ago.

This road was constructed by the enterprise of Houston merchants and the planters along the line. It was formerly called the "sugar road" from the fact that a chief object of its construction was the transportation of sugar from Brazoria and adjoining counties to Houston. The crushing blow to the plantation industry given by the war, and the subsequent decline of sugar growing in the "sugar bowl" district, account for the long period of adversity endured by this road.

The Texas & New Orleans Railroad was chartered under the name of the Sabine & Galveston Bay Railroad & Lumber Company, September 1, 1856 (the name being changed to the one in present use, December 24, 1859). By the charter, construction had to begin within one year. The following item from the Houston *Telegraph* of September 2, 1857, relates how the charter was saved from forfeit: "Some twenty-five or thirty of our leading citizens repaired to the point where the line strikes the eastern boundary of our city, about two miles from the bayou, and, armed with spades and pickaxes, under the direction of the engineer, formally broke ground on this great enterprise. First in the work was

the treasurer of the company, Dr. I. S. Roberts, and after him followed all who were present."

Col. A. M. Gentry of Houston was president of the company, and the principal offices were located at Houston. The road was planned from Houston through Liberty and Beaumont to Madison (now Orange) on the Sabine, there to connect with a road chartered by Louisiana to extend to Berwick's Bay, then the western terminus of the New Orleans & Opelousas Railroad—making a trunk line connecting the Texas railroads centering at Houston with the eastern lines at New Orleans.

The gauge of this road was five and one-half feet, so that when this line was consolidated with the Southern Pacific system it became necessary to reduce the width to the standard gauge. The work of construction began in earnest in the spring of 1858, when the line was partially graded between Houston and Liberty. In 1859 work progressed at other points, and in August, 1860, one of the contractors reported track laid from Orange to Liberty, a distance of sixty-six miles. The company owned a steamer for transporting rails, machinery and other supplies for the Texas division, and until the opening of the Louisiana division it was planned to use a steamer from Sabine bay to New Orleans. By the beginning of 1861 the Texas division was ready for operation.

The Eastern Texas Railroad also belongs in this period. A charter was granted in 1852 to the Henderson & Burkville Railroad. Permission was afterwards given to begin construction on the coast, and in 1856 the name was changed to the Mexican Gulf & Henderson Railroad. The following year some clearing was done a few miles north of Beaumont, but in 1858 the plans were surrendered to a new corporation, the Eastern Texas Railroad Company. During the next two years about thirty miles were graded northward from Sabine Pass, and during 1860 twenty-five miles were equipped with rolling stock.

The first railroad connecting Galveston island with the interior of Texas was the Galveston, Houston & Henderson. It was designed as an air line from Galveston to Henderson, and was chartered February 7, 1853. Several extensions of time were granted for the completion of the first forty miles. In December, 1855, fourteen schooner loads of timber for construction, brought from Florida and rafted from Galveston to Virginia Point, were swept away by a storm and very little recovered. This was one of many difficulties in the progress of the road. Grading began at Virginia Point in 1856. At Clear creek, where the first large embankment was required, a gang of negroes furnished from a Brazos

plantation carried the dirt in pans borne on their heads to make the fill. In March, 1857, track-laying began at Virginia Point. The editor of the *Texas Almanac*, writing at the close of 1858, said: "We learn that the forty miles required by law to be completed by the first of November were finally finished and ready for the locomotive on October 23, and that the two and one-half miles more to reach Main street in Houston will be completed in a few days."

A steam ferry was to operate between Virginia Point and Galveston until the completion of the bridge and track on the island. In 1857 Galveston, by an almost unanimous vote, authorized the expenditure of \$100,000 for the construction of a bridge over the bay. The city was to pay for the bridge, one-half in bonds and one-half in cash, and the railroad company was to pay interest on bonds and the principal at maturity, when the ownership of the bridge would pass to the railroad company. Construction of the bridge began in the latter part of 1858 and was finished in 1859. Until the road was completed to Houston in 1858 all hauling over the tracks was done by ox or horse traction. The "Perseverance" and the "Brazos" were the first locomotives, and in 1859 trains began running from Galveston to Houston.

The Galveston bridge was destroyed by storm, October 3, 1867. It was reconstructed and opened June 25, 1868. At that time the railroad property was in receivership, and the reorganized G., H. & H. R. R. Co., to which it was sold in 1871, was said to be dominated by Jay Gould. In 1883 the G., H. & H. was leased for ninety-nine years to the I. & G. N. as its Galveston outlet, but in 1895 the lease was surrendered and the road leased, on equal terms, to the I. & G. N. and the M., K. & T. for forty years.

The Washington County Railroad was a short line built before the war, and owed its origin to the enterprise of the citizens of Washington county, who, when the H. & T. C. was extended up the east side of the Brazos, undertook the construction of a branch from Hempstead as an outlet for the crops of their county. The charter was granted February 2, 1856, the road to run from any point on the H. & T. C. to Brenham, county seat of Washington county, and construction to begin before July 1, 1858.

The first officers of the company were: J. D. Giddings, president; A. G. Compton, secretary-treasurer, and C. A. Haskins, engineer and superintendent. The secretary's report, September, 1860, stated that the first section of eleven and one-half miles to near Chappel Hill was finished

in May, 1859, and trains were operated from Hempstead to the Brazos river beginning February 22, 1860. The total income for transportation during 1860 was about \$2,500. The road was opened to Brenham (twenty-five miles) October 1, 1860.

The San Antonio & Mexican Gulf Railroad Company was chartered September 5, 1850, to build a line from some point on the gulf between Corpus Christi and Galveston to San Antonio. Extensions of time were necessary, as construction did not begin at Port Lavaca until 1856. The state engineer's report on the road in 1858 stated that the five miles necessary to prevent forfeiture of the charter were completed and in running order previous to January 31, 1858. The engineer said: "The remarkable fact may be stated that this five miles of road, terminating in the open prairie, at a point remote from any settlement or public highway, has not only been of vast service to the people of western Texas, but has actually overpaid running expenses. I not only learn this from the officers and agents of the company, but witnessed myself the immense business it was doing; the noise and bustle; the hundreds of wagons and teams and teamsters drawn to its present terminus or station in the prairie." The original gauge of this road was five and one-half feet. The first officers and directors of the road were composed of residents along the proposed route, most of them from San Antonio. W. J. Clarke, the president, and S. A. Maverick, the treasurer, were from San Antonio, and William J. Keen, secretary, was a Lavaca resident. After the grading was completed nearly to Victoria, operations were suspended until I. A. Paschal of San Antonio procured additional capital from Europe. The road was open for traffic to Victoria (twenty-eight miles) in April, 1861.

January 21, 1858, the Indianola Railroad Company was chartered to construct a road from Indianola on Powderhorn bayou to a connection with the S. A. & M. G. not more than five miles from Lavaca. A few miles were graded, but in 1860 the road was absorbed by the S. A. & M. G.

Another transportation enterprise had its beginning at Aransas Pass. By act of February 14, 1852, the legislature chartered the Aransas Road Company, the ostensible object being to construct a causeway and turnpike from the Aransas Pass across the peninsula to the mainland, and thence to Goliad, a supplemental act allowing the company to improve navigation over the bar and construct a drawbridge. Another amendment (February 16, 1858) gave the right to substitute a railroad for

turnpike, and to build the line to the Rio Grande. The plan was to build a Texas railroad to connect with a coordinate enterprise in Mexico, giving a trunk line to the Pacific at Mazatlan. Internal troubles in Mexico and the subsequent Civil war in the United States were the patent causes of failure. Realization of the plan might have given a very different direction to the railroad and economic development between the Pacific coast and the Mississippi valley. In August, 1859, the work of grading across the shallows and peninsula to the mainland was begun. After most of the levee had been thrown up, the work was suspended, until the revised plan of a railroad from this point was put into effect twenty-five years later.

One other Texas railroad had its beginning before the war. The Texas & Pacific, as it is now known, was the result of consolidation of two original enterprises—the Memphis, El Paso & Pacific, and the Southern Pacific. October 1, 1859, the former of these had thirty-five miles of track graded and the latter had completed twenty-seven and one-half miles in Texas. What was known as the Southern Pacific had its road in operation between Marshall, Texas, and Shreveport, Louisiana, by the beginning of the war. The other line was planned to extend from Texarkana toward El Paso. A branch line for construction purposes was begun at Jefferson, and five miles completed before the war.

The total length of railways in operation in Texas at the beginning of the Civil war was 492 miles.\* The city of Houston was the original starting point or a terminus of four-fifths of this mileage.

#### THE CIVIL WAR DECADE

The Civil war not only decreased traffic and operation of railroads, but, as a war measure, some of the track laid at so great expense was destroyed. In December, 1863, by order of General Magruder, the S. A. & M. G. Railroad from Port Lavaca to Victoria was destroyed, the rails having been torn up, the ties and some of the cars burned, and the engines rendered unfit for service. At the close of the war the federal authorities rebuilt this line. The T. & N. O. was partially dismantled by the Confederates in 1865, and operation of trains was suspended for a number of years. The Eastern Texas Railroad was also destroyed, most of the rails having been torn up and used by the Confederates in con-

\* "Railroad Transportation in Texas," Charles S. Potts.

structing the fort at Sabine Pass. That demolition closed the history of the enterprise.

The limited facilities of passenger service over the few Texas roads in operation in 1864 are shown by the schedule of trains published in the Texas Almanac for 1865:

H. & T. C.—Trains leave Houston every day, except Sunday, at 10 a. m., and reach Hempstead, 50 miles, at 2 p. m., connecting with the Washington County Railroad and tri-weekly stages from Brenham to Austin. Leave Hempstead at 2 p. m. and reach Navasota, 20 miles, at 4 p. m., where the cars connect with tri-weekly stages to Shreveport. Leave Navasota at 4 p. m. and reach Millican at 5 p. m., where cars connect with tri-weekly stages to Waco and Dallas. Returning leave Millican at 7 a. m., Navasota at 8 a. m., Hempstead at 10 a. m. and reach Houston at 2 p. m.

Washington County R. R.—Trains leave Brenham every day at 6 a. m. and reach Hempstead, 25 miles, at 9 a. m. Returning, leave Hempstead at 2 p. m. and reach Brenham at 4 p. m.

B., B., B. & C. R. R.—Trains leave Harrisburg for Alleyton Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays at 9 a. m. Returning, leave Alleyton Tuesdays, Thursdays and Saturdays at 8 a. m., making connections at Houston Junction with the H. T. & B. R. R. from Houston and Columbia.

H. T. & B. R. R.—Trains run three times a week between Houston and Columbia, 50 miles.

G. H. & H. R. R.—Trains leave Galveston Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays at 9 a. m.; arrive at Houston at 1:30 p. m. Return alternate days.

T. & N. O. R. R.—Trains leave Houston Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays at 7 a. m. and arrive at Beaumont at 4 p. m.; return alternate days.

Besides the disorganization and financial difficulties of the different railway companies, the physical condition of the roads continued at a low ebb until Texas was readmitted to the Union in 1870. The H. & T. C. was the first road to resume progressive construction. Beginning at the old terminus at Millican in 1866, this road was extended to Bryan in 1867, to Calvert in 1868, and by 1870 to Groesbeck, 170 miles from Houston. The old Washington County Railroad was purchased by the H. & T. C. in 1867, and its line was rapidly extended from Brenham to Austin, being completed fifty miles, to Ledbetter, in 1870.

The T. & N. O., which was a bankrupt property, had for several years ceased operations altogether, but by 1870 operated trains from Houston to West Liberty, a distance of thirty-five miles. The Columbus

Tap Railway Company, which had been incorporated in February, 1860, to construct a railroad and bridge to connect Columbus with the then terminus of the B. B. B. & C. road at Alleyton, completed this short line in 1868. No other work was done on the Harrisburg road during this decade. By 1870 the old Southern Pacific was extended beyond Marshall to Hallville, while a hundred miles of the M. E. P. & P. had been completed west from Texarkana. The above comprises all the noteworthy additions to Texas railroads up to 1870. No construction had begun under new charters, and the H. & T. C. was the only road that thoroughly recovered from the effects of war and made important additions to its mileage.

#### FROM 1870 TO 1880.

About 2,500 miles of railroad were built in Texas during this decade. The progress of the old roads will first be noticed.

The main line of the H. & T. C. was extended to Corsicana (210 miles from Houston) in 1871, to McKinney in 1872, and to the northern terminus at Denison by January 1, 1873. The Austin branch from Hempstead was completed to the capital by 1872.

The Waco Tap Railroad was incorporated November 5, 1866, but no construction was done. August 6, 1870, the name was changed to Waco & Northwestern. The road began at Bremond on the main line of the H. & T. C., and reached Marlin in 1871, and was completed to Waco September 18, 1872. Though under a separate charter, this line was built by the H. & T. C. interests, and by act of May 24, 1873, the latter company was authorized to acquire the property and franchises.

During this decade, by consolidation and new construction, important links were formed in the present "Sunset Route." By the act of July 27, 1870, the Galveston, Harrisburg & San Antonio Railroad was chartered to succeed the B. B. B. & C., and to acquire the corporate rights of the Columbus Tap, and extend the road west to San Antonio and thence to the Rio Grande. The title "Sunset Route" was soon after applied to this road, a name that has since become the popular and official designation of the entire Southern Pacific system. Thomas W. Pierce became the president and principal owner of the road, and by his own wealth and energy, with the liberal subsidies voted by the counties along the route, constructed what has become acknowledged as one of the best railroad properties in the country.



From Columbus the G. H. & S. A. was extended to Schulenburg in 1873, to Luling in 1874 and Kingsbury in 1875, and in September, 1876, reached the Guadalupe at Marion. February 19, 1877, the formal opening of the road to San Antonio was celebrated by an excursion train, carrying many notable citizens to the Alamo city.

In 1877 the general offices of this road were removed from Harrisburg to Houston, thus depriving that pioneer seat of railroad enterprise of its last important honors as a transportation center. Houston had connection with the main line over the old Houston Tap, but a new branch was now built to Stella and opened in 1880.

The S. A. & M. G. (from Port Lavaca to Victoria) and the Indianola Railroad (partly destroyed during the war, but later rebuilt for a few miles) were consolidated under the new charter granted to the Gulf, Western Texas & Pacific Railway, August 4, 1870. Under this name the road was extended and opened for traffic to Cuero, May 31, 1874.

The T. & N. O. Railroad was not reopened for traffic over the entire distance from Houston to Orange until August 1, 1876.

The Houston Tap & Brazoria Railroad was discontinued after the war and, except over the Tap between Houston and the Harrisburg road, no trains were operated for some years. In February, 1871, the property was sold to the Houston & Great Northern, and after being improved was again operated, and has since been a constituent part of the I. & G. N. system.

The Houston & Great Northern Railroad was chartered October 22 1866. The principal offices were located at Houston, and the president of the road during its early period of building was Galusha A. Grow. By 1871 fifty miles were in operation, from Houston to Willis in Montgomery county; it was extended to Trinity (eighty-eight miles) in January, 1872; and to Palestine (152 miles) in November, 1872. In 1873 the Huntsville branch and the Houston Tap & Brazoria were both absorbed by the H. & G. N.

August 5, 1870, the International Railroad was chartered to build a line from Red river opposite Fulton, Arkansas, across Texas by Austin and San Antonio towards Laredo on the Rio Grande. The company was organized at New York in October, 1870, and construction began at Hearne in Robertson county the latter part of the same year. In 1871 fifty miles were in operation, to Jewett in Leon county. The road was rapidly extended, to Palestine in February, 1872, and to Longview (174

miles) in December of the same year. At Longview it connected with the Texas & Pacific and at Palestine with the H. & G. N.

September 23, 1873, the I. & G. N. Railroad was incorporated, with authority to purchase and consolidate the International and the Houston & Great Northern, with their branches. The main line was extended west from Hearne to Austin in 1876. Austin was the terminus for a year or so, and construction was then continued to San Antonio and to Laredo, the first train running to the Rio Grande in 1881. In April, 1874, the branch from Troupe to Mineola was opened, that between Overton and Henderson in 1877, and the connection between the main line and Georgetown was built in 1878 and later absorbed by the I. & G. N.

Until the late '70s Galveston had but one railroad, the G. H. & H., which connected with the railroad system of the state at Houston. At its inception the Gulf, Colorado & Santa Fe was a Galveston enterprise, planned to penetrate the central region of the state and draw its commerce directly to Galveston without the necessity of paying tribute to Houston. The Santa Fe did much to make Galveston an independent railroad terminal, freed from the restrictions imposed by its business rival on the bayou. The following sketch of the road's early history was written by Ben C. Stuart in the *Galveston News*:

"The Gulf, Colorado & Santa Fe Railway was not originally connected with the Atchison system, but was an exclusively Galveston enterprise. It was incorporated by an act of the legislature May 28, 1873. The capital stock was fixed at a maximum limit of \$7,000,000, and the minimum at \$2,000,000, which was the amount under which the company received a land grant from the state of sixteen alternate sections, or 10,240 acres, for every mile of road constructed, and under this provision of its charter secured a total of 3,259,520 acres of the public domain. Under an act of the legislature approved April 12, 1871, by which cities or counties were permitted to donate or subscribe bonds for the purpose of aiding in railroad construction, an election was held at which Galveston county voted to issue \$500,000 in bonds, taking therefor five thousand shares of the capital stock of the company at the par value of one hundred dollars a share. This was one-fourth of the minimum capitalization of the company under which it began operations. Under the original act of incorporation the road was to be constructed from Galveston by way of Caldwell, Cameron, Belton and Eastland to the Canadian river in the Panhandle, up that stream to the state line, and thence to Santa Fe.

"Among the early officers and directors of the company were M. Kopperl, president; James Sorley, vice president; C. R. Hughes, secretary; H. Rosenberg, R. S. Willis, J. E. Wallis, C. B. Lee, Walter Gresham, W. L. Moody, Julius Runge, H. Kempner, C. W. Hurley, H. Marwitz and C. E. Richards. The work of grading was begun in May, 1875. Gen. Braxton Bragg, who had been a distinguished Confederate officer during the Civil war, was appointed chief engineer, and under his direction work on the trestle bridge across the bay was begun in 1875, the structure being much damaged in the storm of that autumn. General Bragg remained with the road until September 27, 1876, when he was suddenly stricken with heart disease while crossing a Galveston street and fell dead. He was succeeded as chief engineer by the late Maj. B. M. Temple."

The company was reorganized in 1879, at which time George Sealy became president. "He had been largely instrumental in forming the syndicate to take over the road, and the line was extended mainly through the capital and credit of Galveston people and the influence of Mr. Sealy and other members of the firm of Ball, Hutchings, & Co."

The road was opened from Galveston to Arcola in 1876, and two years later to Richmond. After the reorganization, the line was pushed on to Brenham, in 1880, and to Belton, 226 miles from Galveston, in February, 1881.

During the decade of the '70s the greater part of the Texas & Pacific Railway was constructed across North Texas. In the decade before the war, the Memphis, El Paso & Pacific had been commenced near Texarkana February 1, 1857, and over fifty miles graded before the war. Construction was renewed in 1869, and March 1, 1870, fifty miles were in operation, and by June 15, 1870, one hundred miles were finished.

July 27, 1870, the Southern Trans-Continental Railway Company was incorporated with authority to purchase the M. E. P. & P., which under its charter had fallen into financial and legal straits. March 24, 1871, an act granted three million dollars in state bonds to the Trans-Continental company and also to the Southern Pacific company on condition that they extended their lines to a junction not east of Shackelford county; and also authorized the consolidation of the two companies under the name of Texas & Pacific Railway Company. The consolidation was effected in March, 1872.

Col. Thomas A. Scott was the propelling genius of this enterprise.

The old Southern Pacific had been built from Shreveport to Longview, and this, as the main line of the Texas & Pacific, was extended on to Dallas in 1873. The Jefferson branch, between Marshall and Texarkana, was completed about 1875. A little later the Trans-Continental division, from Texarkana, was completed to Sherman.

The financial panic of 1873 had begun just two weeks after the completion of the main line of the T. & P. to Dallas. Railroad building during the next three years made little progress. The T. & P. Railway Company extended the main line beyond the Trinity to Eagle Ford, but could get no further. Fort Worth was in the meanwhile waiting with impatience the arrival of the first railroad train. Despairing of outside aid, the citizens finally in the fall of 1875 organized the Tarrant County Construction Company, which undertook the grading of the road into Fort Worth. The following spring the railroad company was able to proceed with track-laying, and on July 19, 1876, the first train arrived at Fort Worth. In 1880, also largely through the aid of local enterprise, the main line was extended to Weatherford, and from that point construction went on rapidly to the west during 1880 and 1881. By 1880 the Trans-Continental branch was built from Sherman to Fort Worth.

The first railroad to reach Texas from the north was the Missouri, Kansas & Texas. The nucleus of this system was chartered September 20, 1865, and construction work soon began at Junction City, Kansas. It was pushed on to the southern boundary of that state and was opened to Chetopa, June 1, 1870. During 1871 and 1872 the road continued building through Indian Territory, and in the last months of 1872 crossed the Red river and halted in a corn field four miles away, in Grayson county. Around this terminus, to which trains began to be operated on January 1, 1873, there sprang into existence the town of Denison.

The first charter of a "narrow-gauge" railway in Texas was that approved August 4, 1870, and was originated by Dr. Ingham S. Roberts as the Western Narrow Gauge Railway. T. W. House, R. O. Love, Dr. Ingham S. Roberts, Eugene Pillot and other well-known Houston business men were among the incorporators. Its name was changed, February 6, 1875, to Texas Western Narrow Gauge Railway. The road was built from Houston to Patterson near the Brazos river, and later, in 1882, was built from Patterson to Sealy. This original narrow-gauge line was dismantled, and its route from Sealy to Houston has since been followed by the M. K. & T. The H. E. & W. T. Railroad is a line from Houston to Shreveport, incorporated March 11, 1875, and was the work

principally of the late Paul Bremond. In 1870 the road was open to Goodrich, sixty-two miles, and was extended to Moscow in 1880, to Burke in 1881, to Nacogdoches in 1882, and to the Sabine river by December, 1885. The Louisiana portion of the road is the Shreveport & Houston, and service between these terminals was inaugurated in January, 1886. The line was changed from narrow to standard gauge in 1894.

#### 1880 TO 1890

By 1880 the Southern Pacific Railroad had been built from the Pacific coast to El Paso. There remained the gap of about five hundred miles between El Paso and San Antonio, the latter being the western end of the G. H. & S. A. Building then began at both these terminals, and with the closing of the gap in 1883 the southern transcontinental line was completed, so the trains could run from New Orleans to the Pacific.

In North Texas, the extension of the T. & P. westward from Weatherford had begun in 1880, and proceeded with great rapidity. In the summer of 1881 track-laying went on at the average of two miles a day. By October, 1880, construction trains had reached Eastland City, 100 miles from Fort Worth, and the first train entered El Paso over this road in January, 1882, using the tracks of the Southern Pacific from Sierra Blanca to El Paso.

During this decade Texas obtained another north and south trunk line. The G. C. & S. F. had been built from Galveston to Belton by February, 1881. Through the inducements offered by citizens of Fort Worth, Cleburne and in other counties, the building of a connecting line between Fort Worth and the main line was undertaken during 1881 and proceeded with so much energy that the first train from Temple to Fort Worth entered the latter city December 2, 1881. This portion of the road was then considered a branch. The main line was extended from Belton to Lampasas in May, 1882; to Brownwood in January, 1886; from Brownwood to Coleman in March, 1886; Coleman to Ballinger, June, 1886; and Ballinger to San Angelo, in September, 1888.

In 1886 the G. C. & S. F., through an exchange of stock, was consolidated with the A., T. & S. F. system. By January, 1887, the line of the Santa Fe from Fort Worth to Gainesville was in operation, and a few months later, by construction of the line between the latter point and Purcell, Indian Territory, the Texas divisions of the Santa Fe were

linked with the main trunks of the system. The G. C. & S. F. is one of the few among Texas railroads that have never been in the hands of a receiver. Even at the time the Atchison system outside of Texas was in the hands of a receiver, the Gulf line, through the efforts of Mr. Sealy, was kept out of the courts.

The branch from Alvin connecting Houston with the main line of the Santa Fe was built about 1884. In 1882 the Central & Montgomery Railroad, from Navasota to Montgomery, was purchased, and in 1883 this was joined to the main line by an extension from Navasota to Somerville, and in 1885 this branch was built to Conroe. In 1882 the branch from Cleburne to Dallas was put in operation, and thence extended to Paris in June, 1887.

The Corpus Christi, San Diego & Rio Grande Railroad, originally narrow-gauge, was chartered March 13, 1875, was built from Corpus Christi to San Diego, fifty miles, by 1879, and was extended fifty miles farther in 1880. In 1881 it was completed to Laredo, and the present name, Texas Mexican Railway, adopted. It is operated as part of the Mexican National system.

The Texas Central Railroad was chartered May 28, 1879. Construction was begun at Ross, the terminus of the Waco division of the H. & T. C., and the line was completed to Albany (176 miles) in 1882. In 1899 this road was extended to Stamford, and about 1907 was continued to Rotan in Fisher county.

The New York, Texas & Mexican Railroad (now part of the Sunset System) was chartered in 1880. Construction began at Rosenberg, on the main line of the G. H. & S. A., and the ninety-two miles to Victoria were completed January 15, 1882.

The branch of the Gulf, Western Texas & Pacific from Victoria to Beeville was built in 1890.

About 1880 the Gonzales Branch Railroad was built from Harwood to Gonzales, connecting the latter town with the main line of the G. H. & S. A.

An important Texas railroad that originated and was mostly built during this decade was the San Antonio & Aransas Pass. Prominent residents of San Antonio originated this plan of a railroad directly to the gulf. Uriah Lott was the first president, and among the early directors were George W. Brackenridge, B. F. Yoakum, W. H. Maverick, Henry Elmendorf. The company was chartered August 28, 1884, and construction began in August, 1885. The charter had been so amended as to

provide for connecting San Antonio with all quarters of Texas. The line from San Antonio to Beeville was completed in 1886, and by the following year had reached Corpus Christi and Aransas Pass. June 1, 1887, the Kerrville branch had reached Boerne. During the next two years the line from Kenedy to Houston was completed; Kerrville was reached; the branch from Yoakum toward Waco was built fifty miles to West Point, and the Brownsville division was built from Skidmore to Kleberg. In 1891 the Waco branch was complete, and about the same time the Austin branch was constructed from Shiner as far as Lockhart. The only subsequent addition to the "Sap" system was the extension from Alice to Falfurrias, built in 1904.

The Fort Worth & Denver City Railway was chartered May 26, 1873, but owing to the panic of that year eight years passed before the work of construction began. The first grading was begun at Hodge, several miles north of Fort Worth, in November, 1881, the first rails were laid the following February, and Wichita Falls was reached September 27, 1882. This was the first line to penetrate the country to the northwest of Fort Worth, and the immediate results were seen in the upbuilding of towns and a general transformation in agricultural conditions and settlement. All the now flourishing towns west of Henrietta, including Wichita Falls, Vernon, Quanah and Amarillo, begin their history practically with the building of the railroad. According to the terms of the charter, the Fort Worth & Denver City should have been completed by Christmas day, 1882. But extension west from Wichita Falls was not resumed until May, 1885. By April, 1887, Quanah was the western terminus, while the Denver, Texas & Fort Worth, as the Colorado division of the road was known, had been built 138 miles from Pueblo. The two divisions met at Texline and were connected March 14, 1888, thus opening the shortest rail line between the gulf and Colorado points.

During this decade some important additions were made to the network of rails controlled by the H. & T. C. Ry. Co. The Waxahachie Tap Railway had been chartered in 1875, but the name was subsequently changed to Central Texas & Northwestern, and was opened from Garret to Waxahachie, a distance of twelve miles, in 1881. The Fort Worth & New Orleans was chartered in 1885 to build between the two cities named. This enterprise originated in Fort Worth, whose citizens raised \$75,000 to construct the first division. Work was begun in September, 1885, and the line was opened to Waxahachie in May, 1886. Both these

roads soon after fell into the control of the Southern Pacific interests and were used to provide a Fort Worth branch for the H. & T. C.

The St. Louis Southwestern Railway, commonly called the "Cotton Belt," was originally a narrow gauge line beginning at Bird's Point, opposite Cairo, Illinois. In Texas the original portion of this system was the Tyler Tap Railroad, which was chartered December 1, 1871. With a three-foot gauge, the road was opened from Tyler to Ferguson, 21 miles, in 1871, and to Mt. Pleasant in 1878. This road in 1879 became the property of the Texas and St. Louis Railway Company, which in 1881 completed the road west from Tyler to Waco, and in 1882 it was extended to Gatesville, the present western terminus. In 1883 the main line from Missouri to Texarkana was opened. During 1884-86 the system was in a receivership. It was reorganized under two companies, known as the St. Louis, Arkansas & Texas Railway Company. At a cost of several million dollars the gauge was changed to standard. In 1887-88 the road was built from Mt. Pleasant to Sherman and to Fort Worth, and the Corsicana-Hillsboro branch was also completed. In 1887 the Kansas & Gulf Short Line, from Tyler to Lufkin, was purchased. This line had been chartered in 1880 and had been built in 1882. In 1890 another reorganization occurred, when all the Texas properties except the Lufkin branch last mentioned, were turned over to the St. Louis Southwestern Railway Company of Texas. The Tyler & Southeastern Railway Co. owned the Lufkin branch until 1899, when it again became a part of the Cotton Belt. In 1903 it was extended from Lufkin to Warsaw, and has recently been constructed to White City.

Many of the lines constituting the M. K. & T. railroad group in Texas were constructed during the '80s. In the winter of 1878-79 what was at first known as the Denison & Pacific began building from Denison west, being completed to Whitesboro in March, 1879, and to Gainesville in November of the same year. In January, 1880, this line was purchased by the M. K. & T. company. In 1887 the Gainesville, Henrietta & Western was built to Henrietta and subsequently the Wichita Falls Railway was built to the town of that name. The Trans-Continental division of the Texas & Pacific from Sherman to Fort Worth was built in 1880, and the M. K. & T. has since used this line from Whitesboro to Fort Worth. The part of the M. K. & T. lines from Denton to Dallas had been constructed as the Dallas & Wichita Railroad, which was chartered in 1871, had been built as far as Lewisville in 1874



and was completed to Denton in 1880. This road was purchased by the "Katy" in 1884.

From Fort Worth south the main line of this system was built by a subsidiary company called the Taylor, Bastrop & Houston Railroad Company. By 1884 this was opened to Taylor, with a branch to Belton, and in 1886 under the same name the road was built to Boggy Tank in Fayette county a few miles east of Fayetteville. The same company built the line from San Marcos to Lockhart, in 1887. From Boggy Tank to Houston the M. K. & T. company extended its main line in 1892, and in 1895 secured an outlet to Galveston over the G. H. & H. tracks. From Smithville to Lockhart the road was opened in 1892, and by the opening of the extension from San Marcos to San Antonio, in May, 1901, the Katy completed connections with all the chief cities of Texas. In 1903 the short line from Granger to Austin, built by the Granger, Georgetown, Austin & San Antonio Ry. Co., was acquired, and in the same year was extended to Austin.

The M. K. & T. from Hillsboro to Dallas was originally the Dallas & Waco, which had been chartered in 1886, and was constructed to Waxahachie in 1889, to Milford in 1890, and then being acquired by the M. K. & T. was completed to Hillsboro in 1891.

In 1877-78 the Denison & Southeastern was completed from Denison to Greenville, and soon afterward acquired by the M. K. & T. In 1884 this line had been extended from Greenville to Mineola. In 1876 the citizens of Jefferson had constructed the East Line & Red River Railroad, a narrow-gauge line, from Jefferson to Greenville. This became a part of the M. K. & T. system about 1884, and was extended as a broad gauge from Greenville to McKinney. From Jefferson to the state line this road was built about 1902.

The isolated branch of the M. K. & T. from Trinity to Colmesneil was built about 1882, under the name of Trinity & Sabine Railroad, this having been constructed as a branch of the I. & G. N.

The miles of railroad in operation in Texas in 1880 were 3,244. Over five thousand miles were constructed during the following decade, and with one or two exceptions the trunk lines of Texas were completed. In 1891 the railway mileage of the state was 8,654. In 1900 it was 9,867, showing an increase of only twelve hundred miles during the decade. In 1909 the miles in operation were 13,277. In the following paragraphs are summarized the important railroad constructions during the last two decades.

The Frisco system had its nucleus in the Southwest branch of the Pacific Railroad, built from Pacific to Rolla, Mo., in 1861. This was purchased by J. C. Fremont and associates and was known as the Southwest Pacific to 1868. It was extended to Springfield, Mo., and known as the South Pacific, in 1870 was merged with the Atlantic & Pacific, and in 1878 the different lines were organized under the present name of the St. Louis & San Francisco Railway Company.

The oldest part of the Frisco System in Texas was the Fort Worth & Rio Grande Railroad, which originated among the railroad-building citizens of Fort Worth. The company was chartered in 1885 and construction began on November 23, 1886. The first division to Granbury was completed August 25, 1887. In 1889 work was resumed, and the road was extended to Stephenville by October, 1890, and Brownwood was reached July 16, 1891. The consolidation of this line with the other Frisco lines of Texas was authorized in March, 1903, and about that time the road had been extended to Brady and is now in process of construction to Menardville.

In 1887 the Frisco had constructed a line from Fort Smith, Ark., to Paris, Texas, the seventeen miles between Paris and the Red river being called Paris & Great Northern Railroad. The Frisco lines subsequently penetrated Texas at three other points—Denison, Quanah and Vernon. In 1901 the Red River, Texas & Southern Railway was chartered by the Frisco interests, and constructed the line from Sherman to Carrollton, entrance to Fort Worth being at first obtained over the Cotton Belt, but subsequently by the Rock Island.

In 1905 the Beaumont, Sour Lake & Western was completed between Beaumont and Sour Lake, and two years later was continued to Houston. The Orange & Northwestern, between Orange and Newton, built in 1905, is also a Frisco property. By means of the Kansas City Southern from Beaumont to the state line, and by Louisiana connections, the Frisco has recently inaugurated train service between Houston and New Orleans, thus competing with the Southern Pacific.

The St. Louis, Brownsville & Mexico Railway, an allied line with the Frisco System, was chartered in June, 1903. Construction began at Brownsville, and was carried to Robstown in July, 1904, to Sinton, in April, 1905, to Bay City in 1906, and in the spring of 1907 the road was completed to Alcoa, whence the Santa Fe tracks afford entry to Houston and to Galveston. The branch line from Harlingen up the

Rio Grande valley to Sam Fordyce was completed in December, 1904.

The Chicago, Rock Island & Texas Railway Company was chartered July 15, 1892. The Rock Island line from Red river through Bowie to Fort Worth was opened in August, 1893. The branch from Bridgeport was built to Jacksboro in 1898, and extended to Graham in 1902. The line from Fort Worth to Dallas was opened in 1903. In 1900 the Chicago, Rock Island & Mexico was built across the northwest corner of the Panhandle, as part of the Rock Island lines from Kansas City to El Paso. In 1903 the Choctaw, Oklahoma & Texas was completed from the Oklahoma line to Amarillo, and this line is now (1910) about completed from Amarillo to the New Mexico line. In 1903 all these Rock Island lines were consolidated under the corporate title of Chicago, Rock Island & Gulf Railway Company.

The history of the Rock Island outlet to the Gulf, by way of the Trinity & Brazos Valley, is told as follows in Potts' "Railroad Transportation in Texas": "In 1902 the Rock Island System, in order to reach Houston and Galveston, arranged for the purchase, from the Southern Pacific company, of a one-half interest in the H. & T. C. railroad, which was to be turned over to the Rock Island Company and consolidated with its lines. For some reason the state railroad commission refused to allow the proposed transfer, presumably for the purpose of forcing the Rock Island to build its own line to tidewater, a plan it had previously had in contemplation. More recently, however, the desired outlet has been secured by the purchase of a one-half interest, along with the Colorado & Southern, in the Trinity & Brazos Valley Railroad. This road was organized October 17, 1902, and the first section from Hillsboro to Hubbard City was opened a year later. By January 26, 1904 trains were running from Cleburne to Mexia, seventy-nine miles, and during the year 1907 the main line was completed to Houston and a branch from Teague through Corsicana to Waxahachie. The use of the Santa Fe tracks from Cleburne gives it an entrance into Fort Worth, while the M. K. & T. tracks are used from Waxahachie to Dallas. The Santa Fe tracks are also used at present from Houston to Galveston. The company owns one-fourth interest in the Houston Belt & Terminal Railway, a very valuable property. The main line from Cleburne to Houston is very well constructed, with low grades and easy curves, and, as it is the only Galveston outlet for an extensive group of roads belonging both to the Rock Island and to the Colorado & Southern systems, it is certain to have a large tonnage."

A typical North Texas railroad, which recently became part of the Colorado & Southern group, is the Wichita Valley Railroad, which was incorporated February 4, 1890, Morgan Jones being its first president. During the year 1890 it built its line of railroad from Wichita Falls to Seymour, a distance of 52 miles. October 21, 1903, was organized the Wichita Falls & Oklahoma Railway, Mr. Jones being likewise president of this allied company. During the same year this company built the twenty-three miles of railroad from Wichita Falls to Byers on the Red River. Under charter of October 4, 1905, the Wichita Valley Railroad Company was authorized to build from Seymour southwest, while another company, the Abilene & Northern, built from Abilene to Stamford. These lines were connected in 1907, and about the same time were absorbed by the Colorado & Southern company.

Some important additions have been made to the Santa Fe and the Southern Pacific systems in Texas during the last two decades. These new lines, some of which were originally independent railroads and since consolidated with the larger systems, have been of special benefit to the development of East Texas.

The Gulf, Beaumont & Kansas City Railroad Company was organized March 21, 1893. John H. Kirby originated the plan of this line to develop the long-leaf pine area of East Texas, and in spite of the financial panic that followed the beginning of the enterprise he succeeded in constructing sixty-two miles during the next two or three years. It extended from Beaumont through Jasper county to Rogan. In the late '90s the Gulf, Beaumont & Great Northern Railway Co. was organized. In 1901 fifteen miles were constructed by this company from Rogan north through the town of Jasper, and on June 30, 1902, the company had 38 miles in operation. By the act of March 30, 1903, the Santa Fe company was authorized to purchase these two lines, the northern terminus of which was then at Center. In April, 1907, the consolidation of the Texas & Gulf Railroad with the Santa Fe was authorized. The Texas & Gulf at that time extended from Longview to Waterman, and has recently been completed to Grigsby. In 1910 the connection between this line and the Santa Fe road at Center was completed by a branch of the T. & G. from Zuber to Center. This gives the Santa Fe a line from Longview, in northeast Texas, to Beaumont. From Beaumont the Santa Fe has an outlet to Galveston by way of the Gulf & Interstate, which is controlled and operated under a lease by the Santa Fe. The Gulf & Interstate was built from Beaumont down the peninsula to Bolivar Point,

opposite Galveston, in 1896, the charter for the road having been granted in 1894. In the storm of September, 1900, the line from High Island to Bolivar was destroyed. The rebuilding of this section of twenty-seven miles was completed in 1903. From Bolivar the cars are ferried across the harbor to Galveston.

The branch of the Santa Fe from Somerville to Conroe, completed in 1885, has been previously mentioned. The Texas, Louisiana & Eastern Railroad Company undertook the building of a road east from Conroe, but had built only thirty-one miles, to the Trinity river, by 1897, the company having gone into receivership in July, 1895. The purchase by the Santa Fe was authorized in March, 1897, and by 1901 the line was completed to Kountze and soon afterward to Silsbee, where connection is made with the East Texas line of the Santa Fe above described.

In July, 1905, the Santa Fe acquired by lease the Cane Belt Railroad. This road was chartered in 1898, and by the end of that year it was constructed from Eagle Lake to Bonus, was finished from Sealy to Bay City in 1901 and extended to Matagorda in 1903.

In East Texas, the Southern Pacific has a line between Dallas and Sabine Pass. This was formed by the consolidation and extension of two detached lines. The Sabine & East Texas Railway was built in 1882 from Sabine Pass through Beaumont to Rockland, a distance of 103 miles. This line was then purchased by the T. & N. O. In 1897 the Texas Trunk Railroad was chartered, and was opened from Dallas to Kaufman in 1881 and to Cedar in 1883. In 1899 the ownership of the Sabine & East Texas by the T. & N. O. was confirmed by the legislature, which granted the latter road the right to purchase and consolidate the Texas Trunk on conditions that the gap between Cedar and Rockland be closed by a line connecting the two roads. This connection was opened for traffic in May, 1903.

The Southern Pacific connection between Houston and Galveston is the result of a consolidation of several short lines. The North Galveston, Houston & Kansas City Railroad was built in 1892 from Virginia Point to the peninsula north of Dickinson bayou. The Laporte, Houston & Northern Railway was constructed in 1893 from Laporte to within four miles of Houston, where it connected with the Houston Belt & Magnolia Park Railway. These lines were consolidated in 1895 as the Galveston, Laporte & Houston Railway, and the connecting link from Strang to Edgewater built so as to make a continuous line from Houston to Vir-

ginia Point. In 1899 the road was sold to the Galveston, Houston & Northern Company, and in 1905 was absorbed by the G. H. & S. A.

In 1901 a branch of the N. Y., Tex. & Mex. Railroad was built from Wharton to Van Vleck, was extended to Bay City in 1902, and to Tres Palacios on Matagorda bay in June, 1903. This, with the main line from Rosenberg to Victoria, was consolidated with the G. H. & S. A. division of the Southern Pacific in 1905.

The San Antonio & Gulf Railroad was begun in 1893 and constructed from San Antonio as far as Sutherland Springs in the same year; in 1898 it was extended a few miles further to Stockdale. The Gulf, Western Texas & Pacific, from Lavaca to Cuero, mentioned on a previous page, was acquired by the G. H. & S. A. in 1905, together with the S. A. & G. These two links were then connected by building a road from Stockdale to Cuero.

Some changes and additions have also been made to the H. & T. C. lines during the last two decades. In August, 1901, this company absorbed the Austin & Northwestern, which was chartered in 1881, was constructed as a narrow-gauge to Burnet and Granite Mountain by 1882, the stone for the state capitol being brought over this road. In 1889 it was extended to Marble Falls and in 1892 to Llano.

In 1906 was completed the Mexia-Navasota "cut-off," a line of the H. & T. C., between the stations named, which materially shortens the main line.

In 1903 the Fort Worth branch of the I. & G. N. was completed. This was chartered as the Calvert, Waco & Brazos Valley Railroad in 1899 and was consolidated with the I. & G. N. in 1901, at which time fifty-one miles had been built, from Marlin to Bryan. In 1902 it was opened from Waco to Spring, and the following year was extended ninety-five miles from Waco to Fort Worth. The Madisonville branch to Navasota was completed in 1903.

The Southern Kansas Railway of Texas began construction of its line across the Texas Panhandle in 1887. The road was completed to Washburn on the F. W. & D. C. In 1898 the Pecos & Northern Texas was commenced and completed from Amarillo to the New Mexico line by December of the same year. About the same time the Pecos River line was built from Pecos to the New Mexico boundary. All these are now operated as integral parts of the Santa Fe system. In 1907 a branch of the Pecos & Northern from Canyon City was completed as far

as Plainview, and in the spring of 1910 trains began operating from Plainview south to Lubbock and east to Floydada.

The Kansas City, Mexico & Orient Railway was organized in 1900. A. E. Stilwell, the builder of the Kansas City Southern, has been the president and enterprising promoter of this line. It is planned to connect Kansas City by a road across Kansas, Oklahoma, Texas and Mexico with the Pacific coast at Topolabampo, a route which is claimed to be several hundred miles shorter than other roads to the Pacific. In Texas this road has been completed from the Red river to San Angelo. Construction work began at Sweetwater.

## TARRANT COUNTY

Tarrant county was created by act of the legislature, December 20, 1849, about a year after the establishment of the military garrison at Fort Worth. The act directed that the first election of county officials should be held in August, 1850, and Vincent J. Hutton, Walling R. Rodgers, ——— Little, Col. M. T. Johnson and Sanders Elliott were named as commissioners to lay off sites for a county seat. Later an election was to be held to choose one of the sites proposed. "The place receiving the highest number of votes shall be the place established as the county seat of said county of Tarrant and shall be called Birdville."

The county was organized according to law and the county offices located at Birdville, an old settlement now marked by a few weather-beaten buildings that hardly tell the story of the ambitious struggles to make this place a metropolis. The rivalry between Fort Worth and Birdville over the county seat was an important chapter in the early history of the county. The act of the legislature, August 26, 1856, ordered an election to be held in the following November, to decide among the proposed sites for the county seat, and at that election Fort Worth won by a bare plurality. The election was contested, and finally the legislature directed that the citizens of the county should again vote to determine the matter. That election occurred in April, 1860, when Fort Worth received 548 votes, over 301 cast in favor of the location at the center of the county, while Birdville received only four votes out of the total.

At the census of 1850 the white population of Tarrant county was 599, and 65 slaves. In 1858 the estimated population was 4,362, including 581 slaves. The population in 1870 was 5,788; in 1880, 24,671 (2,160 negroes); in 1890, 41,142; in 1900, 52,376 (5,756 negroes).

The material progress of the county is best illustrated in some comparative figures of property assessments. The taxable wealth of the county in 1870 was valued at \$1,392,877; in 1882 it was \$7,300,686; in 1903, \$24,515,220; and in 1909, \$84,413,490.

## THE CITY OF FORT WORTH

During the last decade Fort Worth has taken its place among the largest Texas cities. Official recognition of this fact has recently been afforded by the publication of the last federal census. Though population figures are popularly taken to estimate a community's greatness, a more convincing standard consists of the aggregate of material and



civic resources. On the latter basis Fort Worth has for several years presented a varied array of commercial and industrial enterprise that justifies the showing that this is one of the largest cities of the Southwest.

When Fort Worth was first enumerated as a corporation apart from Tarrant county, in the census of 1880, its population was 6,663. During the following ten years there was a gain of nearly 250 per cent, the city having 23,076 inhabitants in 1890. In 1900 the population was 26,668, or a gain of about 16 percent. Now in 1910 the population is 73,312. The increase, 177 percent, is greater than that shown by any other large city of Texas, and in population Fort Worth ranks in the same class with San Antonio, Dallas and Houston.

Fort Worth was founded as a military post, as a barracks pushed out against barbarism, at a time when the valleys of the Trinity were yet the western frontier of American civilization. The post was garrisoned in the spring of 1849, and about the same time Fort Graham was established in Hill county. The latter has long since disappeared except as a historical landmark, but the site of Fort Worth had a permanent destiny.

Four years measured the existence of Fort Worth as a garrisoned outpost. When the soldiers left there remained only the nucleus of citizens and the eligible location. There was only a meager country population in the vicinity; barring a few supply trains, no currents of trade had yet begun to flow through this part of Texas; there was no cattle trail; nothing to inspire enthusiasm for this straggling settlement on Trinity bluff or assurance that it would not experience the blight which befell similar posts to the west, such as Phantom Hill or Belknap.

Such a fate might have overtaken Fort Worth, had the little village not possessed some citizens endowed with unusual qualities of enterprise. Men of such stamp as E. M. Daggett, K. M. Van Zandt, C. M. Peak, J. Peter Smith and their associates would soon have given distinction and prestige to any hamlet of which they happened to be residents. It was not long after the "fort" was deserted when these enterprising men found a common cause to work for, serving as another cornerstone in the foundation of Fort Worth as a city.

Deprived of its military post, Fort Worth people wanted the county seat. Captain Daggett, who had come to the town in 1854, was a leader in the agitation for a re-location of the county seat. Finally the legislature consented to allow the citizens of the county again to vote on the subject. Birdville was then the larger place, and had the will of the majority been expressed untrammelled, it is probable that Birdville would have retained the court house, at least for some years. Old citizens of Birdville to this day charge that the election was carried for Fort Worth by means of fraud, and the evidence proves that this is one of the cases where theoretical right has yielded to superior enterprise and in which the event has been justified by the march of progress. The Fort Worth citizens were wild with joy over the outcome of the election, and it is related that the records were placed in a wagon, three fiddlers mounted

on top, and surrounded by a reveling crowd, the official seat was transferred in triumph to the little village on the bluffs of the Trinity, where a subsequent election confirmed its permanent location.

Around the court house on the bluff there arose the commonplace village of that period, frame store buildings and little one-story structures with dirt floors. The town was built around the public square, and the court house was the hub of interest and business activity. Even at this day the old-time citizens refer to the "public square" with a meaning inherited from early days when the square was really the scene of all the business activity of the place. What now constitutes the banking and commercial and hotel center, between Fourth and Ninth streets, was for twenty years an unoccupied common, on which the transient immigrants pitched their camps for night, across which the cattlemen drove their herds from the west, while still further south, in the vicinity of the union depot, Captain Daggett had his farm buildings.

Outside of the individual character of its citizens, Fort Worth, forty years ago, was only a typically ordinary town, a center for the small trading activity of the country, and rising above its neighbors mainly as a seat of justice for the county. There were regular sessions of county and district court, at which times attorneys from all this part of the state convened to transact the routine and special legal business and, aside from this, to enjoy themselves in the social manner common to groups of old-time lawyers. When business and court affairs ceased to interest, there was the ever-absorbing theme of politics. The Civil war almost depopulated the village, the best citizens left to fight the battles of their southland, and the population before the decade of the seventies never was a thousand.

The growth of Fort Worth begins to assume some distinction about 1872. In 1873 it was incorporated as a town. At that time an effort was made to drop the word "Fort" from the name, as no longer having significance. But this proposition was defeated by those whose early associations were with the fort and who clung to the name out of respect to the pioneer phase of history.

Already Fort Worth was gaining an importance as a station on the great cattle trail, leading from the west and southwest to the northern markets, but it was the railroad prospects, in the first instance, and the actual building of railroads, that were at the foundation of Fort Worth's prosperity and growth. During 1873, when it seemed that the railroad would be built immediately, the town passed through a regular boom, its population reaching two thousand. Then followed three years of depression, when only the more courageous and far-sighted remained to work out a great future for their adopted home.

Finally, in July, 1876, the first railroad train entered the town. Rather, it entered the town limits, for the land donated for the depot yards was a mile from the public square, and seemed a long way out of town. However, since the railroad, on account of topographical difficulties, could not come to the town, the town at once commenced its slow

and steady march south to the railroad. "For two years, 1876-78," says a writer in the *Gazette* in 1887, "everybody prospered in the place. The town was typical of western life—rushing business, noisy, boisterous existence, in which the cowboy and his twin companion the six-shooter figured conspicuously. Cattlemen—those pioneers of western life—made the town their headquarters and drew their supplies therefrom, and a few of the wiser men, with prophetic eye, saw a great future for the place and commenced to work to that end."

Progress and development have been so swift in obliterating the primitive order of things and introducing all the accompaniments of modern life that even old-time citizens have almost forgotten the "wild and woolly" aspects of Fort Worth during the latter seventies. The railroad brought its evils as well as its benefits. For several years Fort Worth was the clearing house between the regulated customs of the east and the free and untrammelled life of the west. Here the currents of humanity met, and in the vortex could be found every class of mankind. The citizens worked under a high pressure of mental and physical excitement, and energy and action were not without that share of evil which in human affairs can never be entirely dissociated from the good.

Early in 1877 Fort Worth began reaching out for the trade of the great Panhandle district, which had formerly gone to Wichita and other Kansas points. The merchants sent out thousands of pounds of supplies and in return obtained the buffalo hides, tongues and meat that formed such an important product of that region during these years. While such trade was temporary, it is worthy of consideration because it was one of the influences that even at that time made Fort Worth a commercial focus for Northwest Texas. By the middle of the year 1877 the commercial interests had expanded much beyond local demands and the foundations of a wholesale trade were already laid. By that time a new cotton compress had been built, and by the spring of 1878 it was estimated that fifty thousand bales of cotton had been received at Fort Worth markets. A steam grain elevator had been established, marking the beginning of business which now equals that of any other city in the state. There were several commission houses, and a large trade in lumber. A branch wool and hide house received over two hundred thousand buffalo hides during the season, and the warehouses being unable to contain them, the vacant ground was covered for hundreds of square yards with high piles of hides. Summarizing the progress of the past eighteen months, the Fort Worth *Democrat* of January, 1878, states that in this brief time had been constructed street railways, gas works, steam elevators, planing mills, cotton compress, flour mills, fine hotel (the El Paso), court house, four banking houses, and a portion of the streets had been macadamized. All these things attest the progressive attitude and enterprise of the citizens, who utilized all the means at hand, built up factories, secured railroads, extended the scope of trade, and in this way advanced step by step to the results manifest in the modern city.

When the Texas & Pacific Railroad was extended to the west, Fort

Worth suffered a temporary depression, but confidence was soon restored, especially when other railroads began building to this point. The Missouri Pacific (M., K. & T.) entered the city from the north. The completion of the Gulf, Colorado & Santa Fe from Galveston and the beginning of construction on the Fort Worth & Denver were the great events of the year 1881, these two roads costing the city and citizens about one hundred thousand dollars in donations. Line after line of railroad was built, until at the present time there are seventeen railroad outlets. The development of Fort Worth as a railroad center is treated at greater length in the history of railroad construction in the state, on other pages.

Fort Worth's free public school system began in 1882. In the early days private schools furnished the greater part of the educational advantages to the young. In 1877 the city voted to assume control of the public schools, but certain legal and other causes prevented the city from taking control until 1882, when a tax was voted to supplement the revenue derived from the general school fund, and the public schools were opened October 1, 1882, with seventeen teachers and about 650 scholars.

In the history of municipal progress the year 1882 is especially notable. In that year the late John Peter Smith was elected mayor, and to assist him was a public-spirited council, and through their co-operation the city inaugurated internal improvements which have proved the foundation for all subsequent work along that line. In May, 1882, a franchise was granted to the Fort Worth Water Works Company, and in the following year the Holly system was completed and put in operation. Previous to 1876 the drinking water for the city had come from the Clear Fork or from a spring two miles northeast of town. In that year the first artesian well was sunk, in the southwest part of town, and by 1887 there were a hundred wells, so that Fort Worth was sometimes referred to as the "city of artesian wells." Before the water works were built, water was drawn from wells and peddled about the streets at twelve and a half cents a barrel, and the water carts have only recently quite disappeared. In 1884 the city purchased one-half interest in the water works plant, and came into complete possession the next year.

Besides the water works, Mayor Smith and his associates directed their attention to the paving of Main and Houston streets; to the construction of a sewer system, of bridges and roads, the installation of a fire department, building of schools, and many other improvements. The year 1883 was noted as the most prosperous in the history of the city. May 31, 1882, was organized the Fort Worth Board of Trade, an organization that has accomplished some remarkable results in upbuilding and promoting the best interests of the city.

The depression in the cattle industry during 1884-85 had its effects on the growth of Fort Worth, and the revival of prosperity did not come until 1887. In that year the first definite attempt was made to utilize Fort Worth's advantages as a live-stock market. Next to the railroads, the greatest factor in Fort Worth's progress are the stock yards and packing interests. It was in the latter eighties when the general development

of the Southwest had reached that point where the selection of a central market for its livestock became important. There were three factors that gave Fort Worth first place in consideration of a proper site. First, its location as the only large town on the eastern border of the cattle country, where it had enjoyed prestige as a stock center from the days of the trail. Second, its numerous railroads, radiating in all directions, tapping the sources of supply in the west and connecting easily with the eastern cities and the gulf coast. And third, the alert enterprise of the citizens, who put forth every effort to secure such a market. These citizens laid the foundation for the packing industry of Fort Worth, for although the initial enterprise was not fully successful, it served as a base from which greater things have developed. The Fort Worth Dressed Meat & Packing Company was organized in February, 1890, stock yards and packing plant were built, and the business started with an encouraging degree of success, although its scope was that of local industry rather than of the capacity possessed by the present large plants.

This industry and all other lines of business were greatly impaired during the succeeding decade. From 1892 to the close of the century Fort Worth suffered its longest and most severe period of financial and industrial depression. The city has always been closely dependent upon the industrial conditions of its tributary West Texas, and during the long time when immigration into the western counties had practically ceased, Fort Worth was unable to advance faster than the region of which it was the business metropolis. Until the first years of the present century the development of Fort Worth and West Texas was periodic rather than continuous. Thus we witness the period of prosperity in 1872 and the early part of 1873, followed by almost a depopulation of the town on account of the failure of railroad construction. From 1876 to 1883 the city progressed almost marvelously, only to find itself in the slough of industrial despond in the middle eighties. Then came the completion of the long-projected railroads and the inception of the livestock market and packing business, after which the city experienced the lean years of the nineties. In 1898 the packing operations were suspended and were not resumed until May, 1899, when the plant was sold to Boston capitalists, who operated the industry until it was taken over by Armour & Company in March, 1902.

With the inception of the present century began an unexampled period of material growth and development for Fort Worth. Without question, this prosperity is on a substantial basis, and the progress that has been made, while rapid, has been conservative and consistent with the general upbuilding of the entire country. In this time Fort Worth has become a city of varied resources, and no longer depends upon the stability of one or two industries. Its key position in the development of North and West Texas now seems assured beyond the disposition of events and circumstances.

The stock yards and packing houses are regarded as a cornerstone of Fort Worth's greatness, and the earnest effort and money contributions

which the citizens put forth to secure them are among the most beneficial achievements in Fort Worth's history. With the success of the negotiations which resulted in Armour & Company and Swift & Company locating their large branch plants here, the stock yards were enlarged to accommodate the increased number of cattle shipped to this point. During the year 1902 both the Armour and Swift interests spent millions in building two of the most extensive and complete packing plants in the west. The plants have been in operation since March, 1903, and since then the capacity has been increased and new departments have been added to the industry.

During the last decade, around the central institutions of railroads and packing industries, Fort Worth has built up a city rich in the varied resources of commerce and civic enterprise. It is now one of the important wholesale, banking and manufacturing cities of the Southwest, and every year has witnessed the construction of buildings and other improvements which have resulted in a practical transformation of the city during the time of one decade.

The sum of these developments, most of which have been instituted during the time mentioned, and the important features of the city's greatness, are epitomized in a recent publication by the Fort Worth Board of Trade. With this condensed statement this article may be properly closed:

Fort Worth has sixteen banks—national, state and trust companies—representing bank deposits slightly in excess of \$20,000,000.

Fort Worth through her Clearing House Association, from September 1, 1909, to September 1, 1910, cleared the stupendous sum of \$341,479,569.09.

The capital and resources of the associated banks in the clearing house is given as \$6,156,256.

Fort Worth building permits for the nine months of this year total \$2,351,270, representing 485 new buildings in the city.

Fort Worth postoffice receipts for the first half of 1910 total \$15,071.14, showing a gain of 268 per cent over the same period for 1909.

Fort Worth is the greatest mail distributing terminal point in America today, mail for Texas, Arizona, New Mexico, Mexico and parts of Oklahoma and Louisiana being distributed at this point, 104 mail trains daily entering and leaving the city.

Fort Worth now has an assessed valuation of \$54,000,000, while in 1900 the valuation was \$21,306,785.

Fort Worth now has seventeen railroad outlets—more than any city south of St. Louis, Mo.—and in the past five years \$2,500,000 has been spent in improving their terminal facilities, thereby giving the city 142 miles of siding. Two hundred and eight freight trains each day annually handle the astounding number of 936,234 interchanged cars of freight, and 100,000 cars which are handled without change.

There are 142 miles of railway sidings in the city.

Daily passenger trains, 104.

Fort Worth is the greatest distributing point for groceries west of the Mississippi.

Fort Worth has ninety-five miles of street railways, which represent two lines, and over which 125 local cars and fifty interurban electric trains operate daily.

Fort Worth has twenty-eight miles of paved streets at present, and contracts have been let for twenty-three miles more. In 1900 the city had not a single mile of pavement.

Fort Worth is the county site of the county possessing the most hard roads in Texas. Tarrant county now has 280 miles of improved roads and is adding to them at the rate of thirty-five miles a year.

In this connection for the Dallas Fair the Board of Trade is preparing a Tarrant county road exhibit, models, photographs of roads, bridges, road work and road working machinery, etc.

Fort Worth in the past month has installed a dual water system, thus absolutely insuring the city against a water famine. Twenty-two artesian wells 900 feet deep, each eight inches in diameter, and eight shallow wells of the same diameter and of 350-foot depth, yield each a water supply of 550,000 gallons every twenty-four hours. In the other system available for factory purposes, coming directly from the Trinity River, the supply is unlimited. Daily water supply, 16,500,000 gallons.

Fort Worth has 282 factories, exclusive of the packing houses, representing an investment of \$4,600,000.

Fort Worth packing houses now do an annual business of \$75,000,000 compared with \$550,000 in 1900. One million six hundred and sixty-five thousand head of live stock are slaughtered annually, whereas 65,000 were slaughtered in 1900.

The number of employees has increased from 200 to 5,000 and the size of the cattle pens has increased from fifteen to fifty acres, and 1,217 cars can be accommodated daily, while only 147 could be in 1900.

Fort Worth possesses the only rolling mill west of Birmingham, Ala., and south of St. Louis, Mo., where puddling and smelting of iron is done to any degree whatsoever.

Fort Worth has sixteen grain elevators with a capacity of 2,155,000 bushels of grain daily, and her flour mills have milled 1,150,000 barrels this year to September 1.

Fort Worth has a national reputation as a convention city. Since January 1, sixteen conventions with thousands of delegates have met in Fort Worth.

Fort Worth, in securing the national convention of the Knights of Pythias for 1912, will be the first city in the Southwest to entertain this national secret order convention.

Fort Worth has 16,831 bona fide students within her borders, distributed as follows: 10,836 in the public schools, 2,800 in the various colleges and universities, 831 in private schools and 2,404 taking correspondence courses.



Fort Worth has eighty-six churches, representing every denomination—an increase of more than 100 per cent in two years.

Fort Worth's new \$1,000,000 hotel is the most modern hostelry in the Southwest.

Ice consumption, 1,000 tons daily.

**JACK CARTER.**—A scion of one of the old and honored pioneer families of the Lone Star state, this representative citizen and business man of the city of Fort Worth is specially entitled to consideration in this historical work. He is senior member of the real-estate firm of Carter & Oldham, which in extent and importance of its operations takes precedence of any similar concern in the state, throughout all sections of which its business ramified, being conducted with the greatest discrimination, ability and probity and thus contributing in large and generous measure to the civic and material progress of this favored commonwealth of the Union. It may be said without fear of legitimate denial that no man in Texas is more familiar with its land values, resources, institutions and people than is the honored native son whose name initiates this paragraph, and the propriety of this emphatic statement will be revealed in later portions of this context.

Jack Carter was born at Hillsboro, Hill county, Texas, on the 17th of August, 1871, and is a son of Hamp W. and Emily (Wornell) Carter, the former of whom was born in Missouri and the latter of whom was born in Anderson county, Texas, so that the subject of this review is a scion of pioneer stock in both the paternal and maternal lines. Hamp W. Carter was but six years of age at the time of his parents' removal from Missouri to Texas, and the family settled in Hill county at a time when it was on the very frontier of civilization. Under such conditions Hamp W. Carter was reared to maturity, finding enjoyment in the wild, free life of the new country, receiving but limited educational advantages, but waxing strong and independent in both physical and mental faculties. In 1909 he and his wife celebrated the fifty-first anniversary of their marriage and they are numbered among the best known and most highly honored pioneer citizens of Central Texas, still maintaining their home at Hillsboro.

Jack Carter was reared to maturity in his native county, in whose public schools he secured his early educational discipline. His initial business experience was gained in connection with his father's operations as a ranchman and merchant, and he continued to be identified with him for years, but subsequently he concerned himself with land operations, to which he has devoted many years in a most effective way. In 1898 he received appointment to a clerical position in the general land office in Austin, and after passing four years in connection with its work, the major part of the time in the general office, he was appointed inspector of school lands in western Texas, with headquarters at Midland. He served the state in this capacity for four years, with marked efficiency, and at the expiration of this period, in April of 1908, he established his





Jack Carter

---



residence in Fort Worth, for the purpose of engaging in the land and general real-estate business on his own responsibility. He conducted his operations individually until the 1st of January, 1909, when he entered into partnership with Charles Oldham, who had come to this city from Lexington, Kentucky, and who has proved a most able and valued coadjutor in the extensive business already built up, under the firm name of Carter & Oldham.

Mr. Carter's long association with the state land office and his consequent familiarity with school lands and other tracts in the western part of the state have made his interposition in the active real-estate field an asset of great value to the firm of which he is a member and which has already gained front rank among the real-estate concerns operating in Texas. Mr. Carter has personally gone over and inspected every county in western Texas, and there is, perhaps, no other one man who has so thorough and intimate a knowledge of all conditions and features in connection with this region—its soil, climate, varied productive advantages, water facilities, native grasses, mineral resources, location of towns and trading points, character of the people in the different communities, facilities for the exploiting of new industries and the propagation of new kinds of vegetable products, grains, fruits, etc. In fact, he has broad and exact information concerning every point that a prospective settler or investor could wish to investigate. The firm of which he is a member gives employment to a corps of seven energetic and capable salesmen, who are prepared to show clients any portion of the state. The firm of Carter & Oldham has, within an almost incredibly short interval, built up the largest business of its kind in the state—a result all the more notable in view of the fact that the firm initiated operations in a year in which the rainfall was much below the average and when conditions had not adjusted themselves after the hard times. It is the policy of the firm to keep always busy with land operations, even when cash sales are not to be negotiated, for by the effecting of judicious changes they bring about transactions that are advantageous to all concerned. Operations are based on ample resources of a financial order, and the reputation of the firm is already its most valuable asset. No misrepresentation of any kind is permitted, and absolute fairness, integrity and honor characterize every dealing and operation. The well equipped offices of this firm, in the city of Fort Worth, have become well known as a comfortable and congenial resort for land buyers and prospectors from all sections of the Union, and the books of the concern show at all times the most desirable investments in western lands and city property, while expert advice and service are assured to all patrons or investigators.

Through his business operations and through his public spirit and civic progressiveness Mr. Carter is doing much to foster the advancement of his home city and state, and he has so ordered his course as to gain and retain the confidence and esteem of all with whom he has come in contact—in an official capacity when with the land office, as a business man and in the social relations of life. In politics he is aligned as a

staunch advocate of the principles and policies of the Democratic party, and he is affiliated with the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks and the Knights of Pythias.

In the year 1895 was solemnized the marriage of Mr. Carter to Miss Cho Coffield, who was born at San Marcos, Texas, and reared at Gatesville, this state. She is a daughter of Henry Coffield, a representative citizen of San Marcos. Mr. and Mrs. Carter have two children—Emily and Lillian.

WILLIAM D. DAVIS.—Among the virile, progressive and public-spirited citizens who have contributed materially to the industrial and civic prestige of the city of Fort Worth is its present efficient and popular mayor, who is one of the essentially representative business men of the old Lone Star state and whose administration as chief executive of the municipal government is doing much to foster the best interests and distinctive advancement of the city. There has been naught of apathy or inertia in his attitude as a citizen or business man, and he is one of those enthusiastic "captains of industry" who have unbounded faith in the still greater future of his home city, to which his loyalty is of the most impregnable type.

William D. Davis, mayor of Fort Worth, was born in Neshoba county, Mississippi, on the 30th of October, 1867, and is a son of Moses and Cynthia (Threat) Davis, representatives of old and honored southern families. The father was born in Georgia, but he was reared and educated in Mississippi, which state was the place of his wife's nativity and which continued to be their home until 1869, when they came to Texas, locating first at Calvert, which was then the northern terminus of the Houston & Texas Central Railroad, the line of which road was then in course of construction toward Dallas. Moses Davis engaged in the freighting business between Calvert and Dallas, and later, after the completion of the railroad to the latter point, he continued in the same line of enterprise between Dallas and various places in the western part of the state. He became identified with the cattle business, later conducted a successful enterprise as a merchant, and he directed his energies in various lines of enterprise for a number of years, especially in the northern part of the state. He is one of the sterling and well known pioneer citizens of Texas, is now retired from active business and he maintains his home in Sherman, this state. His wife died in 1904.

The present mayor of Fort Worth was about two years of age at the time of the family removal to Texas, and under the beneficent conditions and influences of this fine old commonwealth he has developed typical western initiative, energy and progressiveness and has won for himself a stable position as a successful business man of marked capacity for the administration of affairs of wide scope and importance. His early business experience was principally in connection with the cattle business, in which he was trained as a boy and youth, in the old days when the entire range was open, with no fenced pastures, and the great cattle outfits

worked over the broad acres of the open range. In the meanwhile he had not neglected his educational work, having gained his earlier discipline in the public schools and having effectively supplemented this by a course of study in old Granbury College, at Granbury, this state, an institution in which many prominent and influential citizens of the state have been students, including such well known citizens as Governor Thomas M. Campbell and his brother, James B. Campbell. For several years Mr. Davis maintained his home in Sherman, whence he finally removed to Roanoke, Denton county, where he built up a large grain-shipping and cattle business. In the great and memorable flood that brought grievous disaster to the city of Galveston in 1900 he met with losses that practically reduced his financial resources to the lowest possible ebb, as the large amount of grain which he had in storage in Galveston preliminary to exportation was swept away, entailing to him great loss. He manifested the same indomitable courage that marked the attitude of the leading business men of the stricken and devastated city, and he girded himself firmly for the battle through which he was again destined to attain victory and retrieve his fortune. In the year that thus marked the practical obliteration of the fair city of Galveston Mr. Davis removed to Fort Worth, where, with characteristic energy and enthusiasm, he entered again into active operations in connection with the cattle industry. He became a cattle commission merchant at the North Fort Worth stock yards, effecting the organization of the Davis-Hamm Commission Company, which soon gained prestige as one of the most successful concerns in the live stock market of Fort Worth. He continued as one of the interested principals and executive officers of this company until the 15th of June, 1909, when he disposed of his interests in the business, which was then merged into the National Live Stock Commission Company. His withdrawal from this enterprise was brought about by his realization that his executive duties as mayor of Fort Worth placed such insistent demands upon his time and attention as to require undivided allegiance to his official duties and responsibilities. His loyalty to his home city and its people was significantly manifested in the action taken by him at this time, as in disposing of his interest in the extensive and profitable commission business which he had so largely aided in building up he made a very appreciable financial sacrifice. He is the owner of a considerable amount of realty, both improved and unimproved, in his home city and has some landed interests in the northern part of the state, in which connection he is president of the Union Land Company, and to some extent is still engaged in the cattle industry.

Concerning Mr. Davis' able and businesslike administration of the office of mayor of Fort Worth the following pertinent and appreciative statements have been made by one familiar with his earnest, upright and successful career as a business man and as a public official, being specially worthy of reproduction and perpetuation in this brief sketch: "Mr. Davis had served a term as mayor of North Fort Worth prior to being called

to the office of chief executive of the greater city. In the spring of 1909 he was nominated and elected mayor of Fort Worth and, *ex officio*, a member of the board of city commissioners, as Fort Worth's admirable municipal government is conducted under the commission plan. Mr. Davis' typical western energy and power of accomplishing things and his perennial objection to being 'kept down' have made his administration one of ideal type for the robust, progressive and rapidly expanding city of Fort Worth. He has at all times his hand on the civic and industrial pulse; has all affairs of the city well in hand; is watchful, alert and efficient in every respect; is a mayor who not only stands as a model of conscientious civic loyalty and devotion but also as one of whom the city of Fort Worth is justly proud."

In politics Mr. Davis has been an effective advocate of the principles and policies of the Democratic party, in whose cause he maintains a lively and helpful interest. In the time-honored Masonic fraternity he has attained the thirty-second degree of the Ancient Accepted Scottish Rite, besides being affiliated with the Ancient Arabic Order of the Nobles of the Mystic Shrine and the Knights of Pythias. His personal popularity in his home city is of the most unequivocal type and is based on his generous attributes of character and his genial, democratic spirit.

Mr. Davis has been twice married. In 1890 was solemnized his union to Miss Ella Reynolds, daughter of S. F. Reynolds, one of the oldest pioneer settlers of Denton county. Mrs. Davis was summoned to the life eternal August 7, 1908, and is survived by one son, Marvin L., who was born on the 17th of September, 1891. At Aubrey, Denton county, this state, on the 7th of November, 1909, Mr. Davis was united in marriage to Mrs. Ola (Henderson) Price, who was born in Denton county, Texas, and who is a daughter of the late Newton Henderson, a well known citizen of that county.

JOHN N. WINTERS was born in Perry county, Indiana, and was reared in Spencer county of that state. In 1876 he came to Texas, and his life since that time has been almost a part of the wonderful progress and development of the central and north central part of this state—a pioneer of the pioneers. After spending a short time at Sulphur Springs he in 1880 came to central Texas to locate lands for himself and for his father-in-law, Mr. Bivins, and he established his headquarters in what is now Runnels county, although that particular division had not then been organized. Upon the organization of the county the old town of Runnels, now extinct, was made its seat of government and it was located four miles north of the present flourishing city of Ballinger, which later became the county seat.

Mr. Winters remained in Runnels county for fourteen years, from 1880 until 1894, and during that time he was the means of founding the town of Winters, now a prosperous little city situated in the midst of what is undoubtedly the richest agricultural region of central Texas. He had purchased several thousand acres of land in that section of Runnels

county, and in 1892 he located a small colony of Germans on a part of that tract, and they in 1893 started a small settlement, with stores, etc., and named it Winters in honor of the owner of the land and the promoter of the settlement. It has since grown into a wealthy and progressive town, having advanced more rapidly since the Abilene & Southern Railroad was completed to that point in 1909. When Mr. Winters first located in this part of the state Runnels county formed a part of the far frontier of Texas and of the great free and open cattle range. Farming was not then thought of, and even the enclosing of pastures with wire fence was not begun until about 1882 or 1883. He bought land as low as from eighty cents to a dollar and a half an acre. Mr. Winters is remembered by all the older settled residents of Runnels county as having been one of its most progressive and public spirited citizens and as responsible in a large degree for much of its early growth.

He came to Fort Worth in 1894, and this city has been his home since that time, and he has long been one of its prominent real estate owners and operators, making a specialty of country property, farming and ranch lands. Mrs. Winters was before marriage Alice Bivins, and their five children are Jet, Oliver, Ona, Ivy and Una.

**LIGA RUNNELS.**—A native son of the old Lone Star state and one who has gained precedence and definite success as a representative business man and progressive citizen of Fort Worth, is Liga Runnels, who is president of the Runnels Live Stock Commission Company and also of the Runnels Automobile Company, both of which are prominent and important industrial concerns of this thriving city.

Liga Runnels was born in Collin county, Texas, on the 11th of December, 1867, and is a son of Riley Runnels, who was born and reared in the state of Missouri, whence he came to Texas in 1846, locating in Collin county, and becoming one of its pioneer settlers. He was among the earliest of the exploiters of the great cattle industry of northern Texas and ran large herds of cattle over the open range of a region which is now one of the most populous and opulent in the state. He still maintains his home in Collin county, and, venerable in years, is held in high esteem by all who know him—one of the honored pioneers of the state and one who has witnessed and assisted in its magnificent development. His wife's maiden name was Mary Spradley, and of their children four sons and three daughters are now living.

Reared under the conditions and influences of the pioneer epoch, such were the exigencies of time and place that the subject of this review was denied more than a limited common-school education, but he has effectually made good this handicap through his active association with practical business affairs during a distinctively active and successful career. He became identified with his father's operations in the raising of cattle when he was a mere boy and has continuously been concerned with this important line of industry, in connection with which his judgment is authoritative, while through his effective operations he has achieved a

noteworthy success. In 1901, while still retaining his home on his finely improved grazing ranch near Plano, Collin county, Mr. Runnels established himself in the live-stock commission business in Fort Worth, where he has since been identified with large and successful operations in this field of enterprise. He was the founder of the Runnels Live Stock Commission Company, of which he is president and general manager. The company is incorporated, and its financial fortification is of the most substantial order, so that it has a solid status and has a secure place in the confidence of the large cattle growers and those identified with the industry and with financial affairs in the cities of Fort Worth, Kansas City and St. Louis.

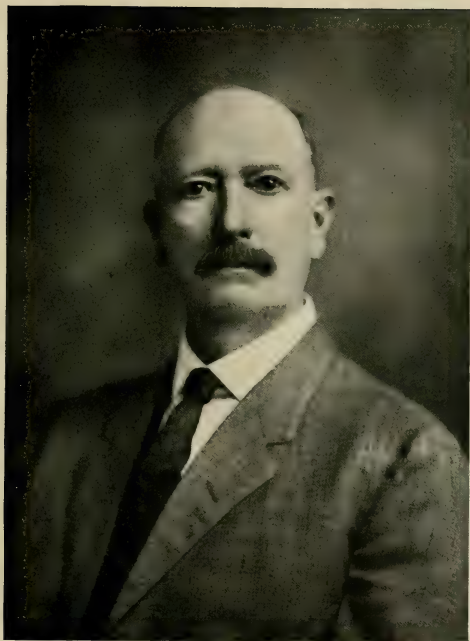
Mr. Runnels was also the organizer and is president of the Runnels Automobile Company, which conducts most successfully an automobile business and a well equipped garage at the corner of West Second and Throckmorton streets. Since 1907 he has also owned and conducted one of the largest and most successful general liverys in the city. He is known as a wide-awake and aggressive business man and loyal and public-spirited citizen, and his success has been worthily achieved along normal lines of enterprise. He now maintains his home in Fort Worth, but still gives a general supervision to his fine ranch property in his native county. Of genial and democratic attitude, he wins and retains firm friendships, and he is one of the well known and distinctively popular business men of Fort Worth. In politics, as may be presupposed, he is a staunch advocate of the cause of the Democratic party.

In 1906 Mr. Runnels was united in marriage to Miss Lucy Nored, of Fort Worth. Mrs. Runnels is a native of Tennessee and is a daughter of T. J. Nored, a well known citizen of Fort Worth.

WILLIAM H. ROSS, a brother of the late Governor L. S. Ross, was born at Waco, Texas, in 1853, son of Shapley Prince and Catharine H. (Fulkerson) Ross.

Shapley Prince Ross was one of the notable pioneers of Texas. He was of Scotch descent and was born and reared in Kentucky. After spending some years on the northwestern frontier, he moved, in 1839, from Benton's Port, Iowa, to Texas, and first settled at old Washington, in Washington county, one of the capitals of Texas. Subsequently he went to Austin, where he entered the United States army, and was a soldier in the war with Mexico. Previously to this, however, about 1840, he had moved his family to Milam county and established their home where Cameron now stands. He laid out the town of Waco and built the first house in Waco, which still stands. His daughter, Mrs. Kate Ross Padgitt, wife of Thomas Padgitt, was the first white child born there. Mr. Ross was identified with all the early warfare against the Indians in Texas, both as a soldier in the United States army and as a member of the Texas Rangers. In the latter he was associated with Rip Ford in service in northwestern Texas, and later was appointed Indian agent for the government at Fort Belknap. About 1859, resigning from this posi-





W H Ross



tion, he returned to his home at Waco, where he spent the rest of his life. He died here, September 21, 1889. He was of the typical Scotch clansman build, over six feet high and well proportioned, and was strong both physically and mentally. Among his children, one son, Lawrence Sullivan Ross, deceased, figured prominently for many years and won high honor in Texas. Two sons and two daughters are still living, namely, the subject of this sketch and Robert S., of Waco, and Mrs. Thomas Padgitt, also of Waco, and Mrs. Margaret V. Harris, of Dallas. The latter and her sister Mary had a double wedding at Waco in 1849, and they were the first white women to be married in Waco.

William H. Ross was reared in Waco. As a boy he accompanied his father to Fort Belknap, which was in the heart of the bloodiest scenes enacted during the Indian wars in Texas, and had many experiences with the red men. In 1870 he went with a party, of which his brother, L. S. Ross, was a member, to California, and remained there for several years, during which time, while in Los Angeles, he learned the printer's trade. Returning to Texas, he opened a job office at Waco, and later conducted an evening paper, the *Reporter*. Subsequently he bought the *Advance*, combined the two, and for a short time issued the *Daily Reporter-Advance*. He was burned out in 1876, after which he went to Young county and turned his attention to farming. To him belongs the distinction of having built the first cotton gin in Young county. In 1880 he became a traveling salesman, in the employ of the Padgitt firm of Waco, large wholesale dealers in harness and saddlery, and for twenty-four years in this capacity he covered the territory comprising Arkansas, Louisiana and Texas. At last, wishing to leave the road, he moved his family to Fort Worth and established his permanent home in this city. That was in 1906. Here he has since been engaged in the real estate business as a member of the firm of Ross & Blanton. Mrs. Ross was formerly Miss Elizabeth Denison, of Waco, Texas. They have seven children, namely; Mrs. Gipson Williams, Misses Hallie and Margaret Ross, Mrs. Frances Ferris, William, Shapley and Josephine Ross.

Mr. Ross' brother, the late Lawrence Sullivan Ross, familiarly called "Sul" Ross, was one of the distinguished citizens of Texas. He was born at Benton's Port, Iowa, in 1838, and was quite small when his parents came to this state. He was educated in Baylor University at Waco and in Wesleyan University at Florence, Alabama. In 1858 he returned from the latter institution, being prompted by a desire to take part in the conflict against the Indians, who were then becoming very hostile in northwestern Texas. He assembled a company of one hundred and twenty-five men and hastened to the support of Major Van Dorn, who was leading the Second United States Cavalry against the Comanches; and, with Van Dorn, played a prominent part in the battle of Wichita, in which both he and Van Dorn were wounded. After his recovery young Ross went back to Florence and resumed his studies in the university, and graduated in 1859. Returning home and still anxious to fight, he joined the Texas Rangers. He was elected captain, and in 1860,

with a company of sixty rangers, in an action at the head of Pease river, he severely defeated the Comanches, killing Peta Nocona, the last of the great Comanche chiefs, and capturing all the effects of the red men, including a captive white woman, Cynthia Ann Parker (mother of Quanah Parker), who had been stolen by the Comanches in 1836 and had become the wife of an Indian chief. This woman was restored to civilization. For his achievement in this engagement he was by Governor Houston made aide-de-camp, with the rank of colonel.

In 1861 he entered the Confederate service as a private in Company G, Sixth Texas Cavalry, his company being commanded by his brother, Captain (later Colonel) P. F. Ross. Soon afterward Sullivan Ross was made a major in this regiment, and in May, 1862, was elected its colonel. Following brave and distinguished services in turning back, while at the head of about a thousand men, a force of over ten thousand Union soldiers on a raid just after the battle of Corinth, Mississippi, Colonel Ross was, on October 3, 1863, on the recommendation of General Joseph E. Johnston, made a brigadier-general, in which capacity he served till the close of the war.

In 1875 General Ross was elected sheriff of McLennan county, Texas, and was a member of the Texas Constitutional Convention which was held that year. He was a member of the state senate from 1881 to 1883, and in 1886 was elected governor. To this high office he was re-elected in 1888, and early in 1891, on retiring from the governor's chair, he was made president of the A. and M. College, he being the first to occupy that position, which he held until the time of his death. He married Elizabeth D. Tinsley, of Waco, and they became the parents of seven children: Mervin (deceased), Florine, Lawrence S., Harvey R., Frank, Bessie and Neville.

MARTIN CASEY.—For more than thirty years has this well known and honored citizen been identified with the civic and business interests of Fort Worth, which he has seen develop from a typical frontier town, the headquarters and rendezvous for the cattlemen operating over the great open range, which extended throughout the wide expanse of country now marked by well improved ranches and thriving towns and villages. He lived up to the full tension of the pioneer days and was familiar with the wild and picturesque phases of frontier life that are now represented in memory only. He has contributed his quota to the development and upbuilding of the magnificent city of Fort Worth, his course as a citizen and business man has been marked by impregnable integrity and honor, and he has a secure place in popular confidence and esteem as one of the sterling and pioneer business men of the city that has so long represented his home. He is president of the corporation known as Martin Casey & Company, engaged in the wholesale liquor and cigar business, with which line of enterprise he has here been actively identified since the centennial year, 1876.

∴ Mr. Casey reverts with a due measure of pride and patriotism to the

fact that he is a native of the fair Emerald Isle, which has contributed a most valuable element to the complex social fabric of the great American republic. In 1871 Martin Casey set forth to seek his fortunes in America, whither he came without financial reinforcement and with no influential friends to aid him. He had, however, the goodly gifts of ambition, energy, self-confidence and a determination to make for himself a place of independence, so that he was well equipped for the initiation of his business career in the new world. He first located in Memphis, Tennessee, whence he later removed to the city of Cincinnati, Ohio, where he was variously employed until 1876, when he set forth to identify himself with the interests of the Lone Star state, which was then considered on the border of civilization in the southwestern section of our great national domain. He forthwith established his home in the town of Fort Worth, where he engaged in the wholesale liquor trade on a modest scale, beginning operations in a small building near the old court house. The enterprise increased rapidly in scope and importance and finally more commodious quarters were secured further down on Houston street, where the business was continued until 1909, in April of which year removal was made to the present large and modern building erected for the purpose, at 1610-12 Houston street, corner of Front street. This location is in the heart of the railroad district, so that the best of shipping facilities are afforded, while the site is one most eligible from a local business standpoint. The building occupied is a substantial stone and brick structure, three stories in height. Its equipment is of the best modern type throughout, and here are afforded ample accommodations for the large and select stock carried by the company, which controls a large and substantial trade throughout the southwest and whose reputation, earned by long years of honorable dealings, is unassailable. The business is exclusively wholesale, in the handling of all kinds of domestic and imported liquors, cigars, etc., and the concern has the general agency for the Pabst Brewing Company, of Milwaukee, Wisconsin.

From the time of establishing his home in Fort Worth to the present Mr. Casey has been closely identified with all local interests touching the welfare of the city, to whose development and upbuilding he has contributed with all of loyalty and civic liberality. He was specially generous in his contribution to the various funds raised for the promotion of railroad building and other enterprises projected for the general welfare of his home city and state. He was one of the promoters and the chief financial backer of the Texas Brewing Company, which is now one of the large and substantial business concerns of Fort Worth.

In politics, though never a seeker of public office, Mr. Casey has been unfaltering in his allegiance to the cause of the Democratic party.

WILLIAM P. FISCHER, the general manager of the American Home Life Insurance Company and one of the influential business men and citizens of Fort Worth, was born at Gonzales, in Gonzales county, Texas, where his father, A. Fischer, was a pioneer settler of 1842. Until the

spring of 1909 Mr. Fischer, the son, had spent his life in his native city of Gonzales, learning in the meantime the mercantile business under his father, and before reaching the age of maturity he embarked in the same line for himself in partnership with his brother, the late L. H. Fischer, whose death occurred in 1905. They were actively engaged in the dry goods business for twenty-five years, and beginning with a very small country store they built up the enterprise to one of the largest and most successful establishments of its kind in southwestern Texas.

Mr. Fischer enjoyed an unusually satisfactory and creditable career as a merchant, for the records show that during all the time that he was in business there was never a sight draft drawn on him, that he never contested a piece of paper against him or that he never entered suit against any of the firm's customers. The business was founded and carried out on the strictest principles of honor and integrity. Having accumulated a comfortable fortune, he sought a larger field of enterprise, and in the spring of 1909 came to Fort Worth and purchased a home and other property in this city, also acquiring a fine ranch in the western country tributary to Fort Worth, but his active business life is centered in the American Home Life Insurance Company, a Fort Worth enterprise of which he is the general manager. Mr. Fischer brought to this position the ripe business experience and acumen that made his mercantile business so successful, and since the new management took control of the company in the summer of 1909 it has rapidly forged to a place of the highest standing in insurance circles. The American Home Life has behind it some of the strongest men in Fort Worth and in Texas. Mr. Fischer is also a director of the State National Bank of Fort Worth.

Mrs. Fischer was before marriage Cora Fitzgerald, of Sweetwater, Texas, a daughter of one of the prominent citizens of that place, Captain R. H. Fitzgerald. Their two children are Lois and William Lee.

W. JACOB DOYLE.—Long and prominently identified with railroad interests, through which he did much to further the development and progress of the state of Texas, Mr. Doyle is now the popular proprietor of the Worth Hotel in the city of Fort Worth, and maintains the fine establishment upon the highest metropolitan standard. He is well known throughout the Lone Star state and his popularity is of the most unequivocal order, based upon sterling personal integrity and genial and kindly attributes of character.

Mr. Doyle was born at Riceville, McMinn county, Tennessee, on the 9th of January, 1878, and is a son of B. M. and M. C. (Tipton) Doyle. When he was three years of age his parents came to Texas and settled in Itasca, Hill county, where he was reared to maturity and where he gained his rudimentary education in the common schools, after which he continued his studies in Waltham New Church School, at Waltham, Massachusetts, where he prepared himself for college, his intention having been to enter Harvard University. Circumstances shaped themselves in such a way, however, that he found it expedient to abandon his further

educational work and turn his attention to practical business affairs. He returned to Texas and secured a position as stenographer in the office of the general auditor of the Fort Worth & Denver Railroad, at Fort Worth. Later he held a similar position with the Cotton Belt Railroad, but he eventually re-entered the employ of the Fort Worth & Denver Railroad Company. He subsequently accepted a position as buyer for the McCord-Collins Grocery Company, of Fort Worth, but a few months later he assumed a clerical position in the office of the L. B. Menefee Lumber Company, in the city of Houston. About one year later he entered the service of the Southern Pacific Railroad, and shortly afterward he became secretary to J. H. Hill, manager of the Galveston, Houston & Henderson Railroad, with headquarters in Galveston. He held this position about one year and then accepted the office of assistant personal injury, fire and stock claim agent of the Frisco Railroad. Later he became traveling freight agent for the Cotton Belt Railroad, but he eventually returned to the service of the company previously mentioned, becoming chief clerk for its immigration commissioner. It was in this department that Mr. Doyle gained prestige and high reputation as a successful railroad man, and he became a potent factor in initiating the great wave of immigration that has brought many thousands of desirable settlers to the great southwest. From the position of chief clerk Mr. Doyle was advanced to the supervision of the general immigration work of the road, and in this capacity he organized, with marked initiative and executive ability, one of the largest and most efficient immigration departments that have ever been an adjunct of railway operations. He reorganized the department that was known as the Frisco Immigration Association. This was composed of men of distinctive ability and resourcefulness, so that the work of the association was one of most productive and effective order. With discrimination and unflagging zeal Mr. Doyle finally increased the corps of men in his department to the noteworthy number of twenty-five hundred, each one being efficient in the promotion of the business assigned to his charge. This fine force of workers included not only immigration agents in the north and east, but also representatives in the southwestern territory, the former corps being assigned to the work of sending immigrants to this favored section and the latter force assisted the settlers in selecting locations and making permanent settlement. A system of checking was instituted and through the same was shown with exactitude the details of each man's work and the results of the same. Mr. Doyle made regular trips throughout the wide area of country in the jurisdiction of his finely organized department and gave his personal supervision to the work, besides which he established an efficient system of advertising, the same being of wide scope and of much importance in furthering the work of his department. With this important branch of railroad enterprise Mr. Doyle continued to be actively identified for nearly five years, and all familiar with his able and progressive work in the connection concede that it was due to his efforts that the tide of immigration was so largely deflected from the northwest



to the southwest. In the great northwest the railroad companies had been carrying forward effective promotion of immigration for a term of years, and Mr. Doyle had the prescience to see that the same effort could bring desired results in the southwest. His great capacity as an organizer and administrative officer came into effective play and his name merits a place of honor on the roster of those who have aided materially in the civic and industrial development and progress of Texas and other parts of the southwest, whose magnificent resources and attractions were exploited by him with admirable ability. Although he modestly claims for himself no special credit in the connection, it is a matter of recorded fact in railroad statistics that during the period of his incumbency of the office mentioned the Frisco Railroad system had fifty-seven per cent of the passenger business through the St. Louis gateway.

Mr. Doyle resigned his position with the Frisco Railroad and in May, 1908, he became proprietor of the Worth Hotel, the only first-class American-plan hotel in the city of Fort Worth and one whose facilities and high-grade accommodations have given it reputation as one of the best hotels of the southwest. Both as an able business man and as a genial host Mr. Doyle has proved himself splendidly equipped for effective work in his present field of endeavor, and few citizens of Texas have a wider circle of appreciative and valued friends than this sterling and popular boniface. In politics Mr. Doyle is aligned as a staunch supporter of the cause of the Democratic party, though he has never been an aspirant for public office. The brief record of his business career given in this sketch offers full assurance of his loyalty and progressive attitude as a citizen, and he maintains a lively interest in all that tends to conserve the advancement and civic prosperity of the "Greater Fort Worth." He has attained the thirty-second degree in the Ancient Accepted Scottish Rite of the Masonic fraternity, is a member of its adjunct organization, the Ancient Arabic Order of the Nobles of the Mystic Shrine, and is also identified with the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks.

THE MONTGOMERY LAND SECURITIES COMPANY, INC., which is largely interested in property in western Texas, and of which R. W. Montgomery is president and C. W. Harris, secretary and sales manager, makes a specialty of developing and selling subdivisions with a guaranteed value of each lot placed in each contract, a plan that has met with the highest degree of satisfaction. The business policy of this company is the development and selling of subdivision property under a selling contract which guarantees the repurchase of the property, if, for any reason, the purchaser desires to sell when he has paid for it.

This is the company's manner of advertising the fact that it only handles high-class subdivision property, and property which it buys, develops and sells to suit its plans. The company does not engage in commission business and handles no other properties except subdivisions and large tracts of western land, the latter being really a wholesale branch of the business.



In the sixteen months that the company has been handling Guaranteed Value properties it has made a very rapid growth, and the company has practically completed arrangements for a very substantial increase in its capital stock and enlargement of its field of operations, taking in properties in Fort Worth, Dallas, Houston and San Antonio to be sold under the Guaranteed Value Contract.

The fact of the company's confining its operations entirely to its own properties and development and selling of its subdivisions, with the redemption feature above mentioned, gives this company a standing probably different from any real estate firm in Texas, if not in the United States, and its policy of selling only on investigation, on a contract to repurchase, is finding a marked approval among the class of investors in real estate who are looking for legitimate investments in staple property.

**TOM B. YARBROUGH.**—Prominently identified with financial and industrial interests in his native state and known as one of the liberal and progressive citizens who have contributed materially to the progress and upbuilding of the city of Fort Worth, Mr. Yarbrough is here incumbent of the office of vice-president and manager of the Waggoner Bank & Trust Company and is one of the substantial capitalists and representative stockmen of this part of the fine old Lone Star commonwealth. In both the paternal and maternal lines he is a scion of honored pioneer families of Texas, and thus there is special consistency in according to him specific recognition in this history.

Tom B. Yarbrough was born in Fannin county, Texas, on the 4th of June, 1873, and is a son of Thomas B. and Sallie (Waggoner) Yarbrough. The father of the subject of this review was born in Louisiana and became one of the successful business men of western Texas. He died in 1896. His wife was a member of the well known and influential Waggoner family whose name has been prominently linked with the history of Texas since the early pioneer days, when the Indians still disputed dominion of the soil and when this section was on the very border of civilization. The family was early founded in Wise county, where it acquired extensive landed and cattle interests, which have been retained by its representatives to the present day, the Waggoner estate being one of the largest and richest in Texas. Daniel Waggoner, the noted stockman, was a brother of the mother of him whose name initiates this article, and the mother died in 1880, being held in affectionate regard by all who knew her and being a native of Texas, which ever represented her home.

Tom B. Yarbrough was reared and educated in Fannin county, this state, and his initial business training was secured in connection with banking interests at Honey Grove, where he was identified with this line of enterprise for a number of years. In 1907 he removed to Fort Worth, where he acquired a substantial interest in the Hunter-Phelan Bank, which was then reorganized under the title of the Waggoner Bank & Trust Company, and which is incorporated with a capital stock of

\$134,600, which is augmented by a fund of undivided profits aggregating about \$122,000, making this one of the substantial financial institutions of the state. The number of its depositors has increased with distinct regularity, affording the best evidence of popular confidence and appreciation, and the progressive and yet duly conservative administration of the affairs of the institution has made it a valuable factor in connection with the financial prestige and solidity of Fort Worth. Perhaps one of the greatest assets of this institution is the well known capitalistic strength and individual integrity of its interested principals, all of whom are representative and sterling citizens of the state. The personnel of the executive corps of the Waggoner Bank & Trust Company is as here noted: W. T. (Tom) Waggoner, president; Tom B. Yarbrough, vice-president and manager; Sidney Webb and Albert B. Wharton, vice-presidents; and Sam D. Triplett, cashier. The directorate includes, in addition to the president and vice-presidents, Earl E. Baldridge, Guy L. Waggoner, William Capps and J. W. Mitchell.

Mr. Yarbrough is known as a man of marked ability and discrimination as a financier and business man and has large capitalistic interests aside from his association with the fine institution just mentioned. For a number of years past he has been prominently identified with the great cattle industry of his native state, and he is the owner of a finely improved ranch of 40,000 acres, lying mostly in Cottle county. He is the owner of valuable realty in Fort Worth, where also he is secretary and treasurer of the American Seed Company and treasurer of the American Home Life Insurance Company, two of the important concerns of the city and state. As a citizen he is essentially alert, progressive and public-spirited, and he maintains a lively interest in all that tends to foster the civic and industrial advancement of his home city.

On the 27th of June, 1901, Mr. Yarbrough was united in marriage to Miss Glenn Halsell, who was born in the state of Texas, and who is a daughter of Glenn Halsell, one of the representative citizens of Decatur, Texas, where are centered the extensive interests of this well known and influential family. Mr. and Mrs. Yarbrough have two children—Dan Waggoner and Josephine.

WILLIAM L. SARGENT.—Among those who have contributed materially to the civic and industrial development and progress of the fine old Lone Star state is William L. Sargent, the efficient and popular immigration agent of the Texas & Pacific Railroad. He maintains his home and official headquarters in the city of Fort Worth and is a citizen of prominence and influence, liberal and public spirited and an enthusiastic admirer of the great commonwealth, with whose interests he has been so long and prominently identified and concerning whose magnificent resources few men are better informed or able to speak with more of authority.

Mr. Sargent was born on the fine old homestead plantation of the family, at the head of navigation on the Tombigbee River, in Fulton

county, Mississippi, at Cotton Gin, and the date of his nativity was August 8, 1859. He is a son of Captain James L. and Melisa A. (nee Crayton) Sargent, representatives of a long line of distinguished and honored old southern families, and his mother died when he was but three years of age in 1862, during the Civil war, where his father distinguished himself. His father, Captain James L. Sargent, is still living, at the age of seventy-seven, at Caddo, Oklahoma, having married after the war in Mississippi, Mary Harris of Lee county, and they have living four children, all of whom are married, settled and making useful citizens. On Christmas day, 1909, twenty-one members of the Sargent family enjoyed a pleasant dinner at the home of Captain James L. Sargent.

Mr. Sargent was reared to maturity on the home plantation and was afforded the advantages of the common schools of the locality and period. In 1879 he came to Texas and took up his residence in Colorado county. A few years later he removed to the western part of the state, and with the interests of this great section of Texas he has been closely identified since the early 80's, having witnessed and assisted in its social and material development, and being a firm believer in the still more magnificent future of this opulent region. For a number of years Mr. Sargent maintained his home in Stonewall county, where he devoted his attention principally to the upbuilding of the country, which was sparsely inhabited, and where he was elected county and district clerk. In 1893, while a resident of Navarro county, he was elected sergeant at arms of the lower house of the state legislature, retaining this incumbency during the twenty-third general assembly, refusing a second term.

For about two years he was editor and publisher of the *Lasso*, at Baynor, Stonewall county, and he was for some fifteen years, either as owner or otherwise, connected with the press of Texas; as editor and publisher of the *Terrell Times-Star*, which, under his control, became one of the leading weekly papers of the state and was made an effective exponent of local as well as political interests. Upon his retirement from the field of journalism, Mr. Sargent engaged in the land business, with headquarters at Terrell, and in this line of enterprise his operations eventually touched nearly all sections of the state. For some time he was the Texas immigration agent for the Frisco Railroad system, also the Texas Midland, and the heads of the companies' passenger department gave Mr. Sargent credit for having personally been the means of securing for Texas a larger number of settlers and investors than any other one man in the state.

In 1905 Mr. Sargent became identified with the immigration department of the Texas & Pacific Railroad, and in the following year he established his permanent headquarters in the city of Fort Worth, from which point he directs the extensive and important work of his department. Besides being immigration agent for the railroad mentioned, he also represents the general immigration bureau of the Gould system of railroads, which bureau was organized on the 1st of January, 1909, and through its agency Mr. Sargent has materially increased the Texas im-

migration business of the Gould lines. He is an authority in the matter of the resources of Texas, especially in regard to the great western section of the state, which is largely tributary to the Texas & Pacific Railroad. He is a frequent and valued contributor to newspapers and magazines, through the medium of which he has done effective service in exploiting the attractions and manifold resources of the state. He is a well trained and admirably equipped immigration agent, making a profession of this line of work, and has accomplished through the same results that have added in generous measure to the industrial and civic upbuilding of the fine old Lone Star commonwealth.

Governor Campbell appointed Mr. Sargent a delegate and the commissioner of agriculture sent him as special representative of the seventeenth National Irrigation Congress, that assembled in the city of Spokane, Washington, in August, 1909, and at this noteworthy convention he ably represented his home state. By appointment of the thirty-first legislature of Texas he is a member of the executive committee for the conservation and reclamation service provided by legislative assembly. He is a valued contributing editor of the *Texas & Pacific Quarterly*, and is Texas correspondent of the *National Irrigation Journal*, published in the city of Chicago. Mr. Sargent has done particularly efficient and commendable work in bringing about co-operation between the railroads, the local commercial clubs and associations and the farmers, in the promotion of the interests of Western Texas. He has arranged numerous permanent and temporary exhibits of Texas resources and products, and through this means has brought to the state hundreds of desirable settlers. He was the first to exploit the magnificent resources of the Toyah Valley, in the extreme western part of the state, and assisted in establishing the first irrigation system in that splendid section, which has become the center of a large immigration movement. He has also done much to promote the development of the Pecos Valley, and he is deserving of special tribute for his able efforts in connection with the general progress and upbuilding of the state.

In politics Mr. Sargent is a staunch adherent of the Democratic party, and has been a great political factor in party council and the many strenuous campaigns since and including the Hogg campaign and administration—the ex-governor and Mr. Sargent were great friends. Few men in Texas are better known than the subject of this sketch.

While he holds no membership in any church, he is liberal in his views concerning man's future and society regarding the doctrine and teachings of the lowly Nazarene, and believes in the fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man, and is identified with various civic and fraternal organizations of representative order.

In the year 1891 Mr. Sargent was united in marriage to Miss Ruby V. Kennon, daughter of Dr. William Kennon, a representative physician and surgeon of Lowndes county, Mississippi, in which state Mrs. Sargent was born and reared. Mrs. Sargent was an invalid for six years before she was summoned to the life eternal on the 22d of April, 1908, and is

survived by four children—Mary, Bessie, Winnifred and William. Her death was a great shock and a loss that was almost unbearable to her husband, as their marriage relationship was tender, devoted, and favorably commented upon by all who knew them.

Mr. Sargent has been vice president of the Texas Press Association; president of the Texas Real Estate and Industrial Association; served five years as private secretary to the brilliant and lamented R. C. DeGraffenreid, M. C. (known as the Black Eagle of the Piney Woods). He has been temporary and permanent secretary of more state Democratic conventions than any man in Texas. His friends claim at one time he could have been governor and at another M. C., but his desire has always been to help his friends, and he is loved because of his loyalty to friends from whom he cannot be shaken. He is honorary vice-president from Texas of the Eighteenth National Irrigation Congress, member of the executive committee of the Texas Conservation Association and chairman of the program and invitation committee of the congress held in Ft. Worth April 5th and 6th. He is also member of the Texas Irrigation Congress. He has done as much or more for irrigation than any man in Texas, especially in the Lower Pecos Valley of Texas, where millions are being spent and great settlement progressing.

WALLER, SHAW & FIELD.—The firm of Waller, Shaw & Field, architects, is perhaps one of the best known corporations of its kind in Central or Western Texas, and it is composed of Marion L. Waller, Fred Gordon Shaw and E. Stanley Field, all well known, substantial and influential business men. Mr. Waller is the senior member of the firm and was its organizer in the year of 1909, but since 1901 he has been connected with the profession in Fort Worth. Mr. Field has charge of the firm's branch office in San Angelo, Texas.

Mr. Waller was born in Grimes county, Texas, and he was reared there and it remained his home until he was eighteen. He prepared for his work as an architect in Armour Institute of Chicago, and his first actual work along this line was begun in 1897 at Colorado Springs, and from there he came to Fort Worth in 1901, at the time the packing houses were established here, an event that marked the beginning of the great expansion and development of the city. Mr. Waller at once entered quietly but energetically into the work of his profession and soon established a reputation that has brought him an increasing clientele and volume of business with each succeeding year. With the closing year of 1909 he had erected one hundred and eight residence structures in Fort Worth. He was the architect of the Mulkey Memorial Church building and the church connected with the Polytechnic College; at the present time is the architect and the superintendent of the building of the new Magnolia Avenue Christian and the Hemphill Presbyterian churches, and he has also designed and built a number of commercial structures.

Mr. Waller's studies and inclinations, however, have led him into specializing as an architect of school buildings, and since the beginning

of the year of 1909 he has devoted practically his entire time and attention to this branch of architecture, having decided to make it his special field of effort for the future. He has been gradually leading up to this special department for some years. In Tarrant county he has designed and built twenty school houses, and in Fort Worth he has been the architect of eleven of the modern school buildings that have been erected in this city. With the four years ending with that of 1909 he has erected school buildings in Texas amounting in cost to a million and a half of dollars. In the fall of 1909 he was awarded the contract to design and build the new West Texas Normal buildings at Canyon City, Texas, the structure to cost one hundred thousand dollars and to be completed in 1910. This important work was given to Mr. Waller by the state officials in competition with other well known architects, and strictly on his merits and achievements as an architect of school buildings, this being a notable instance where friendship or political preferment were entirely eliminated. Mr. Waller's work is always thoroughly done, the result of study and close application. His classical designs are particularly notable for their simple beauty and elegance, although he does not devote himself narrowly to any particular style of architecture, nor does he sacrifice utility for outward appearances.

In the firm of Waller, Shaw & Field, Mr. Waller, as stated above, has charge of the school architecture; Mr. Shaw, who is a graduate of the Massachusetts School of Technology, has charge of the church architecture, and Mr. Field takes up generally the work of business structures, hotels and kindred lines. The firm has completely equipped offices in Fort Worth, where they employ a force of draftsmen and other assistants, including a specialist on steam heat and another on reinforced concrete. They are thus well fortified as architects in all the different departments of the profession, and their name stands among the first in their line in Central and Western Texas.

J. L. PRICE was born, reared and educated in Springfield, Illinois, but during the past nine or ten years his home has been in Fort Worth and his interests prominently associated with those of this city and of Central Texas. He studied for the law in Springfield in the office of General John M. Palmer, but was never a practitioner before the bar, choosing instead a commercial career. Going to Chicago, Illinois, he entered the service of Armour and Company as assistant credit man there, and later filled the same position for that company in St. Louis and in Fort Worth. He came to this city in 1901, about the time the packing houses and enlarged stockyards were established at North Fort Worth, and during the following three or four years had charge of the local office and the credit and financial affairs of Armour and Company's Fort Worth plant. But leaving the services of that company to engage in banking and other local enterprises, he established his permanent home in Fort Worth and became a director of the Stockyards National Bank. He is now the president of that institution, elected to the office in 1907,

and this bank represents the extensive financial transactions of the constantly growing live stock and packing house industries centered at North Fort Worth, and is a large factor in giving to the city its high rank in the matter of bank clearings as reported each week from all the large cities of the country. The financial strength and backing of this banking house are notable, its stockholders including such financial powers as J. Ogden Armour, Edward F. and Louis F. Swift, Edward Tilden and others having large interests in the stockyards and packing house industries. The capital of the bank is two hundred thousand dollars, with a surplus of fifty thousand dollars and deposits amounting to over a million and a half dollars.

Mr. Price is also the vice-president of the Reporter Publishing Company and the treasurer of the Feeders and Breeders' Show. He has fraternal relations with the Masons, Elks and various other orders. Mrs. Price was before marriage Miss Harriet Crabbe, from Springfield, Illinois, a granddaughter of the late General John M. Palmer.

E. BERKELEY SPILLER.—There are no cattlemen in western and north-western Texas whose labors and characters have caused wider respect or deeper admiration than those which are represented by the Loving and the Spiller families. Their representatives have not only stood forth as large figures in their private enterprises, but have donated generously of their years and abilities to the promotion of the cattle industry as one of the gigantic interests of the Lone Star state and the southwest. The result is that the typical cattleman of Texas, both of the old times and the new, has taken it for granted that whenever a Spiller or a Loving appears on the scene he is entitled to the best possible opportunity in the continuance of the ancestral record.

E. Berkeley Spiller, of Fort Worth, assistant secretary of the Texas Cattle Raisers' Association, is energetically and ably continuing the splendid work inaugurated by his maternal grandfather, Captain James C. Loving, when that organization was founded in 1877. Mr. Spiller was born at Jacksboro, Texas, in 1885. His great-grandfather, Colonel Oliver Loving, was one of the earliest pioneers and cattlemen in Jack county and west Texas, and in that part of the state the family still retain large interests. For years none connected with the great industry were better known than the Lovings, Oliver (the father) and James C. (the son). The latter was at the height of his prosperity, influence, popularity and energy when the cattlemen responded so heartily to the suggestion that they organize for mutual benefit and the business good of the state. When, therefore, the Cattle Raisers' Association of Texas was organized at Graham, Young county, in February, 1877, James C. Loving, of Jack county, was elected to the office of secretary, which carried with it the most active and heaviest burdens connected with the systematic promotion of the cattle interests of the state. As long as Mr. Loving lived his position was secure, and he held it, by successive re-elections, until his



decease, November 24, 1902. He also filled the office of treasurer from 1879 to 1893, and that of general manager of the association from 1884 until his death. To James C. Loving, more than to any other one man has always been freely accorded the honor of bringing the great success which has marked every distinct step taken by the association.

At the death of Captain Loving, Mr. Spiller entered the office of the Texas Cattle Raisers' Association and served under four different administrations—those of Murdo MacKenzie, of Trinidad, Colorado; Hon. W. W. Turney, of El Paso; Colonel Ike T. Pryor, of San Antonio; and James Callan, of Menardville. In his annual message to the San Antonio convention of 1908, Colonel Pryor took occasion to speak in the highest terms of Mr. Spiller's work, which has embraced the able performance of duties as assistant secretary (since 1906) and acting secretary during several months of 1907. It is universally conceded that there is no man of his years in Texas better informed on all the phases of the cattle business than Mr. Spiller, and he is fast adding to the record of the Spiller family in behalf of the advancement of the association.

Mr. Spiller is a son of George and Belle (Loving) Spiller, and both his parents are living at his native town of Jacksboro, Jack county. It was in that part of Texas that he was reared, but in 1901 moved to Fort Worth and spent one year in school there. He then entered the office of the secretary of the Texas Cattle Raisers' Association as bookkeeper, the head of the department then being the late Captain John T. Lytle, who succeeded Captain Loving. Mr. Spiller's rapid and substantial advancement since then is a part of the progress of the association, in whose subsequent history he is destined to be largely concerned.

ROBERT M. DAVIS.—To Robert M. Davis belongs the distinction of being one of the earliest pioneer business men of Tarrant county, conspicuously connected during a long number of years with the agricultural implement business. He was born and reared on a farm in Clinton county, Kentucky, and he came from there to Tarrant county, Texas, in 1874, and has ever since resided here. During the first years of his residence here he started and improved a farm from raw land, clearing a part of the tract and making the rails for the fences himself. He lived there on that farm until in 1886 he came to Fort Worth and embarked in the agricultural implement business with the firm of Lathrop and Vincent, whose business house was located at the corner of First and Houston streets, and he continued with that firm and with that of Ellis and Huffman for twelve years or until the year of 1898, during that time taking a more active part than perhaps any other one man in the introduction and operation of improved farming machinery in Tarrant county. He set up and started in operation in Tarrant county the first self-binding harvester that bound the sheaf with twine, this binder having been equipped with the famous Appleby knotter, a device that has continued, with improvements, in use to the present day. Mr. Davis also started out







*John H. McLean A.B. M.D.*

the first steam threshing outfit in the county, the machines having been assembled and set up in the Ellis and Huffman place.

In 1898 Mr. Davis engaged as an expert with the Harvester King Company of Chicago for the Texas territory, and during his three years' connection with that corporation his territory covered both Texas and Manitoba, he having been sent to the latter country for the wheat harvesting season. In fact he has worked in practically every state of the Union, save that of California, as an expert for the harvesting machinery interests, and after the consolidation of these interests under the name of the International Harvesting Machine Company he continued with the latter corporation, with headquarters in Fort Worth, until in 1906. In that year he received the Democratic nomination for and was elected the tax collector of Tarrant county, his conduct of the important and exacting duties of that office leading to his being again selected for its incumbency in 1908 for another term. His administration has been efficient, capable and popular in every way. His acquaintance and friendship, particularly in Tarrant county, includes practically every citizen and family therein. He is a member of the Masonic and various other orders.

Mr. Davis married in 1879, at Birdville, Lou V. Calloway, who was born and reared there, a member of one of the oldest families of Tarrant county. The four children of this marriage are John W., James Arthur, Mary Lou and Robert M. Davis Jr.

JOHN H. McLEAN, M. D.—An able and honored representative of the medical profession in his native state, Dr. McLean is engaged in the active practice of medicine and surgery in the city of Fort Worth, where he is also a valued member of the faculty of the medical department of Fort Worth University. He controls a large and representative practice and is recognized as one of the leading physicians and surgeons of the city.

Dr. McLean is a scion of staunch old southern stock and was born at Mount Pleasant, Titus county, Texas, on the 11th of June, 1877. He is a son of Judge William P. and Margaret (Batte) McLean, the former of whom was born in Mississippi and the latter in Virginia. Judge McLean was an infant at the time of his parents' removal from Mississippi to Texas, and they became pioneers of Jefferson, Marshall and Mt. Pleasant in the eastern part of the state, where they took up their abode in 1840. The parents passed the residue of their lives in that section, and there Judge McLean was reared to maturity, receiving the advantages of the common schools of the locality and period and greatly amplifying this discipline through his own self-application to higher branches of academic study in North Carolina. In Titus county he also began reading law, and admirably did he fortify himself in the learning of the great profession in which he was destined to attain much of distinction and success. He has long been one of the foremost members of the bar of the state in which he has maintained his home from childhood, has wielded large and beneficent influence in public affairs and has been called to

numerous offices of high trust and responsibility, including that of judge of the circuit court, of which office he was incumbent for a number of years. He served in Congress in 1873-75, and also served as railroad commissioner under Governor Hogg. He took up his residence in Fort Worth in 1894 and has been prominently identified with the civic and material development and progress of the city, where he has ever commanded unqualified popular confidence and esteem. He has represented a distinctive force in political and general public affairs in his home city and state and has been a leader in the ranks of the Democratic party. He and his wife have long been active in connection with the best social life of their home city. Of their nine children, three sons and three daughters are now living. One of their sons, Jefferson D. McLean, became one of the strong and honored members of the bar of Tarrant county and was engaged in the work of his profession in Fort Worth until his death—as a martyr to the worthy cause of clean government in his home county. While serving as county attorney he was assassinated, in 1907, by representatives of the criminal gambling element, against whom he had waged a relentless warfare, in an attempt to purge Fort Worth of this undesirable class of citizens.

Dr. John H. McLean gained his preliminary education in the public schools, having been nineteen years of age at the time of the family removal from Titus county to Fort Worth, where he was reared to years of maturity and where he has since continued to maintain his home. At the age of nineteen years he began reading medicine under effective preceptorship, and finally he was matriculated in the medical department of Fort Worth University, in which he was graduated as a member of the class of 1899 and from which he received his well earned degree of Doctor of Medicine. Soon after his graduation, for the purpose of still further fortifying himself for the exacting and responsible work of his chosen profession, the Doctor entered the medical department of Cornell University, said department of this well known institution being established in the city of New York. He did most effective post-graduate work and was granted the *ad eundem* degree of Doctor of Medicine by Cornell University in 1901. Thereafter he passed two years as one of the resident physicians of the celebrated Bellevue Hospital, in the national metropolis, where he devoted one year to clinical work in medicine and one to surgery, thus gaining most valuable experience of a practical order.

In 1903 Dr. McLean returned to Fort Worth, where he has since been successfully engaged in the general practice of his profession, and he has gained not only distinctive prestige in his chosen vocation, but has also retained the inviolable confidence and esteem of his professional confreres, as well as the general public. He controls a large practice of representative order and is an able and honored member of the medical fraternity of his native state. He has been a member of the faculty of the medical department of Fort Worth University since 1903, and in the same is the valued incumbent of the chair of gynecology and surgical diseases of women. He is a member of the American Medical Associa-

tion, the Texas State Medical Society, the North Texas District Medical Society and the Tarrant County Medical Society.

In politics the Doctor gives an unswerving allegiance to the cause of the Democratic party, but he has had no desire to enter the turbulent stream of so-called "practical politics," preferring to give his entire time and attention to the noble profession for which he has so admirably equipped himself. He is a member of various social and civic organizations of representative character in his home city.

In April, 1907, Dr. McLean was united in marriage to Miss Anita Hunter, daughter of William Hunter, a representative citizen of St. Louis, Missouri, and they have one son, William Hunter McLean. Dr. and Mrs. McLean enjoy marked popularity in connection with the social activities of their home city, where their circle of friends is coincident with that of their acquaintances.

JAMES W. SWAYNE.—A distinguished representative of the bench and bar of Texas and a citizen who has wielded much influence in connection with public affairs in this commonwealth is Judge Swayne, of Fort Worth, who is now presiding on the bench of the Seventeenth judicial district.

Judge Swayne is a scion of old and honored southern families, and the lineage, direct and collateral, shows many names of distinction. He was born at Lexington, Henderson county, Tennessee, on the 6th of October, 1855, and is a son of James W. and Amanda J. (Henry) Swayne, the former a representative of one of the prominent and patrician families of Virginia, with whose annals the name became identified in the colonial epoch, and the latter a member of a well known family of South Carolina. James W. Swayne Sr. was for many years a prominent member of the bar of the state of Tennessee, having been engaged in the practice of his profession at Jackson, that state. The record of the Swayne family shows that in the various generations have been many able representatives of the legal profession. Judge Noah H. Swayne, an uncle of the subject of this review, although of southern birth, was an unyielding advocate of the abolition of slavery, and he finally moved to the city of Columbus, Ohio, where he engaged in the practice of his profession. In 1861 he was appointed a member of the supreme court of the United States, by President Lincoln, and he served in this office until 1883. Judge John T. Swayne, another uncle, was a prominent lawyer and jurist at Memphis, Tennessee, and another honored representative of the family was General Wager Swayne, a distinguished member of the bar of New York city, and partner of Judge Dillon.

Judge James W. Swayne, the immediate subject of this sketch, was reared to maturity in his native state, where he received excellent educational advantages of a preliminary order, and he afterward continued his studies in the Kentucky Military Institute at Frankfort, Kentucky. In preparation for the work of his chosen profession he entered the law department of Cumberland University, at Lebanon, Tennessee, in which

institution he was graduated as a member of the class of 1877, and from which he received the degree of Bachelor of Laws. Early in the following year he came to Fort Worth, Texas, which was then a mere frontier town, and here he has since been actively identified with the work of his profession, in which his success has been on a parity with his distinctive ability. He is to be considered as one of the pioneer members of the bar of the state, and through his character and services he has lent dignity and honor to his profession and to the judicial annals of this commonwealth, to which his loyalty is of the most insistent order. Judge Swayne served as city attorney from 1883 to 1885, was representative of Tarrant county in the lower house of the state legislature in 1891-2, and was a member of the state senate from 1892 to 1894, inclusive, under the administration of Governor Hogg. From 1896 to 1900 he served with marked ability as county attorney of Tarrant county.

At the time of the initiation of the development of the great oil industry in Texas, Judge Swayne was chosen by Governor Hogg as his chief legal adviser and business representative, and in this capacity he effected the organization of the Hogg-Swayne Syndicate, which became a powerful factor in the crude oil operations in this state and which for a time set at naught the calculations of the other great oil interests of the world. The management of the affairs of the Hogg-Swayne Syndicate involved Judge Swayne and his associates in a number of important litigations that attracted wide attention, and through his effective legal and executive services in this connection he greatly added to his professional reputation and incidentally gained valuable experience in his clashing swords with some of the most distinguished lawyers of the country. During his identification with the oil industry Judge Swayne spent about four years of his time in the southern part of the state. In the year 1909 Governor Campbell appointed him to his present position on the bench of the seventeenth judicial district of the state, to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Judge Michael Smith. As a jurist, Judge Swayne has shown not only marked acumen in the administration of the affairs of his court, but has brought to bear his broad and exact knowledge of the science of jurisprudence, showing familiarity with law and precedent, and, it is said, has brought to the bench unusual executive ability.

In politics Judge Swayne has long been a leader in the ranks of the Democratic party in Texas, and he has rendered effective service in the promotion of its cause. He was a delegate at large from Texas to the Democratic national convention of 1900, when William J. Bryan was nominated for the presidency. The judge is an appreciative member of the Masonic fraternity, in which he has attained the chivalric degrees, being affiliated with Worth Commandery, Knights Templars. He is also a valued member of Queen City Lodge, No. 21, Knights of Pythias, of which he is past chancellor.

On the 6th of October, 1887, was solemnized the marriage of Judge Swayne to Miss Josephine Latham, who was born at Alexandria, Virginia, and who is a daughter of Phillipson Latham, a representative of one of

the distinguished Revolutionary families of the Old Dominion state. Mrs. Swayne is a woman of high scholarship and distinctive culture, having marked literary ability and having made many contributions to leading periodicals. Her family has been one notable for scholarship and she herself has been an appreciative student of the best in literature and art. She was a student at Vassar and was afterwards a graduate of the University of Missouri, and also received the degree of Master of Arts from the University of Missouri, in which she was a successful and popular teacher for some time. She occupies a position of prominence in connection with the representative social activities of Fort Worth, where her popularity is of the most unequivocal order and where she has taken a deep interest in reform movements and civic improvements of various kinds. Her services in these lines have been of much value, though rendered with naught of ostentation. She is a member of the board of trustees of the Carnegie library of Fort Worth, and she has been the leading spirit in the affairs of the Civic Art League. Although her work has been done quietly and is little known to the public, she has exerted much influence in bringing about civic reforms and public improvements, in which connection special reference should be made to the effective work done by her in bringing about the improvement of the park system of Fort Worth and in providing public playgrounds for the children of the city. Mr. and Mrs. Swayne have one child, Ida L.

WILLIAM M. TRIMBLE, M. D.—The high professional standing of Dr. Trimble is measurably indicated in his incumbency of the office of city physician of Fort Worth, where he is established in the general practice of his profession, in which he retains a large and representative clientage and is known as one of the leading physicians and surgeons of his native county and state, where he retains an inviolable hold upon popular confidence and esteem, both as a physician and as a loyal and public-spirited citizen.

Dr. Trimble was born in Tarrant county, Texas, on the 11th of June, 1868, and is a son of Green B. and Annie L. (Morrow) Trimble, both of whom were born and reared in Cole county, Missouri. The parents are numbered among the honored pioneer citizens of Tarrant county, where the father took up his abode in 1866, after having served as a valiant soldier of the Confederacy in the Civil war, in which he was a member of a Missouri regiment. He and his wife still reside on their fine old homestead farm, twelve miles east of the city of Fort Worth, where they have maintained their home for nearly forty years, and where they are held in the highest esteem by all who know them. Robert Morrow, maternal grandfather of the Doctor, died in Tarrant county in 1903, at a very advanced age, and was one of the honored and notable characters of this section of the state. He was a sterling veteran of three wars—the Seminole Indian war in Florida, the Mexican war, and the war between the states, in which last he was a zealous supporter of the cause of the Confederacy.

Dr. Trimble passed his childhood and youth on the home farm, and after availing himself of the advantages of the public schools he continued his studies under effective influences in the Sam Houston Normal School, at Huntsville, and the North Texas Normal School, at Denton, in which latter he was graduated as a member of the class of 1901. Long prior to this, however, he had established a secure reputation as an able and popular teacher in the public schools, and he became a prominent factor in educational circles, having been the founder of Arlington College, at Arlington, Tarrant county, of which he was president for some time, and which has since continued effective service under the title of the Carlisle Military Academy. Upon resigning his pedagogic work in connection with the institution mentioned, Dr. Trimble became superintendent of the public schools of North Fort Worth, of which office he continued incumbent for three years. He then began the work of preparation for the medical profession, in which he has achieved unequivocal success, having prosecuted his technical studies for two years in the medical department of Fort Worth University and having initiated the active practice of his profession in North Fort Worth in 1907. He soon entered the medical department of Baylor University, in the city of Dallas, from which admirable institution he received the degree of Doctor of Medicine in 1907. Thereafter he continued in the successful practice of his profession in North Fort Worth, where he served as city physician, being in tenure of this position in 1909, in which year North Fort Worth abolished its individual municipal government and became an integral part of the city of Fort Worth. At this amalgamation fitting recognition of the eligibility and effective services of Dr. Trimble was given in his appointment to the office of city physician of the "Greater Fort Worth," and his labors in this official capacity have been signally discriminating, zealous and commendable. He has well equipped offices in the Reynolds building and controls a large and representative practice as a physician and surgeon. He is identified with the American Medical Association, the Texas State Medical Society and the Tarrant County Medical Society, and he is held in high regard by his professional confreres in his native state.

As a loyal and progressive citizen Dr. Trimble manifests a lively interest in all that concerns the civic and material prosperity of his home city, and in politics he is a staunch supporter of the cause of the Democratic party, keeping in touch with the question and issues of the hour and being well fortified in his opinions as to matters of public polity. He and wife are members of the first Christian Church.

On the 17th of February, 1897, Dr. Trimble was united in marriage to Miss Susie C. Borah, who likewise was born and reared in Tarrant county, being a daughter of William J. Borah, a representative farmer and stockman of Grapevine Prairie. They have four children—Green B. Jr. (named in honor of his paternal grandfather), Terrell, Willie Lou and Walter Lee.



ROBERT H. FOSTER is widely known as a young man who has made a remarkable record as a promoter and organizer of large business enterprises, and in which are interested some of the wealthiest and most prominent citizens of Fort Worth and other Texas cities. In this city alone he has initiated and carried out so many enterprises of importance that it is difficult to comprehend how he could have had the time in the space of little over three years to accomplish such a wonderful work, but, being a tireless and constant worker, a deep student and thinker, economizing time and capable of bringing physical action down to the minimum, he has brought about some of the largest deals in real estate and organized some of the largest companies that have ever been recorded in the history of Fort Worth. He has associated with him as clients some of the strongest men financially of the state, and has succeeded in getting capital for investments from men who had been considered practically unapproachable on the subject of general improvements. His scientific study of real estate, financial and general business conditions in Fort Worth has given him a fund of knowledge on these subjects possessed probably by no other one man, but perhaps he has gained his most exalted reputation as an organizer of enterprises that are substantially profitable and pay dividends.

On the 1st of June, 1906, Mr. Foster and Mr. C. B. Epes formed a partnership for the purpose of handling municipal and corporation bonds, bank stocks and other high class Texas securities, Texas lands and Fort Worth city property, forming the firm name of the Foster-Epes Company, and in December of 1909 this company was succeeded by the Foster Company, incorporated, the new corporation continuing in about the same lines but on a much larger scale, and with increased facilities in each department for handling business, Mr. Foster being its president. The first large real estate enterprise to be undertaken by the old Foster-Epes Company was the subdivision and improvement of Chase Court, a beautiful residence section of the highest class in the heart of the most aristocratic residence section, expensive improvements having been placed on the property by the Consolidated Improvement and Construction Company, which Mr. Foster organized for that purpose and of which he is president. He is also the president of the Continental Investment Company, another successful corporation, and in the fall of 1909 he organized the American and Mexican Land and Cattle Company, of which he is the vice president, and which purchased and owns two hundred and sixty-five thousand dollars' worth of land near Vera Cruz, Mexico. John R. Griffin is the president of that company and R. W. Montgomery its secretary.

But one of the largest and most successful operations that Mr. Foster has consummated was the development, the placing on the market and the selling of Fostepco Heights, a high class residence subdivision situated directly north of the packing house district in North Fort Worth. The preliminary work of improvement at Fostepco Heights, begun in 1907, was completed early in the year of 1909, and among the notable

conveniences that Mr. Foster brought about for this addition was the street car line, built by the North Texas Traction Company and being an extension of the North Fort Worth line. For the purpose of promoting and financing this large enterprise, Mr. Foster organized the Greater Fort Worth Realty Company, which owns the property, and of which he is the secretary, the other officials and directors of the company including such leading citizens as Paul Waples, W. C. Stripling, F. M. Rodgers, E. H. Carter, Louis J. Wortham and others of equal prominence. Mr. Foster is also the president of the Syndicate Land Company, organized during the summer of 1909, and which owns valuable holdings adjacent to Fostepco Heights, and among the stockholders of this corporation are Benjamin J. Tillar, W. B. Harrison, Tom B. Yarbrough, I. H. Burney, Burke Burnett, George Light and W. P. Fischer. Mr. Foster was also instrumental in organizing the Hub Land Company, which purchased, owns and is holding for future development a body of six hundred and fifty acres of land adjoining the city of Fort Worth on the southeast, its officers and stockholders including such well known men as Newton M. Lassiter, Bernie P. Anderson, Tom Yarbrough, William Bryce, T. B. Owens, W. B. Ward Jr., Robert Mather of New York, B. F. Tensman of El Reno and R. C. Evans of St. Louis, the three last named being officials of the Rock Island Railroad Company.

Mr. Foster is a son of R. V. Foster, who died in 1894 and who was one of the prominent and wealthy citizens of Milam county, Texas, where he had located in 1849. During a long number of years he was a successful planter and stockman. The son Robert was born in Milam county, August 5, 1877, and received his educational training in the public schools of Calvert and in the Southwestern University at Georgetown. While in Calvert he was identified with a general mercantile business and with other interests in Milam county, but on moving to Sherman, this state, he became largely interested in real estate transactions and prominently connected with the Commercial Club and other local organizations. In 1906, desiring a larger field for his operations, he came to Fort Worth and established his permanent home and the headquarters for his large undertakings in this city. He is variously connected with representative business and social organizations here, and is a Mason, a Knight of Pythias and a member of other orders. Mr. Foster married on May 8, 1896, Miss Minnie Ladd, of Biloxi, Mississippi. They have three children, Clair, Joseph H. and Kathryn.

WILLIAM W. STEWART.—There is no dearth of interesting data in the personal and genealogical history of this venerable and distinguished lawyer and jurist, who is now living retired in North Fort Worth, after many years of earnest endeavor in the work of his chosen profession and as a man of affairs. He is a scion of a family whose name has loomed large in the annals of American history, and even the brief review here possible to enter will measurably indicate the consistency of this statement.

Judge Stewart was born in Alleghany county, Pennsylvania, on the 14th of December, 1827, and is a son of Captain Alanson C. and Sabrina (Wallace) Stewart. In both the paternal and maternal lines the ancestry is traced back to stanch Scottish clans, as the names indicate, but both families were founded in America in the colonial epoch. Captain Alanson Stewart was a native of Wyndham county, Connecticut, and he received his military title from service in the wars of the Pottawatomie and Sioux Indians of Indiana, Michigan, and from Governor Lewis Cass of the latter state, as did his distinguished brother, General Hart L. Stewart. For a protracted period the two brothers were associated in the extensive and important public contracting work in Pennsylvania, Illinois, Michigan and other states. They were the contractors who constructed the tunnel under the Alleghany river near Pittsburg, and in 1829 they removed to southern Michigan, where they took up large tracts of government land in the midst of the wilderness still infested by the Indians. In the autumn of that year Captain Stewart established his family home on the beautiful White Pigeon Prairie, in St. Joseph county, Michigan. He was a contractor in connection with the Illinois and Michigan canal, and later was one of the construction contractors in the building of the line of the Michigan Central Railroad from Chicago to Michigan City. In addition to other public works of importance, he and his brother attempted the building of the first tunnel under the Chicago river, at La-Salle Street, Chicago. After the work was practically completed a severe flood in the river destroyed the tunnel, and many years elapsed before another was constructed. It is interesting to record in this connection that at the present time a new tunnel, of the most modern type, is nearing completion in the same location.

In 1852 Captain Stewart and his brother, General Stewart, became associated with William B. Ogden, John S. Wallace, James Y. Sanger, Henry A. Clark and other representative citizens in the purchase of one hundred and sixty acres of land in the Bridgeport district of what is now the southern section in the city of Chicago. This tract they platted into town lots and the place was laid out under the name of the South Branch addition. Along the east side of this sub-division, Stewart Avenue,—named in honor of the two brothers,—was laid out, and the same extended from the vicinity of Twenty-second Street south to about the present Fifty-ninth Street. Subsequently, through a concession made by the city council of Chicago, and without compensation to the original owners of the sub-division, the main tracks of the Pittsburg, Fort Wayne & Chicago Railroad were laid through Stewart Avenue, which was thus virtually confiscated. For a long term of years, this valuable right of way has been in litigation in Chicago, on the part of the heirs, who have sought to recover title or gain due compensation.

General Hart L. Stewart was postmaster of Chicago under the administration of President James K. Polk, who conferred the appointment, and later his brother, Captain Stewart, was assistant postmaster of Chicago, in charge of the west Chicago division, under postmaster John L.

Scripps, who later attained much prominence in the field of newspaper publishing. Captain Stewart passed the closing years of his life in Evanston, Illinois, where he died in 1871, and his cherished and devoted wife, a woman of most gracious personality, was summoned to the life eternal in 1869. She was born in Cuyahoga county, Ohio. Both were devoted members of the Methodist Episcopal church, and the names of both merit a place on the roll of the honored pioneers of both Michigan and Illinois.

Judge William Wallace Stewart, the immediate subject of this review, was about two years of age at the time of the family removal to Michigan, and in the village of White Pigeon, that state, he gained his early educational discipline, which included a course in a branch preparatory school established there under the auspices of the University of Michigan, which great institution was then in its infancy. Later he continued his studies in Albion College, an institution still maintained under the auspices of the Methodist Episcopal church, in Albion, Michigan. After leaving this college, on the 1st of January, 1847, Judge Stewart went to the city of Chicago to assume a clerkship in the postoffice, under the administration of his uncle, General Stewart. He was in the post-office work for several years, under both his uncle and his father, and in the meanwhile he had given close attention to the reading of law, in which connection he had most able preceptors. In 1852 he was admitted to the bar, and his commission was signed by Hon. John Dean Caton, who was then Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Illinois. At the same time the young lawyer was appointed one of the five notaries public of Chicago, which city could claim only seventeen thousand population when he there took up his abode.

After his admission to the bar Judge Stewart engaged in the practice of his profession in the future metropolis of the west, and he soon gained prestige as an able trial lawyer and well fortified counsellor, so that his professional business rapidly expanded in scope and importance. In 1863 he was appointed trustee for Sanger, Camp & Company, and was given charge of the lands and town sites owned by that firm, which had completed the contract for the construction of the Ohio & Mississippi Railroad from St. Louis, Missouri, to Vincennes, Indiana, and which had acquired properties along this line, in partial compensation for the construction work. In June, 1867, Judge Stewart removed temporarily to Flora, Illinois, where he formed a law partnership with Hon. Aaron Shaw of Olney, Illinois, and he also conducted a large business in the handling of real estate in various sections of Illinois and Indiana. After the great Chicago fire of 1871 he returned to the prostrate city to settle up the estate of his father, who had died in 1871, as previously noted in this context. From 1873 to 1876 Judge Stewart resided at Wilmette, now one of the beautiful north shore suburbs of Chicago, and in the latter year, he removed to the village of Hyde Park, now an integral part of the city, on its beautiful South Side. There he became official attorney for the villages of Hyde Park, Pullman, Kensington and South Chicago, and finally he

removed to Pullman, where he was local attorney for the great Car Company for a period of six years.

In 1890 Judge Stewart and his wife came to Texas, to join their son, William F. and their daughter, Mrs. Grace Potter, the latter of whom died in Chicago in 1892, she having been the wife of Gilbert Latem Potter. The son, William F. Stewart, now the only surviving child, had established himself in business in Fort Worth, and here the parents took up their residence. For about three years Judge Stewart served as a member of the city board of equalization, to which position he was appointed by Judge George W. Armstrong. He was then appointed by the city council, under the administration of Mayor B. B. Paddock, to the office of judge of the corporation court of Fort Worth. He held this position nearly six years, and in 1904, having virtually retired from active business or professional life, he established his home in North Fort Worth, where he has since resided. He is a notary public and also carries on, to a small extent, an advisory real estate business, as he finds this occupies his time, and he has been too active in the long intervening years to find pleasure in the supine ease. He is a gentleman of the old school,—courtly, affable and dignified,—and his life has been guided and governed by the loftiest principles of integrity and honor, so that he has not been denied the generous and well merited gifts of unequivocal popular confidence and esteem. He has been one of the world's noble army of workers and his mind, broadened by culture and association with men and affairs, is a veritable store house of information concerning the history of his native land. In politics the judge gives his allegiance to the Democratic party and his religious faith is that of the Presbyterian church, of which his loved wife was likewise a devout member.

In the year 1853 was solemnized the marriage of Judge Stewart to Miss Angeline Stewart, who was born and reared in the city of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, and a representative of one of the old and honored families of that city. She was a daughter of Francis L. and Sarah A. (Davis) Stewart. She was summoned to eternal rest in 1899, at Fort Worth, and in her death came the great loss and bereavement in the life of Judge Stewart, to whom she had been a devoted help-meet and companion for nearly half a century. Of the five children, the only one now living is William F., who is one of the representative business men of Fort Worth, and has been for the past thirty-five years. In the meantime, he has been also officially connected with the city, as editor, alderman and representative leader of the City Democracy and County Politics. At the present time he is largely interested in establishing a "ranch" in Pecos county, Texas, and founding a town, railroad station and postoffice on the line of the great Kansas City, Pacific and Orient Railway which is being constructed through said county and his "ranch." This town, station and postoffice is named "Tessie," and Mr. Stewart has been appointed the postmaster by the President. It is suggestive, significant and not without interest that in 1847 the father should arrive in Chicago; that in 1876 the son should locate in Fort Worth; and in 1890

both should again be united; that in 1907 the son should push out again for western and frontier environments and enterprise, awaiting the coming of the father in 1911!

The intervening sixty-four years involves the lives of two early pioneers of both Illinois and Texas.

#### PARKER COUNTY

Parker county was created December 12, 1855. The act directed that the county court, when chosen, should order an election for the location of the seat of justice, the site selected to be called Weatherford. The first settlements followed soon after the establishment of the military post at Fort Worth in 1848. For twenty years the county was on the frontier and exposed to the hostile raids of the Indians. For several years after the organization of the county, the settlers had little trouble, but the removal of a large part of the Texas Indians beyond Red river caused a persistent warfare along the fringes of settlement. In 1859 an attack was made on the town of Weatherford, when Mrs. Sherman was killed and scalped. During the Civil war the danger from such raids was never abated, and as late as 1873 an Indian incursion was made into Parker county.

During the comparative security of the early '50s settlement was rapid. The population in 1858 was estimated at 3,507, including a small number of slaves (160). About ten thousand acres were in cultivation, wheat and corn being the only crops, and over ten thousand cattle grazed on the ranges. Weatherford had a population at this time of 175, there being only five negroes in the little town.

The author of "Information about Texas," whose observations were made about 1856-57, says of Parker county: "It is a desirable region for small farmers. Weatherford, a new town and the county seat, is rapidly increasing. Not twelve months ago the site was laid out, and yet there are already a court house in process of construction and several other public buildings, one hotel, several stores, private dwellings and other marks of civilization." Weatherford built up rapidly in those years. One of the first steam flour mills in a large region of the country was started there by Mulkin & Carter about the middle of 1858, and in November of the same year a correspondent wrote: "This flourishing little town I find still improving rapidly, and, notwithstanding the universal cry of hard times, new buildings are going up all over town. The new court house is rapidly approaching completion, and also a handsome brick edifice on the hill west of town, which is designed for a female seminary. Weatherford seems to have increased faster than any town in North Texas during the first three years of its existence." The establishment of a newspaper—the *Frontier News*—at that place, which two years before could not boast of a cabin, was striking evidence, not only of the enterprise of its publisher, C. E. Van Dorn, but more so of the rapid

strides the northwestern frontier was making in improvement and settlement.

The population of Parker county in 1870 was 4,186; in 1880, 15,870 (615 negroes); in 1890, 21,682; in 1900, 25,823 (865 negroes). The increase of property values is shown by the following assessment aggregates: In 1870, \$1,511,975; in 1882, \$3,653,138; in 1903, \$7,187,955; in 1909, \$14,229,050.

The rapid increase of population during the '70s was due partly to the general immigration to this portion of Texas in that decade, but more particularly to the building of the first railroad through the county. The citizens of Weatherford were inspired with the same hope of railroad connection with the outer world as were the people of Fort Worth. By 1877 the town had grown so that it was credited with two thousand population. Some of the men whose civic and business energy was behind the progress that this town made during the '70s were Judge A. J. Hood, Captain Ball, I. Patrick Valentine, and the district attorney of the county was S. W. T. Lanham, later governor of Texas. Weatherford has been the home of many well known men. And their spirit of enterprise was of the same sort with that of the people of Fort Worth; for when they saw that there was no immediate prospect of the T. & P. being extended from Fort Worth to the west, they followed the example of their more fortunate rival and formed the Parker County Construction Company to build the line between the two cities. In January, 1879, the grading was begun, by the following May half the work was completed, and by the winter of 1879-80, trains were running into Weatherford. During the '80s the branch of the Santa Fe from Cleburne to Weatherford was built, and later the Weatherford, Mineral Wells & Northwestern.

In 1890 the population of Weatherford was 3,369; of Springtown, 657. Veale Station, which before the coming of the railroad ranked next to the county seat in importance, had only 47 inhabitants in 1890, and has since sunk into obscurity. At the census of 1900 the towns with a population over 100 were: Weatherford, 4,786; Springtown, 518; Aledo, 162; Peaster, 182; Millsap, 261; Brock, 131.

ROBERT PERCELL LOWE.—One of the largest business corporations of Weatherford, as well perhaps as of Parker county, is the Lowe-Carter Hardware Company, both wholesale and retail dealers, and the head of this corporation is Robert Percell Lowe, for a number of years one of the leading business men of Weatherford. He is of Scotch-Irish parentage and was born in the state of Louisiana on the 20th of October, 1843, and he was ten years of age when he left the state of his birth, living afterward in Mississippi, Tennessee and Illinois. During about twenty-five years he was employed as a freight agent by the Mobile and Ohio Railroad Company, stationed successively at Baldwin, Mississippi, Humboldt, Tennessee, and in Cairo, Illinois, and resigning that position in 1894 he came direct to Weatherford, Texas, and engaged in the hardware business as a member of the firm of Thomason and Lowe. After



four years he purchased his partner's interest and continued the business as the Lowe Hardware Company until in 1904 this firm was consolidated with that of W. D. Carter and Company under the name of the Lowe-Carter Hardware Company. This corporation annually transacts a large volume of business, and they maintain five traveling salesmen in their wholesale department. At the time of the consolidation of the two firms in 1904 the three-story brick structure which the business now occupies was erected, and in addition to this the company also maintain and occupy four large warehouses, all of which have railroad track connections.

HENRY MILLER is numbered among the public benefactors and among the public-spirited and influential residents of Weatherford, which has been his home for nearly thirty years. He was born, however, in Germany, on the 30th of November, 1848, and coming to this country in early life he arrived on American shores on May 17, 1867. In 1875 he made his way to Fort Worth, Texas, and from there, in February of 1881, came to Weatherford. While in Fort Worth he was variously employed, dealing at different times in books and stationery, in pianos, etc., and after coming to Weatherford he took up real estate and fire insurance. In April of 1889 he was elected grand keeper of records for the Knights of Pythias fraternity, an office he has held continuously to the present time, and he has also served Weatherford five years as a member of its board of aldermen, seven years as a school trustee and six years as its mayor. His efforts throughout the entire period of his residence in Weatherford have been discerningly directed toward its upbuilding and future development, and during his administration as the city's mayor fourteen miles of sewerage were built, the Third Ward school building was erected and additions to other schools built, and the Widows and Orphans Home for the Knights of Pythias fraternity, a state institution under the jurisdiction of the Grand Lodge, was secured for Weatherford largely through his efforts. He is an alert, well informed man, and is held in the highest esteem by his fellow citizens.

ROBERT JAMES NORTON, the first white child born in the city of Weatherford, was born on the 18th of March, 1858. D. O. Norton, his father, a native of Tennessee, had come to Parker county in the previous year of 1857, and he is thought to have erected the first house within the present limits of Weatherford. He also established the first newspaper in this city, the *Frontier News*, and he was a charter member of and assisted in organizing the first Christian church in Weatherford. He was both a lawyer and surveyor, and to him belongs the honor of surveying, platting and naming Weatherford, and throughout the remainder of his life he continued as one of the city's most efficient builders and promoters. He served two terms as a district judge. During the period of the Civil war he was once arrested as a Union sympathizer, he having been charged with furnishing information to the Union forces, and he was taken to



Beaumont, Texas, and tried by a court martial, but as nothing could be proven against him he was given his liberty. Mr. Norton did not return to Weatherford until the war closed, and it was after his return that he was appointed by Governor Davis to the district judgeship, and he was serving in that capacity at the time of his death. D. O. Norton and Lydia Crabtree, his wife, became the parents of eight children, but only a son and daughter are now living, the latter, Katie, being the wife of John W. Williams and living in Clearmont, this state.

Robert J. Norton, the only surviving son, has been identified with Weatherford and its interests throughout his entire life, and he is now one of its representative business men. Desiring in his early life to become a printer, he served an apprenticeship on the paper which his father had established here, the *Frontier News*, but which had been sold and the name changed to the *Weatherford Times*, and he afterward continued his journalistic work for four years in Houston, Texas. In 1901 he established the Weatherford Bottling Works and began the manufacture of soft drinks, and his trade along that line now covers a considerable area of the country surrounding Weatherford. He has served two terms as a member of the city's board of aldermen, and he is an efficient local Democratic worker, but devotes the greater part of his time and attention to his business. He is a member of both the Knights of Pythias and the Elks fraternities.

On the 5th of April, 1885, Mr. Norton married Ida Crisenberry, a granddaughter of Robert Potter, an officer during the republic of Texas. The five children of this marriage union are Anice, LeRoy, Josephine, Belle and Ida. Mrs. Norton is a member of the Christian Church.

WILLIAM R. TURNER, one of the well known business men of Weatherford, was born in Christian county, Kentucky, December 8, 1834, a son of Jerome B. and Mary W. (Young) Turner, born respectively in Lynchburg, Virginia, September 2, 1806, and in Trigg county, Kentucky, in 1812, and he is a grandson on the paternal side of Robert Turner, born in Virginia February 22, 1766. William R. Turner spent the early years of his life on a farm near Paducah, Kentucky, and came from there in 1857 to Lamar county, Texas, and in 1858 he came to Parker county, locating eight miles east of Weatherford. During the first year of the Civil war, that of 1861, he enlisted for service in Company E, Eighth Regiment of Texas Infantry, and remained with his command until the war closed, in the meantime having been promoted from a private in the ranks to the first lieutenantcy of Company E. He escaped without a wound, and when his services were ended he returned to Parker county and later began work on the cattle ranch of William Mosley in Young county. After two years there he came to Weatherford, arriving in this city on the 1st of January, 1870, and he has since been successfully engaged in the livery business here. He built both his livery barn and his home here. He is a director in the First National Bank of Weatherford,

and, although never desiring the honors or emoluments of public office, he served Weatherford several terms as a member of its board of aldermen during the early period of its history. He was made a Mason in Kentucky in 1856, and now affiliates with Phoenix Lodge in Weatherford.

In the year of 1869 Mr. Turner was united in marriage with Eunice C. Powers, a native daughter of Mississippi, and their five children are Catherine, who married S. S. Tullice and is living in Dallas county, Texas, and Robert C., William L., Edward G. and Jesse Y. Turner, all of Weatherford.

GEORGE MORLAND BOWIE is one of the most prominent of Weatherford's business men, the vice president of its First National Bank and conspicuously identified with the cattle industry. He was born in Banff county, Scotland, December 20, 1846, a son of George and Elizabeth (Morland) Bowie. In 1866 he left his native land for America, his first home here being in Dallas City, Illinois, moving from there to Avoca, Iowa, and in 1868 he came to Texas. He taught school in Palo Pinto county and engaged in various other enterprises, and going to Fort Worth in 1879 he embarked in the lumber business, and ten years later became a member of the firm of William Cameron and Company, who had lumber yards in various parts of the country, and Mr. Bowie was president of the company at White Castle, Louisiana, and also the president of the Cypress Lumber Association of that state. He remained in that city for eleven years, and in that time became one of its most influential and prominent men, its mayor for some time and the president of the White Castle Bank. Selling his interests in the William Cameron Company lumber business in 1901, Mr. Bowie in the same year came to reside in Weatherford, having built his present home a year previously.

On November 18, 1875, Mr. Bowie was married to Margaret Armstrong, a native of Jack county, Texas. They have four children: W. A., vice president of the Rockwell Lumber Company of Houston, Texas; G. D., a lumber merchant of Amarillo, Texas; Edith, now Mrs. B. W. Fauts, of Guadalajara, Mexico; and Ellen M., at home.

IRA BAKER TAYLOR.—One of the highly respected citizens of Weatherford, Texas, is Ira Baker Taylor, engaged in real estate and abstract business with his son, under the firm name of Taylor & Taylor. He is one of the older residents of the city, and is well known among the business men of the community. He has established a business that has for years been one of the leading enterprises of the city and county, and is regarded as a man of keen judgment and foresight. Mr. Taylor was born in Trenton, Kentucky, June 28, 1834, and is a son of Wright B. and a grandson of William Taylor.

The earliest ancestor of this family of whom anything definite is known is John Taylor, who with his wife, Ruth Wayette Taylor, was living in North Carolina prior to 1796, when his will was probated, in Nash county. He and his wife had seven children, and one of these was

William, grandfather of Ira B. Taylor. William Taylor married Hannah Dudley about 1795, and they located in Todd county, Kentucky. Their son Wright B. married America E. Halliard, of Clark county, Kentucky.

Wright B. Taylor himself put the initial "B" in his name, for the sake of having more than one initial or given name. He was born in North Carolina and his wife was born in Winchester, Clark county, Kentucky, daughter of Captain Halliard, who served in the war of 1812. He had a good common school education and became a farmer and stock raiser. Wright B. Taylor was an Episcopalian and a Democrat. He served as sheriff of Todd county two terms. In the fall of 1854 he moved to Texas, becoming convinced that a Civil war was imminent and that Kentucky would be a fighting ground. All his four sons served in the Confederate army from the beginning to end of the war with the exception of the youngest, who went into service in the spring of 1864, at the age of sixteen years.

Ira B. Taylor attended high school at Elkton, Kentucky, until he reached the age of eighteen years, and then went to John D. Tyler's private high school, or college, near Clarksville, Tennessee, two terms. He left school to accompany his father and family to Texas, and in the new location engaged four years in merchandising. He then spent his time profitably raising horses and mules until the beginning of the Civil war, and then spent three and one-half years in the Confederate service. At the close of the war he returned to Corsicana, where he again engaged in mercantile business, and became prominent in the community. He served as the first mayor of Corsicana, his term covering the period about the time when the Texas Central Railroad entered the city, in 1870. In March, 1879, Mr. Taylor removed with his family to Weatherford, and there engaged in his present business, taking his oldest son into co-partnership. Ira B. Taylor and his son, Wright D. Taylor, are still owners of the abstract business under the style of Taylor & Taylor, established at Weatherford, Texas, in 1879, and are actively engaged in the same.

Mr. Taylor is a staunch Democrat and served as deputy district and county clerk of Navarro county, Texas. He also served one term as treasurer of the county and one term as mayor of Corsicana. He has fulfilled every office of public trust to the approval of the people, and stands well with all who know him. He is a member of the Central Church of Christ of Weatherford, Texas. He is also a member of the Masonic Order, and has been for forty-five years. He is also an Odd Fellow and has taken all the degrees in this order.

On February 4, 1857, at Elkton, Kentucky, Mr. Taylor married Mary Holmes Edwards, daughter of William Watson and Judith (Lively) Edwards, the father engaged in the saddlery and tanning business in Elkton. She was educated in the Elkton high school. Mr. Taylor and his wife became the parents of nine children, namely: Anthon Baker, of Crockett, born December 27, 1857; Ada, of Corsicana, born September 19, 1859; America Elizabeth, of Corsicana, born August 2, 1861; Iva Judith, of Crockett, born February 18, 1864; Wright Dudley, of Crockett,

born November 8, 1865; Lula, of Crockett, born June 8, 1867; Olive, of Corsicana, born July 8, 1869; Lena, of Corsicana, born March 22, 1871; and William Edwards, born August 13, 1877, at Corsicana.

JAMES C. HUTCHESON has been identified with agricultural pursuits throughout nearly his entire active business life, and he now owns a valuable homestead adjoining Springtown. He was born in Meigs county, eastern Tennessee, June 9, 1839, a son of Charles and Sarah (Worthington) Hutcheson, both of whom were born in Bledsoe county, Tennessee, the father in 1807 and the mother on January 5, 1809. They were married in their native county of Bledsoe, and the six children born of their union are: Mrs. M. A. Schoolfield, living in Arkansas; William L., of Springtown; Samuel W. and Charles N., both of whom died in Tennessee; James C. and Alfred L., both living in Springtown. After the father's death in 1842 the mother married Burton Hohman, and there were four children of that marriage: Murphy L. and Robert A., who died in Tennessee; Mrs. Coulter, living in that state; and Washington N., also of Tennessee. The mother died on the 27th of September, 1895.

After some years of farming in Tennessee, James C. Hutcheson came to Texas, arriving in Tarrant county on the 6th of November, 1872, but after a year there he returned to Tennessee, although he came again to Texas in December of 1877, this time locating in Parker county, a mile and a half south of Springtown. After ten years he sold his farm there and moved to the farm he had purchased in the meantime, a valuable tract of sixty acres adjoining the village, where he has ever since made his home, and he also owns one hundred and ninety acres about one mile from Springtown. From 1884 until 1888 he was engaged in the grocery business in that village, and then for two years he conducted a hardware and implement store at Weatherford, selling that business then to his son, M. B. Hutcheson, and returning to the farm, and with the exception of this short period of commercial life agriculture has been his life's occupation. In August of 1863, Mr. Hutcheson enlisted in Company G, Third Tennessee Cavalry, Federal army, and he continued as a Civil war soldier for nearly three years, or until mustered out of service. He has served six years as commander of Burnside Post, No. 56, G. A. R., of Springtown.

On the 23d of October, 1860, he was married to Harriet A. Runyan, who was born in Hamilton county, Tennessee, November 25, 1841, a daughter of William and Malinda (Murray) Runyan, both also born in that state. Of the ten children born of that marriage, two died in infancy, and those living are: Marcellus B., born August 11, 1861; Caswell E., born March 14, 1863; Elizabeth, born August 11, 1865, and now the wife of Dr. S. J. Hill; Charles W., born April 11, 1867; Franklin L., born November 18, 1868; Adolphus L., September 17, 1870; James L., born March 13, 1872; and Lura Belle, borne December 11, 1876, and now the wife of Dr. Walter Wood, of Springtown. Mrs. Hutcheson died

on the 20th of November, 1891, and on the 5th of January, 1896, Mr. Hutcheson married Mary J. (Crysup) Peterson, who was born in Cass county, Texas, July 26, 1854, a daughter of William and Jane (Haas) Crysup. The father was born in Kentucky, but came in an early day to Texas, and the mother was born in Tennessee. Their three children are: George W., of Jacksonville, Texas; Mrs. Hutcheson, and Henry J., who died in infancy. Mr. Crysup died in 1856, and his widow afterward married W. H. Carlton, and their five children are: Mrs. Margaret McConnell, living in Wise county, Texas; W. H. Carlton, of Hobart, Oklahoma; Dr. E. Carlton, of Ringgold, this state; Mrs. Augusta Davis, of Oklahoma; and Mrs. Amanda Croslin, of Bonner, Fannin county, Texas.

Mr. Hutcheson was made a Master Mason in Limestone Lodge at Georgetown, Tennessee, in 1869, and he is now a member of Eureka Lodge No. 371, A. F. & A. M., and of Springtown Lodge No. 75, R. A. M. Both he and his wife are members of the Methodist Church at Springtown.

JAMES L. HUTCHESON was born in James county, Tennessee, March 13, 1872, a son of James C. and Harriet A. (Runyan) Hutcheson, but although born in Tennessee he was reared in Parker county, Texas, for he was only six years old when the family home was established here. In 1892 he left the farm and entered upon his successful mercantile career, clerking in a store in Springtown until 1903, and in partnership with J. B. Hill and J. F. Graham he opened a dry goods and gentlemen's furnishing store, and the firm of Hill, Hutcheson and Graham has ever since continued in business with uninterrupted success.

On the 18th of December, 1892, Mr. Hutcheson was married to Miss Rhoda King, born in Pauls Valley, Oklahoma, June 16, 1875, a daughter of William H. and Mary (Fox) King, the father born in Alton, Illinois, December 18, 1840, and the mother was born in Parker county, Texas, but both are now deceased, the father dying on the 2d of February, 1908. Two of their children are living, Mrs. Hutcheson and Mrs. Ina Mann, the latter living in Paradise, Texas. Mr. and Mrs. Hutcheson have four children: Lloyd E., born November 27, 1893; Lois L., born October 24, 1895; Ina Belle, born March 11, 1898; and Blanch A., born September 30, 1900. Mr. Hutcheson is a member of Springtown Lodge, No. 291, A. F. & A. M., and of the Modern Woodmen of America. In politics he votes with the Democratic party.

WILLIAM WILSON is regarded as one of the real builders of Springtown, for he has been foremost in promoting its chief institutions, including its schools and churches, and he is active in all movements pertaining to its upbuilding and advancement. He was born in England on the 14th of March, 1844, a son of Benjamin and Sarah (Goddin) Wilson, both of whom were born in Lincolnshire of that country. In 1856 the family embarked on the then long and perilous voyage to America, but in the Mediterranean sea their vessel, a sailing craft, was shipwrecked

and the wife and mother was lost. The father, with his five sons and two daughters, finally arrived in St. Louis, Missouri, where his parents had located in 1850, and subsequently Benjamin Wilson moved with his family to Morgan county, Illinois. He bought a farm there, and he died at Murrayville of that state.

William Wilson worked on his father's farm in Illinois until in 1876 he came to Springtown in Parker county, Texas, and for two years afterward rented the farm of Joshua Culwell. In 1878 he bought the Jonathan Culwell farm of eighty acres, but sold it in 1882 and bought eighty acres three miles north of Springtown, which he later sold and in 1884 bought thirty acres in the village of Springtown. He platted that tract and sold it as Wilson's Addition to Springtown. After that had been accomplished he bought the Selvedge farm of one hundred and sixty acres a mile north of Springtown, but in 1908 he sold that tract and bought his present home in Springtown.

Mr. Wilson, on the 25th of January, 1866, was married to Miss Nancy J. Steely, who was born in Missouri in 1848, a daughter of John and Margaret (Miller) Steely, who subsequently moved to Missouri and spent the remainder of their lives there. Nine children have blessed the marriage union of Mr. and Mrs. Wilson, namely: John, living in Oklahoma; Sallie, who married first John Culwell, and after his death James S. Roach, and she is living in Oklahoma; Norman is also living in Oklahoma; Essie married Thomas Boren, of Springtown; Theodore is living in Oklahoma; B. Frank was killed in a railroad accident at Durant, Oklahoma, leaving a daughter, Reva, who is living with her paternal grandparents in Springtown; and three others are deceased. Mr. Wilson has fraternal relations with Eureka Lodge, No. 371, A. F. & A. M., with Springtown Chapter, No. 75, and with Springtown Council, No. 47. Both he and his wife are members of the Baptist Church at Springtown.

ANDREW J. CUNNINGHAM.—Prominent among the business men and citizens of Springtown is numbered Andrew J. Cunningham, a member of the drug firm of Selvidge and Cunningham and one of the city's former mayors. He was born in Marion county, Tennessee, August 20, 1844, a son of Pleasant H. and Jennie (McMurray) Cunningham, both of whom were also born in that commonwealth. In their family were the following five children: Fannie, who married W. P. Peters, of Alabama; Andrew J., of Springtown; Mary, who married J. W. Martin, of Pooleville, this state; Rachel, who married Marshall Scott, and at her death left a daughter, who is now living in Springtown; and Melvina, who died when young. The parents are also deceased, the father dying in Alabama and the mother in Springtown, Texas.

Andrew J. Cunningham spent the days of his boyhood and youth in Alabama, and later he was engaged in the mercantile business at Waterloo. After coming to Parker county, Texas, in 1878 he bought a farm three miles northwest of Springtown, and leaving there in 1881 he bought a building in that village and engaged in the saloon business.

But after three years he sold his interest in that vocation and in 1890 bought an interest in the dry goods business of Kidd and Company, and then after seven years he disposed of that interest and in 1900 became a member of the firm of Selvidge and Cunningham, which bought the drug stock of J. B. Wadsworth and which is still in business. Mr. Cunningham built the stone block in which the drug store is located in 1903, and in 1893 he built his pleasant and attractive home.

On October 10, 1891, he was married to Miss Sallie M. Akard, a native daughter of Texas. Her father, Donathan Akard, came with his family to Texas many years ago, and both he and his wife are deceased. A son, Don H., was born to Mr. and Mrs. Cunningham on the 10th of August, 1892. Mr. Cunningham is quite prominently associated with the Masonic fraternity, affiliating with Eureka Lodge, No. 371, with Springtown Chapter, No. 75, and with Springtown Council, No. 47. He also has membership relations with the Knights of Honor at Weatherford and with the Knights and Ladies of Honor at Springtown, and he is identified politically with the Democratic party. Both he and his wife are members of the Methodist Church in their home town.

#### JOHNSON COUNTY

Johnson county was created by act of the legislature, February 13, 1854, the first election of county officers being held in the following April. Five commissioners were appointed to select three sites for the county seat, and the site chosen by the voters was to bear the name Wardville. However, the site finally selected for county seat was given the name of Buchanan, probably in honor of the then president of the nation. Buchanan was seven miles northwest of Cleburne, and as a town it has long since been extinct. Alvarado was founded about the same time, and the two were the only towns in the county in 1857. One of the first settlers of the county was Charles E. Barnard, who kept an Indian trading post. Settlement was rapid during the '50s, although the county was still on the frontier. In 1858 the population was estimated at 2,304. There was a comparatively small number of slaves, only 257. In the entire county only about 8,500 acres were in cultivation, over half of that being in corn. At that time Johnson county included the territory since taken to form Hood and Somervell counties.

The total population in 1870, after the county had been reduced to its present form, was 4,923. During the next ten years population increased several fold, being 17,911 (574 negroes) in 1880. In 1890 it was 22,313; in 1900, 33,819 (1,147 negroes).

Property, according to assessed valuations, has increased in like proportions. In 1870 the assessed values were \$1,888,955; in 1882, \$4,875,128; in 1903, \$9,006,310; and in 1909, \$25,584,440.

Following the detachment of the western half of the county to form Hood county, the county seat was moved from Buchanan to the new town



of Cleburne. In 1870 the postoffice centers of the county were Cleburne, Alvarado and Caddo Grove.

The county was without railroad facilities until the '80s. The Fort Worth-Temple division of the G. C. & S. F. was completed in December, 1881; the M. K. & T. was built at the same time, and in 1882 was opened the Cleburne-Dallas branch of the Santa Fe (originally the Chicago, Texas & Mexican). A few years later the branch of the Santa Fe from Cleburne to Weatherford was built. Since the first railroads were built the county developed rapidly, the last of the big pastures disappeared several years ago, and this is now one of the chief agricultural and stock farming counties of Central Texas.

A number of towns have grown up in the last twenty-five years. The larger centers, with population in 1890 and 1900 respectively, are: Cleburne, 3,278, 7,493; Alvarado, 1,543, 1,342; Grandview, 257, 713; Burleson, 249, 368; Joshua, 285, 482; Keene (in 1900), 500; Venus (in 1900), 475; Godley (in 1900), 289; Rio Vista (in 1900), 274.

Cleburne is a modern, progressive city, with water works, a street railway now building, and other public improvements, and a number of commercial and manufacturing enterprises. Its largest single resource is in the Santa Fe railroad shops, with an annual payroll of about a million dollars.

#### HOOD COUNTY

Hood county, named for General J. B. Hood, was created November 2, 1866. Up to that time its territory was part of Johnson county. In 1875 the south part of the county was taken to form Somervell county. The act creating Hood county directed that the county seat, when selected, should be called Granbury.

Settlement began here in the '50s, but Indian hostilities prevented rapid development until after 1870. Besides Granbury, one of the early centers of settlement was at Thorp's Spring. Here, in 1873, J. A. Clark and sons, Addison and Randolph, started the private school which was soon afterward chartered as Add-Ran College, and in 1895 it was moved to Waco and is now Texas Christian University. Acton was also a small post village in 1870.

The total population of the county in 1870, before the creation of Somervell, was 2,585. In 1880 the population was 6,125 (198 negroes); in 1890, 7,614; in 1900, 9,146 (241 negroes); and in 1910, 10,008.

In 1887 the Fort Worth & Rio Grande Railroad was completed from Fort Worth to Granbury, which remained the terminus until 1889. Since the advent of the railroad Granbury has become a prosperous town, and the surrounding country has been developed to modern agricultural conditions.

The assessed wealth of the county in 1870 was \$423,194; in 1882, \$1,367,956; in 1903, \$2,277,494; and in 1909, \$5,222,070.

In 1890 Granbury had a population of 1,164; in 1900, 1,410. Thorp Spring in 1900 had 485 inhabitants. After the removal of Add-Ran Col-



lege, an institute was maintained at Thorp Spring known as Jarvis Institute, in honor of one of the principal founders of Texas Christian University. Cresson, at the junction of the F. W. & R. G. and the Santa Fe, had a population of 279 in 1900. Other towns, with population in 1900, are: Tolar, 171; Acton, 112; Lipan, 286.

JOHN J. HINER, attorney at law, Granbury, Texas, was born in Johnson county, this state, December 25, 1869, son of Rev. James and Martha (Abney) Hiner, the former a native of Kentucky, the latter of Weakley county, Tennessee. They came to Texas in early life and were married in Johnson county, November 4, 1859.

When a young man, the Rev. Hiner studied law and was admitted to the bar in Johnson county. When the Civil war broke out he was appointed recruiting agent at Camp Henderson, where he recruited and drilled several companies. He was not eligible for active duty himself on account of an accident which left him lame. After the war he moved from old Buchanan, in Johnson county, to Cleburne, where in 1866 he served by appointment, and later by election, as county judge, which office he held until his removal in 1871 to Acton. He was elected county judge of Hood county in November, 1878, and in 1880 was elected county clerk. In 1882 he was re-elected to the clerk's office, and was just entering upon his second term, in January, 1883, when his death occurred. Soon after the war he was ordained a minister of the Methodist Episcopal church, South, and remained in the ministry until his health failed, when he was placed on the superannuated list. Previous to his marriage to Martha Abney he had married a Miss Williams, who bore him two children: Joseph H., of Farwell, Texas, and Mrs. M. E. Wohlford, of Hood county, Texas. The children of the second marriage are all residents of Texas, and are as follows: Thomas H., of Granbury; Mrs. S. A. Merrill, of Somervell county; Mrs. H. A. Randle, of Snyder; Lee Forest, of Acton, Hood county; John J., of Granbury; Fannie D. Maloney, of Granbury; Mrs. Eppie Bradley, of Dublin; Marvin Neil, of Granbury, and Mrs. Claudie Hensell, of Granbury. The mother also is a resident of Granbury.

John J. Hiner received his education in Granbury College and studied law in the office of Major Thomas T. Ewell. He was admitted to the bar in September, 1891, before Judge C. K. Bell, and immediately thereafter opened an office and entered upon the practice of his profession in Granbury. In 1904 he was elected Democratic presidential elector from the twelfth congressional district, this honor coming to him unsought, and he has never held or been a candidate for any other office.

On June 17, 1894, Mr. Hiner married Miss Etta Beatty, who was born in Missouri, January 16, 1874, a daughter of John and Elvira (Crites) Beatty, both of German descent. Mr. and Mrs. Hiner have one daughter, Mildred Elizabeth, born November 8, 1895.

The family are members of the Methodist Episcopal church, South, of Granbury, and Mr. Hiner is a Knight of Pythias.

WILLIAM L. DEAN, of the firm of Hiner & Dean, attorneys at law, Granbury, Texas, has been a resident of this place for ten years, and during that time has been prominently identified with its affairs.

Mr. Dean was born at Van Zandt, Texas, October 10, 1871, a son of John E. and Adaline M. (Wages) Dean, and grandson of Asbury M. Dean. His grandfather Dean came to Texas when a young man and settled in Van Zandt county, where were born his six children, namely: John E., of Portalis, New Mexico; Mrs. Samuel Mayfield, of Van Zandt county; Calloway, deceased; Mrs. Nettie Coffman, of Kaufman county, Texas; James R., of Kaufman county; and Asbury M., of Van Zandt county, Texas. The only child of John E. and Adaline M. (Wages) Dean is William L. The parents separated, and each has since married and reared a family. By his second wife, Sarah, nee McClearn, John E. Dean has seven children: John P., Robert L., George, Egbert, Edgar, Connie and Clifford. Previous to her marriage with Mr. Dean, Adaline Wages was the wife of John Moore, by whom she had one daughter, Sarah T., who married Martin A. Groom and now lives in Hood county, Texas; and for her third husband she married N. Y. Groom of Van Zandt county, the children of this union being Jerome; Mrs. Minnie Lyle, who died, leaving one daughter, Minnie Lyle; Delia, Frank, Mrs. Lilia Baccus and Harvey.

William L. Dean remained with his mother until he was eight years of age, when he went to live with his uncle, John H. Wages, of Van Zandt county, with whom he remained until he was fourteen. At that early age he started out to make his own way in the world, and began by working on a farm. After doing farm work for a number of years he accepted a position as clerk in the drug store of L. E. Griffith, at Terrell, Texas, where he remained one year. At the end of that time, in 1891, he opened a drug store at Alamo, Texas, which he conducted one year.

In September, 1892, Mr. Dean married Miss LaVada Heath, who was born in Panola county, Texas, in 1877, daughter of Augustus and Paulina (Robburts) Heath, both natives of Texas, and both deceased. Mrs. Dean was their only child. To Mr. and Mrs. Dean have been given seven children, of whom the first two, Norman and Horace, are deceased; the others are Truman, Clarence C., Willina, Nettie Fay and Grace.

After their marriage both Mr. Dean and his wife, feeling the need of a better education than they had, spent a year attending school, and Mr. Dean then taught school one year in Kaufman county. After this he took up the study of law and was admitted to the bar in Kaufman county. That was in 1898. In 1900 he came to Granbury, Hood county. Here he practiced his profession until June of the following year, when he was appointed county attorney of Somervell county, Texas, being appointed to fill the unexpired term of J. E. Pierce. In the spring of 1903 he returned to Granbury, Hood county, and opened a law office. In November of the following year he was elected county attorney of Hood county, without opposition, nor did he have any opposition two years later when he was re-elected. In 1908 he was again elected to the

same office, over two opponents. In September, 1908, he formed a partnership with John J. Hiner, under the firm name of Hiner & Dean.

HARRISON L. NEELY, city assessor and collector, Granbury, Texas, was born in Warrick county, Indiana, July 22, 1843, and on the paternal side is descended from staunch New England ancestry. His grandfather, Joseph Neely, and his father, Greenleaf Neely, were both natives of New England, the latter born in Montpelier, Vermont, in April, 1812. Mr. Neely's mother was a Tennessean. He was the fifth born in a family of seven children, namely: Mrs. Samuel Overall; Rev. Matthew H., a Methodist minister; Mrs. D. Merchant; Randolph R., deceased; Harrison L.; Reuben M., deceased; and Mrs. George Smith, deceased.

In 1849 the Neelys moved from Indiana to Texas and established their home on a farm in Hopkins county, where the father was engaged in farming and stock raising the rest of his life. He died on November 26, 1875. All of the sons allied themselves with the southern cause and served in the Confederate army during the war, and Randolph died in the army, in Mississippi. Harrison L. enlisted in June, 1861, in Company D, Eleventh Texas Cavalry, and later was in Company G, Eleventh Texas Infantry, Randall's Brigade, Walker's Division, the fortunes of which he shared until the close of hostilities, when he was discharged and returned home.

On September 14, 1864, Harrison L. Neely married Miss Algeronina L. Maxwell, who was born in Weakley county, Tennessee, January 24, 1844, daughter of Calvin and Amanda (Fleming) Maxwell, natives of Tennessee. Her grandfather, Doctor Maxwell, was one of the pioneer settlers of that state. Mr. and Mrs. Neely have had ten children, seven of whom are living, as follows: Randolph, born June 20, 1865, died December 15, 1887; Lucy, born March 18, 1866, became the wife of Samuel Goodson, and died July 24, 1885, leaving one son, Wylie Goodson; Monroe, born February 22, 1866, married Miss Bessie Mullins; Olivia, born March 8, 1870, married E. L. Cooper of Hugo, Oklahoma; Mary, born April 27, 1872, is the widow of James Dyer of Lyndale, Smith county, Texas; Greenleaf S., born December 29, 1875, married Miss Sue Dyer, and lives at Amarillo, Texas; Mattie Lora, born August 7, 1879, married William W. Hudson of Hyko, Texas; Freddie, born August 29, 1881, died February 8, 1882; Lawrence L., born March 12, 1885, is a resident of Amarillo, Texas; and Rosalee, born April 16, 1887, married James Howard of Granbury.

Mr. Neely was engaged in farming in Hopkins county until 1891, when he moved to Granbury and opened a market, which he conducted until 1897. That year he was elected city assessor and collector, which office he has since filled.

Faternally, Mr. Neely is identified with several organizations. He is past commander of Granbury Camp, No. 67, U. C. V., and has membership in both the A. F. and A. M. and the I. O. O. F. of Granbury, being tyler of the former and treasurer of the latter. Politically he is a

Democrat, and his religious creed is that of the Methodist Episcopal church, South.

#### ERATH COUNTY

Erath county was created January 25, 1856, from Bosque and Coryell counties. The first county officials were: J. A. McNeil, chief justice; W. W. McNeil, county clerk; C. Needham, sheriff; Thomas Cavnack, assessor and collector. Settlement had begun in the early '50s, and before the county was organized the town of Stephenville had been laid out. Its proprietors on July 4, 1855, offered land for the county building, provided the county seat was located there, and the legislative act above noted designated that town as the seat of justice provided these donations were made.

The population of the county in 1858 was estimated at 766. Only about 1,600 acres were in cultivation. For twenty years after the county was organized it was on the frontier, and property was never secure from Indian raids. After the war this entire region was in the great cattle ranges, and the county was not settled by a permanent population until the '70s. In 1870 the population was 1,801, but by 1880 this had increased to 11,796 (257 negroes). In 1890 the population was 21,594, and in 1900, 29,966.

The Texas Central Railroad, which began building in 1879, was completed through Erath county about 1881. Rapid development followed, a large number of farmers came in and partly dispossessed the range cattlemen, and the raising of wheat, corn and cotton became an important industry. By 1882 the county had four flour mills and four cotton gins. Along the line of the railroad were established the towns of Dublin, Alexander and Mount Airy. Stephenville, though twelve miles from the railroad, still led in population, and had an annual trade of about \$400,000. Duffau and Morgan's Mill were other settlements at that time.

In October, 1890, the Fort Worth & Rio Grande Railroad was completed to Stephenville. Within the last few years the Stephenville North and South Texas Railroad has been built from Stephenville south to Hamilton. Also a branch of the T. & P. has been built to the coal region at Thurber.

The assessed wealth of Erath county in 1870 was only \$356.916; in 1882, \$2,240,917; in 1903, \$6,456,815; and in 1909, \$12,579,140.

One of the county's valuable resources, developed in recent years, is coal, Thurber, at the north part of the county, being at the center of the mining region. In agriculture the county has made great progress since the first railroad came. The county has gained distinction for its apple crop, and it is estimated that there are three thousand acres of orchards, besides other fruits and vegetables.

In 1890 the population of the principal towns was: Stephenville, 909; Dublin, 2,025; Alexander, 381; Bluffdale, 156; Thurber, 978; Duffau, 263. In 1900 the towns and population were: Stephenville, 1,902; Dub-





*Victor L. Smith*

lin, 2,370; Thurber, 1,453; Alexander, 381; Duffau, 192; Bluffdale, 436; Lingleville, 242; Morgan Mill, 143; Huckabay, 174.

NICHOLAS D. SMITH, postmaster of Dublin, Texas, is one of the prominent and leading citizens of the town, and has been closely identified with its modern development.

Mr. Smith was born at Springfield, Missouri, in 1866, and when a boy of thirteen came with his parents from that state to Texas, their settlement being at Paris. Subsequently he entered the employ of the well-known cotton firm of Martin, Wise & Fitzhugh, and learned the business in which ere long he became expert and in which he has ever since been interested. After remaining with that firm eighteen years, he came, in 1896, to Dublin, which has since been his home. Here for a number of years he has represented the great cotton firm of George H. McFadden & Brothers, of Philadelphia, which has branch offices throughout the southern states and also in various parts of Europe.

On May 16, 1907, following a strong endorsement and solicitation of the best business element of the city, Mr. Smith was appointed postmaster of Dublin, which office he now fills. To this position he brought the same earnest efforts and thorough methods that had won success for him in other lines, with the result that the office is now in excellent working order; it is the distributing point for nine rural routes and the financial depository for a large number of smaller postoffices throughout Central-Western Texas.

Mr. Smith is married and has two daughters, Frances and Olive. Mrs. Smith, formerly Miss Jewel Parker, is a daughter of the late George F. Parker, a well known pioneer of Texas, who died in 1902. Mr. Parker came from Illinois, his native state, with his parents to Texas in the days when it was a republic, and was reared on the frontier. His home and headquarters for many years were in Limestone county and, he was engaged in the cattle business. During the Civil war he was a soldier in the Confederate army. He went through life with a keen observation and a retentive mind, and his varied experience on the frontier and in the army furnished him with a vast fund of interesting information. If the stories and experiences he used to relate could now be published they would form a volume of much interest and no small proportions.

Dublin, ideally situated, surrounded by a rich agricultural country, and having many wealthy citizens, presents a fine field for commercial activities. In this work, as a member of the Commercial Club, Mr. Smith has been a prominent factor, and during the past three years has been instrumental in adding to Dublin many commercial and industrial enterprises. He has given both time and money, as far as he could consistently go, in efforts toward the upbuilding of the town, and many of his efforts have borne fruit. A single example of this is the beautiful new station of the Frisco Railroad, with its adjoining park, enterprises which are directly the result of Mr. Smith's influence with the officials of the road. Also he was personally active in the campaign carried on during the sum-

mer of 1909 to secure the establishment in Dublin of one of the State Normal schools. In short, it may be said that he is constantly on the alert on behalf of the city's interest, and is at the head of every movement of importance in this line.

JAMES H. CAGE, one of the prominent and highly respected citizens of Stephenville, Texas, dates his birth in Wharton county, this state, October 29, 1845. His parents, John and Martha (Neal) Cage, the former a native of East Tennessee, born in 1811, and the latter of Alabama, born February 21, 1825, were married in Alabama, and came to Texas in 1840, settling in Wharton. In 1849 the father started to California, by way of Mexico and thence by boat. The boat was wrecked and all on board lost their lives, except two negroes that Mr. Cage was taking with him. In his family were three children, two of whom died in infancy. The mother died in 1894. Thus James H. Cage is the sole survivor of the family. He came with his mother to western Texas in 1857, stopping for a while in Bosque county, and the following year coming to Erath county and settling at Stephenville, where he received his education in the common schools.

In 1868 Mr. Cage began an active career on the cattle range, first gathering cattle for others and driving them to Mexico on shares. In 1869 he settled down to ranching for himself in Eastland county, where he remained six years. At the end of that time he sold out and moved to Stephenville. Here he opened a general store. He erected a stone building, known as the Cage Block, and in it conducted his mercantile business until 1897. During this time he also dealt in cattle. He sold the store in 1897, but retained the cattle interests, and about this time, in company with M. S. Crow, opened a bank in Stephenville, under the firm name of Cage & Crow, which bank is still in operation. For years, Mr. Cage has also dealt extensively in land, and is now interested in railroading. In 1906 Cage & Crow built the S. N. & S. T. railroad from Stephenville to Hamilton, about forty-three miles, and they still retain a half interest in the road.

On November 12, 1872, Mr. Cage married Miss M. J. Boykin, a native of Limestone county, Texas, born November 12, 1855, daughter of Solomon Boykin, one of the early settlers of Limestone and Bosque counties. Of the children of Mr. and Mrs. Cage, one died in infancy and two others are also deceased. Those living are Mrs. F. S. White, Mrs. E. O. McIlhane, Bruce C., J. D., John M., Barney E., Roxey and Una.

MARTIN S. CROW, M. D.—Not only was Dr. Crow a member of one of the honored pioneer families of the Lone Star state, but it was also his to attain a place of distinction in the exacting profession to which he devoted his attention for many years, ministering with all of self-abnegation and much of skill to those in affliction and distress and gaining the affectionate regard of the community in which he long maintained his home. In his death, at Stephenville, on the 3d of May, 1892, Erath county



lost one of its most honored and influential citizens. His life was one of signal integrity in all its relations and it counted for much in human helpfulness and productive activity. He served as a member of the state legislature and held other positions of trust, and from even the foregoing brief statements it is patent that there is eminent consistency in according in this history a tribute to the memory of this sterling citizen of the state in which practically his entire life was passed.

Dr. Martin S. Crow was born in McNairy county, Tennessee, on the 6th of April, 1833, and was a boy at the time of the family removal to Lamar county, Texas, where his father became a successful farmer and stock-grower. His parents continued to reside in this state until their death, and were worthy pioneers of Lamar county. Dr. Crow was afforded the advantages of the McKinzie school for boys, at Clarksville, Red River county, and as a youth he began the work of preparing himself for that profession in which he was destined ultimately to attain much of success and precedence. He was finally matriculated in the College of Medicine in the city of Galveston, in which he was duly graduated and from which he received his degree of Doctor of Medicine. Later he completed an effective post-graduate course in one of the leading medical institutions of the city of New Orleans.

Dr. Crow initiated the active work of his profession at Meridian, Bosque county, Texas, where he remained for a period of five years, at the expiration of which he removed to Stephenville, Erath county, where he established himself in practice in the year 1871 and where he continued to follow the work of his profession, with all of zeal and devotion, until about three years prior to his death, having finally retired on account of impaired health. Dr. Crow ever kept in close touch with the advances made in both departments of his profession and was uniformly recognized as one of the representative physicians and surgeons of this part of the state. His kindly and sympathetic nature gained to him the affection of those to whom he ministered, and his name is revered in many of the homes of Erath county. He served for a number of years as a member of the medical examining board of this district of those applying for admission to the practice of medicine, and had the distinction of being president of that body. He was identified with the American Medical Association and the Texas State Medical Society, besides which he was a close student and contributed various articles to the periodical literature of his profession.

As a young man Dr. Crow became affiliated with the time-honored Masonic fraternity, in which he attained the capitular degrees, having been identified with the lodge and chapter in Stephenville for many years prior to his demise. A man of broad mental ken and distinctive public spirit, he naturally manifested a loyal interest in all that pertained to the welfare of his home town and county, and he wielded much influence in local affairs of a public order. He was a staunch adherent of the Democratic party and he was elected to represent Erath county in the state legislature, in which he served one term and in which he made an admir-

able record as a careful and conscientious public official. The Doctor gained much success of material order and was the owner of a large amount of valuable realty at the time of his death.

On the 27th of January, 1859, was solemnized the marriage of Dr. Crow to Miss Mary Jane George, who was born in McNairy county, Tennessee, on the 23d of June, 1843, a daughter of William and Elizabeth (Chambers) George, both of whom were likewise natives of Tennessee, where the respective families were founded in the pioneer epoch of the history of that state. When Mrs. Crow was about nine years of age her parents moved to Texas and took up their abode in Cass county, where she was reared to maturity and where was solemnized her marriage. She received excellent educational advantages and is a woman not only of marked culture and gracious personality, but also of much business ability, as has been shown in her effective management of the large estate left by her honored husband. While Dr. and Mrs. Crow had no children of their own, they reared in their home two boys and two girls. The latter were daughters of Solomon Boykin; the elder, Jane, is now the wife of James H. Cage of Stephenville, and the younger, Bamah, is the wife of Lee Young, of Stephenville.

Mrs. Crow is not only the owner of several well improved farms in Erath county, but is also a successful dealer in real estate, in which line of enterprise her operations have been large and important, in the handling of both town property and farm lands. She is junior member of the firm of Cage & Crow, conducting a successful banking business in Stephenville. She is a zealous member of the Baptist church and is prominent in the best social life of her attractive little home city. Her residence was erected by her in 1893, and is one of the most attractive in Stephenville.

STEPHEN N. BORDERS, D. D. S.—A native son of the Lone Star state and a scion in both the paternal and maternal lines of honored pioneer families of this fine commonwealth, Dr. Borders is a representative member of his profession in his native county and is engaged in the successful practice of his profession in the thriving little city of Stephenville, where his circle of friends is coincident with that of his acquaintances.

Stephen N. Borders was born in Stephenville, his present place of residence, on the 25th of November, 1872, and is a son of Augustan M. and Sarah (Jordan) Borders. The father was born at Cedartown, Polk county, Georgia, on the 20th of May, 1842, and the mother was a native of the state of Arkansas, where she was born on the 12th of January, 1850; her parents came from Arkansas to Texas just after the close of the Civil war, and her marriage to Augustan M. Borders was solemnized at Meridian, Bosque county, this state, on the 12th of January, 1871. Stephen A. Borders, the paternal grandfather of him whose name initiates this sketch, was a native of Georgia and the great-grandfather was born in Germany.

Augustan M. Borders was reared to maturity in Georgia, where he

received a good common-school education and where also he learned the trade of carpenter. In 1867 he came to Texas and settled in Cleburne, where he remained until the following year, when he removed to Erath county and took up his residence in Stephenville, where he was employed for some time as clerk in a store conducted by the late Dr. Martin S. Crow, of whom a memoir appears on other pages of this work. He was a citizen who ever commanded the highest measure of popular confidence and esteem, was influential in public affairs of a local order and served about twelve years as treasurer of Erath county. He was a staunch Democrat in his political proclivities, and both he and his wife held membership in the Methodist Episcopal church. Their mutual devotion and sympathy made their married life one of signally ideal character, and "in death they were not divided," as Mrs. Borders was summoned to the life eternal on the 16th of February, 1899, and he passed away on the 5th of the following month. They became the parents of five children, all of whom are living and of whom the subject of this review is the eldest; Emma O. is the wife of Dan W. Evans, of Mineral Wells, Palo Pinto county, Texas; John B. resides in Mansfield, Tarrant county; Beulah A. is the wife of George B. Newson, and they reside in Missouri; and Balma A. is the wife of Lee Williams, of Stephenville, Texas.

Dr. Stephen N. Borders is indebted to the public schools of Stephenville for his early educational discipline and in preparation for the work of his chosen profession, which represents both a science and a mechanic art, he attended two courses of lectures in the Louisville College of Dentistry, in the city of Louisville, Kentucky, after which he completed his technical studies in the Chicago College of Dental Surgery, in which he was graduated as a member of the class of 1901 and from which he received his well earned degree of Doctor of Dental Surgery. After his graduation he returned to Stephenville and opened an office. Here he has since been successfully engaged in the practice of his profession, retaining a large and representative clientage and being known as one specially skilled in both the operative and laboratory departments of his important vocation. His offices are equipped with the most modern appliances and accessories and he keeps in close touch with all advances made in the work of his profession. He is a valued member of the Texas Dental Society and takes an active interest in its affairs.

Though never a seeker of public office of any description Dr. Borders is essentially loyal, progressive and public-spirited as a citizen, and his political allegiance is given to the Democratic party. He and his family hold membership in the Baptist church of their home city, and he is prominently affiliated with the Knights of Pythias, in which he has served as a member of the grand lodge of the state, besides having passed all of the official chairs in John Tarlton Lodge, No. 227, in Stephenville. The family home is a recognized center of gracious hospitality and the members of the household are prominent in the social life of the community.

On May 17th, 1891, was solemnized the marriage of Dr. Borders to Miss Mary Virginia McNeill, who was born in Erath county, Texas, on the 16th of December, 1873, and who is a daughter of Dr. William W. and Elizabeth (Bell) McNeill, the former of whom was born in South Carolina, in 1819, and the latter of whom was born in Missouri, in 1842. Dr. and Mrs. McNeill were numbered among the earliest settlers of Palo Pinto county, Texas, and the Doctor was later the first county clerk of Erath county. He was one of the first physicians and surgeons of this section of the state, was a graduate of the medical department of the University of Kentucky and was one of the able representatives of his profession in Texas, where he continued to reside until his death, in 1902, at the venerable age of eighty-three years. He was held in affectionate regard by the families to whom he long ministered with all of zeal and self-abnegation, and his name merits an enduring place on the roll of the honored pioneers of the old Lone Star commonwealth. His wife preceded him to eternal rest, having passed away in 1893. They became the parents of three children.

Dr. and Mrs. Borders have two children: Frances Elizabeth, who was born on the 4th of March, 1892, and Stephen A., who was born on the 2d of July, 1894.

JOHN D. ST. CLAIR, one of the earliest pioneers of Erath county, Texas, has been a retired resident of Dublin since 1904. 'Squire St. Clair, as everybody calls him, was born at Somerville, the county seat of Morgan county, Alabama, in February, 1829, and came of Scotch ancestry. He was reared in Morgan county and partly educated there, his education being completed by a two years' course in old McKenzie college at Clarks-ville, Texas. It was in 1852 that he came to this state. His first year here was spent with an uncle in Lamar county, then followed the two years in college, and afterward he took up his residence in Hunt county. In the meantime, in the early fifties, he made a prospecting trip to the frontier of Texas and visited Erath county, which later was to become his home. During the Civil war he was in the cavalry service in the Confederate army. As a member of Company D, Stephens' Regiment, he was assigned to duty in the Trans-Mississippi Department, and was engaged in various cavalry and scouting operations in Louisiana and Arkansas, under different commanders, among them being Pike, Cooper, Hinman, Price and Kirby Smith. He was in what was perhaps the hardest service of the war.

Returning to Erath county in 1867, Mr. St. Clair established his permanent home here, and directed his attention to farming and stock raising east of the present city of Dublin, and near where was afterward built the town of Alexander. There quite a little settlement grew up, which was given the name of Harpers Mill. Through his influence a postoffice was established there and he was made postmaster. He was a notary public, too, the only one in those days within a wide scope of frontier ter-

ritory. Also, for many years, he served as a justice of the peace, and it is for this reason that he has since been called 'Squire St. Clair.

In 1880, when the Texas Central Railroad was built through Erath county, 'Squire St. Clair moved to the nearest point on the railroad, this removal being the beginning of the town of Alexander, which remained his home until 1904. With the completion of the railroad the village of Harpers Mills ceased to exist.

When the reconstruction period came, Mr. St. Clair was elected a county commissioner, in which capacity he served eight years. Also for some years he was tax assessor. Altogether his public service covered a period of thirty-four years, this including the time of the Indian troubles in Erath and surrounding counties. And during this varied service he became widely known, not only in Erath county, but also throughout Central Western Texas. Finally, in 1904, being well advanced in years, Mr. St. Clair sold his farming and live stock interests at Alexander, and retired from active life. Since that date he has made his home in Dublin.

Mrs. St. Clair before her marriage was Miss Elizabeth Keith, the Keiths being among the early pioneers of Erath county. Mr. and Mrs. St. Clair have ten children living, namely: John Robert, Mrs. Lula Jordan, Charles P., J. Walter, Mrs. Viola Jordan, Mrs. Mollie E. Shelton, Mrs. Ada Clark, Elbert, Mrs. Libbie Houston and Ernest B. Ernest B. St. Clair is president of the First National Bank of Teague, Texas.

#### BROWN COUNTY.

This county was created by act of the legislature, August 27, 1856, and was not fully organized till the spring of 1858. The legislature directed that the county court should select sites to be voted on as county seat and should also choose the name for the town, but the supplementary act of February 5, 1858, designated the name Brownwood for the county seat. The county was named in honor of Capt. Henry S. Brown, a prominent Texan who died in 1834. John Henry Brown, his son, writing in the Texas Almanac for 1859, said of the county: "Held back by Indian depredations, it has still grown rapidly since its first settlement three years ago. . . . Brownwood is the county seat, beautifully located in the center of the county, and on the west bank of Pecan bayou." In 1856 Major Van Dorn had established Camp Colorado on Jim Ned creek, in what is Coleman county, and under the protection of this post the settlement of Brown county began. In 1859 about 4,000 cattle were assessed in the county. The population was sparse, and the only form of wealth was the few herds that grazed over the range. During the decade of the Civil war many of the settlers were forced to retire, so that the county was practically undeveloped up to 1870. The population in that year was only 544, consisting almost entirely of stockmen and their followers. Several years passed before the danger from Indian raids was over, but during the latter '70's the county received a large immigration, and other industries than stock raising were engaged in on a commercial scale. By

1881 the county had three cotton gins, six or seven flour mills, a sawmill, and other minor industries. Numerous schools and churches had been established, and there were five centers of settlement—Brownwood, Williams' Ranch, Clio, Byrd's Store and Zephyr.

The population of the county in 1880 was 8,414 (114 negroes); in 1890, 11,421; in 1900, 16,019 (206 negroes). The value of the county's taxable property in 1881 was \$1,565,213; in 1903, \$5,226,275; and in 1909, \$11,752,045.

The first railroad in the county was the G. C. & S. F., which was completed in 1886. In July, 1891, Brownwood became the terminus of the Fort Worth & Rio Grande, which has since been extended through the county.

In 1890 Brownwood had a population of 2,176 and was the only town of any size in the county. Its population in 1900 was 3,965. This is one of the progressive small cities of West Texas, with several large mercantile and other business enterprises, and in recent years civic energy has been concentrated in promoting the general welfare and improvement of the town. Other towns, with population in 1900, are: Blanket, 304; Baugo, 136; May, 324; Zephyr, 229.

In the last ten years Brown county has received a large immigration of settlers, especially from the north central states, and its lands are largely occupied as farms, although live stock is still a large item of productive wealth.

B. E. HURLBUT is a native son of the east, born in Cortland county, New York, August 22, 1858, but the greater part of his life has been spent in Texas, and for a number of years he has been one of the most influential business men and citizens of Brownwood. On coming to Texas in 1876 he located first in Dallas and spent three years there, and the following three years were spent at Corsicana. From there in 1883 he moved to Lampasas, where he was engaged in the hardware business for about three and a half years, and at the close of that period, in 1887, he came to Brownwood and embarked in the hardware business here. He built the stone building now known as the Jackson Hughs block, and has the distinction of having been the first man in the city to place a traveling salesman on the road. This was in the year 1885, and he continued his jobbing department with his wholesale and retail trade for about twenty years, or until he sold his interests to the Jackson Hughs Company in January of 1907.

On the 1st of January, 1907, Mr. Hurlbut organized the American Bank and Trust Company with a capital stock of fifty thousand dollars, and he was made the president of the bank, but in March of 1909 he sold his banking interest to the Citizens National Bank, retaining the trust and real estate department, and they handle loans exclusively on real estate. In October of 1908 Mr. Hurlbut was elected the vice-president of the Brownwood Commercial Club, but owing to the president's death in the following December, he was obliged to assume the duties of that office

and is still its incumbent through his election to the presidency in October, 1909. He has fraternal relations with Brownwood Lodge of Masons, and is a member of the Christian church.

SAMUEL R. COGGIN.—Steadfast, loyal and sincere in all the relations of life, the late Samuel Richardson Coggin, who died at his beautiful home in Brownwood, Brown county, Texas, on the 1st of October, 1910, left the priceless heritage of worthy thoughts and worthy deeds to the great commonwealth in whose development and upbuilding he was a prominent and influential factor. He stood as a distinguished type of the world's noble army of productive and constructive workers. He gave the best of an essentially strong and loyal nature to the promotion of the civic and material interests of the community in which he lived; his life course was guided and governed by the highest principles of integrity and honor, and now that he has passed to the "land of the leal" his memory is revered by all who knew the man and had appreciation of his sterling attributes of character. In entering record concerning his career recourse is taken to an appreciative memorial issued for private distribution soon after his death, and in the context only such paraphrase is made as to render the statements consistent with the province of this publication.

Samuel Richardson Coggin was born in Davidson county, North Carolina, on the 23d of February, 1831, and was a son of Levi and Frankie (Lambeth) Coggin, the former of whom was of Irish and the latter of English lineage. The parents were born and reared in Levenson county, North Carolina, where their marriage was solemnized. In 1836 the family removed to Tennessee, where they remained about a year, at the expiration of which time they went to Mississippi and located about three miles distant from Holly Springs, Marshall county, where Samuel H. Coggin was reared to maturity. He was one of a family of nine children, of whom only two are now living, Simon L. and Mrs. Elizabeth Taber, both of whom reside in Brownwood, Texas.

The educational advantages of Mr. Coggin were limited to the common schools of Marshall county, Mississippi, and in 1851, in company with his brother, Moses J. Coggin, he came to Texas and numbered himself among its pioneers. He first stopped near Rusk, in the eastern part of the state, where he and his brother purchased a small stock of cattle with their meager savings of a few hundred dollars, and while their herd was increasing they engaged in freighting between Houston and Bell county, afterward removing their herd to Bell county. From that section they came to Brown county and settled at the old town of Brownwood, a few miles down the bayou from the present town of the same name. This change of location was made in 1857 and the country was then on the extreme frontier. Soon after reaching Brownwood Samuel R. Coggin and his brother Moses J., with a few other pioneers, about ten families in number, attempted to organize the county, but failure attended the effort, and not until the citizenship was reinforced, in that and the succeeding year, did they succeed in effecting the organization of the



county. In the fall of 1858 the Coggin brothers acquired large and valuable real estate holdings in Coleman county, on Home creek, where, in spite of the hardships of pioneer life in the west, and the depredations of the Indians, their herds continued to grow, with the result that the young men prospered.

When the call of their country came to them to fight for the southern cause, property interests were sacrificed to duty, and Samuel R. Coggin, after enlisting, was assigned to duty in Arkansas, the brothers leaving their cattle and other property in the care of others. After two years of hard service in the army of Arkansas Mr. Coggin's health, which had never been robust from the time of his attaining maturity, gave way under the strain of army life in the marshes and swamps of that state, and, against his wishes, he was mustered out of service. He then returned to Texas, where, in many hand-to-hand conflicts with marauding Comanche and Kiowa Indians, he literally fought his way to success in the most desperate and prolonged struggles in the frontier annals of America, the conflict not ending until 1875, when the Indians finally ceased their depredations.

In 1868 the Coggin brothers became associated in the cattle and real estate business with W. C. Parks, of Brownwood, under the firm name of Coggin & Parks, the partnership continuing for many years and being one of both business and historic interest, characterized by more than the usual reverses and misfortunes attending pioneer ranching in a country surrounded by hostile, marauding and treacherous Indians. But through their indomitable energy, their untiring efforts, their brave determination and their great courage in meeting and overcoming every obstacle, there was more of success than failure, and a modest fortune steadily grew to magnificent proportions, while the firm assisted their associates in making an enviable civilization for themselves and for posterity. Before his death Samuel R. Coggin saw the country for which he fought so hard and which he loved so devotedly grow into one of the ideal spots of creation, and in this realization he reaped the largest measure of satisfaction.

A comprehensive sketch of the life of Mr. Coggin from the time he came to Brown county, in 1875, would be a history of the pioneer days of this country and would be as thrilling a narrative as is found in the pages of history, characterized, as it would be, by deprivations and hardships, by disasters and dangers, by struggles and reverses, by deadly encounters with dreaded Indians, by constant contests with dare-devil adventurers, who were at times even worse than the Indians, and crowned at last by the fullest realization of early hopes and expectations, by the transformation of the country from a rough wilderness into a land of peaceful, quiet, contented and happy homemakers. The part taken by him in this great change is historic and is but characteristic of the great, self-sacrificing heart of the man whose service for his country was always made primary to his own interests.

From 1875 to 1881 the firm of which Mr. Coggin was a member was engaged in the cattle and real estate business, their operations covering a



number of counties and sections of the state, and being unusually successful, the while they were attended with less difficulties than in the earlier days.

It was in 1881 that the Coggin Brothers organized their first bank, which was conducted under the title of Coggin Brothers & Company. From this private institution, under various changes in the personnel of other stockholders and also in title, was eventually developed the Coggin National Bank of Brownwood, of which staunch and important financial institution Samuel R. Coggin was president from the time of its organization until his death. As a banker he was noted for the philanthropic way in which he handled the assets of the institution, ever having in mind the management of the bank in the way that would make it the most useful and serviceable to the masses of the people—a business philanthropy in time of need and a business enterprise and bulwark in time of prosperity. While he was cautious and prudent in business he never turned a deaf ear to the man who really needed and merited aid, and there are thousands in this country who stand ready to testify that he gave them a helping hand when it was most needed, and thus assisted them to success. No more notable instance of this could be given than to refer to the drouth of 1886-7, when the country was parched and bare, when many were without even the necessities of life and would have been forced to leave the country, abandon their possessions and lose all, but for the timely help of Mr. Coggin and his associates, and a few others, who placed the welfare of their neighbors above their own gain and who aided them without any hope of reward beyond the satisfaction of having performed a duty to mankind.

Up to the time of his death Mr. Coggin was actively engaged in looking after his business affairs—his banking, his cattle, his ranch and farming interests, and his real estate holdings in Brownwood and elsewhere in Brown and other counties of the state. While his health had not been good since the Civil war, and though he was many times at death's door, his mind was ever alert and active, and whenever he was able to leave his home he was about his many business affairs.

Mr. Coggin was for many years a devoted member of the Cumberland Presbyterian church and one of the largest contributors to the church work. When he was able to go out at all he was never too weary to devote his time, his energies and his mind to the church, and his purse strings were ever unloosed to its calls. He was also a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows and was much interested in every enterprise of this fraternal order. While he never heralded his philanthropies from the housetops, no deserving person or worthy enterprise ever appealed to him in vain. The town in which he lived, and to which he gave so much of his thought, is indebted to him for many things. The colleges received large gifts of lands and money from him; Coggin park, a large, beautiful and valuable park place, is a donation from him and his wife to the city; he was the largest contributor to secure the Carnegie library for Brownwood; his donations for railway subsidy funds

were generous and princely; he aided all church enterprises of the town and many in the country; he helped many boys and girls in their efforts to secure educations,—in fact, in a thousand ways that can not here be enumerated, he showed his love for and his interest in his fellow men and his country.

Above all, perhaps, the life of Mr. Coggin is to the young an example worthy of admiration and emulation. His struggles and his triumphs, his steadfast adherence to integrity of purpose, his abiding faith in the accomplishment of all honorable aims, his broad human sympathy and tolerance, and his many other noble traits of character all furnish rich food for thought and will ever be treasured in memory by the generations that recall his life. He lived to a good old age, to see the maturity of most of his cherished plans, and he died the death that he would perhaps most have preferred. He retired to a night of sweet, undisturbed sleep, and he awoke at early morn on that shore where there is surcease from struggle, from sorrow, from pain; where all is bliss and joy and peace and rest.

While there can be no wish to lift the gracious and sacred veil that protected a home life of the most ideal type, there is marked propriety in offering brief statement concerning his marriage and the mutual love and sympathy which held him and his devoted wife together as if with "hoops of steel." On the 3d of January, 1884, was solemnized the marriage of Mr. Coggin to Mrs. Martha (Lightfoot) Smith, who was born and reared in Johnson county, Texas, and who is a daughter of the late B. B. Lightfoot, one of the most prominent and influential citizens of Johnson county, Texas. From the time of their marriage, of which no children were born, Mr. Goggin and his wife were not only most loving companions but they were also comrades in the true sense of the word, their devotion to each other being most tender. They were inseparable, and through many night watches the good wife remained at his bedside, ministering to his every need and nursing him back to health and strength. They lived happily and comfortably, though unostentatiously, in one of the most attractive homes in the state, and the same was always open for the comfort, the pleasure and the enjoyment of their many friends. By her wifely sympathy, her unerring judgment and her hearty co-operation in his plans, Mrs. Coggin was a never failing inspiration to her husband, and her resourcefulness removed from him in his later years many of the cares with which he would otherwise have been burdened. The board of directors of the Coggin National Bank (which has just moved into its fine new quarters) paid a merited tribute to the business sagacity of Mrs. Coggin as well as a just recognition to her husband's long and worthy service by tending her the position of president. Mrs. Coggin reluctantly agreed to accept and serve the unexpired term on condition that she would be required to discharge the duties of president of the bank no longer than the first meeting of the board in January.

In conclusion is entered an extract from the obituary notice that appeared in the Brownwood *Daily Bulletin* on the morning of the death

of Mr. Coggin, and the words well merit perpetuation in this connection: "He was a good man in every sense of the word, a man of discerning judgment, practical and sensible in all matters, quiet, unassuming and unostentatious in manner, and a true friend to every worthy man and deserving enterprise. He was of the type of pioneers who have left their impress for good upon this country and to whom this and subsequent generations are indebted largely for the fine type of citizenship to be found here. In the comforts of our surroundings we hardly realize how much we owe to men like this,—men who sacrificed much, endured much, suffered much, but whose reward in the world to come will certainly be proportioned to their work here." Concerning Mr. Coggin and his wife the same article offers the following statement: "The devotion of the couple to each other was almost sublime, and they were both lovers and associates in all things until death's relentless separation."

#### COLEMAN COUNTY

In the summer of 1856 Major Van Dorn of the United States army established Camp Colorado on Jim Ned creek, in what is now Coleman county. Some remains of the stone and wooden buildings of this post still exist. Major Van Dorn had a detachment of the Second Cavalry there for two or three years. In 1860, before the Civil war, Capt. E. K. Smith commanded there. The presence of this garrison attracted a few settlers, though they made no permanent improvements. J. E. McCord, later a banker and prominent citizen of Coleman City, was lieutenant of a Ranger company that was posted on Home creek during 1860. Camp Colorado was abandoned after the war.

February 1, 1858, the legislature defined the boundaries of a number of counties, among them Coleman, named in honor of Robert M. Coleman, a figure in the Texas revolution. But nearly twenty years passed before the county was sufficiently settled to maintain a county government. In 1875 a county government was organized, and in the fall of 1876 Coleman, the county seat, was laid off. A quotation from an account written in 1877 reads: On a site that in 1873 had been barren of any vestige of human habitation, the beautiful plateau being the haunt of the buffalo more often than of domestic animals, was in the latter part of 1876 the growing little village of Coleman City, whose first house had been completed scarcely two months before and which now contained twenty-seven first-class buildings, with merchants, lawyers, building contractors, good school, hotel, and half a mile from town the U. S. telegraph line. A year later Coleman had a population of four hundred and was incorporated.

Beginning in 1875 this county soon became one of the favorite centers of the range stock industry. The county was one immense pasture, and excepting the tradesmen at the county seat and one or two other places, the population consisted almost entirely of the cattlemen and their "outfits." About 1880 the farmer class made some advance into this re-

gion, especially when it is known that the Santa Fe Railroad would be built. But in 1882 it was estimated that not over four thousand acres had been touched by the plow, while the live stock at that time numbered about 9,000 horses and mules, 40,000 cattle and 85,000 sheep and other stock.

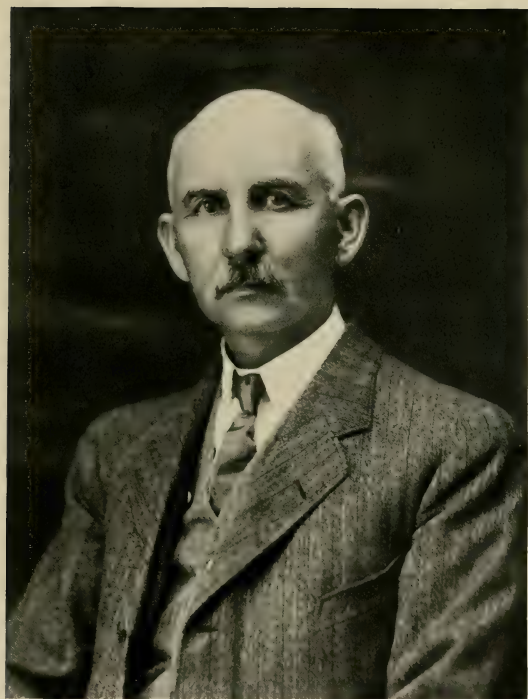
At the census of 1870 the population of the county was 347; in 1880, 3,603 (35 negroes); in 1890, 6,112; in 1900, 10,077 (90 negroes). In 1882 the taxable values were \$1,733,603, live stock being assessed at \$723,768; in 1903, \$5,611,513; and in 1909, \$12,259,645.

In March, 1886, what was then known as the main line of the G. C. & S. F. Railroad reached Coleman, and was extended on through the county the same year. A tap line was built to reach Coleman City, it being the policy of early railroad building to avoid towns which did not offer attractive subsidies, and Coleman City is one of the number of such cases in Texas. However, this tap line has since become the starting point of the "Coleman cut-off" of the Santa Fe, now building northwest to Texico.

Coleman City, which had a population of 906 in 1890 and 1,362 in 1900, has been developed both commercially and as a place of residence in recent years. It has the improvements and advantages of the progressive West Texas towns, and is the center of a large volume of trade. Other towns are: Santa Anna, situated at the base of Santa Anna mountain; Talpa; Trickham, one of the oldest settlements; Rockwood, in the coal-mining district; Glencove; Burkett.

LITTLETON E. COLLINS is the president of the First National Bank of Coleman, which is the oldest bank in Coleman county. It was established in 1886, and has been continuously successful in business from that time to the present. Its business methods are universally commended as honest and straightforward, and they are based on long years of experience in the banking business in Coleman county. The capital stock of the First National is one hundred thousand dollars, with surplus and profits of one hundred and ten thousand dollars. Mr. Collins, its active president, is one of Coleman's most energetic and enterprising citizens, and he has been a potent influence in the city's recent rapid growth and expansion. He has been a member of the board of school trustees for several years, and is the board's present treasurer.

Born near LaGrange in Troup county, Georgia, February 11, 1855, he was brought in the same year by his parents to Texas, the family locating in Upshur county. His father was a Confederate soldier. Littleton E. Collins was reared in Upshur county, and leaving home in 1875 he stopped for a few months in Bell county, and in July of 1876 came to Coleman. The town had been laid out and entered upon its career as the county seat of the newly organized county of Coleman in that month. In 1878 Mr. Collins embarked in the drug business, and the business is still continued by his successor, Mr. Coulson, who had worked for him in the store. Retiring from this mercantile venture in 1892, Mr. Collins



L. E. Collins



entered the First National Bank, first as its assistant cashier and later, in 1903, as its president.

He is president of the Coleman Compress Company and the Coleman Cotton Oil Company. He has since coming to Coleman been one of its foremost men in the upbuilding of its various enterprises.

He married Miss Cora Payton, from DeWitt county, and their seven children are Mrs. Florence Pitman, Nanie, Milton, Nelle, Littleton E. Jr., Harry and Mary Sue. In 1906 he built his magnificent residence, one of the show places of the city of Coleman and one of the most beautiful homes in western Texas. Mr. Coleman is a member of the Masonic and Odd Fellows fraternities and of the Baptist church.

**FIRST NATIONAL BANK OF COLEMAN.**—There is no one factor which so well determines and designates the status and stability of a community as the extent and character of its banking institutions, and in this respect the thriving city of Coleman, the judicial center and metropolis of the county of the same name, has in the First National Bank an institution of established reputation, ample capital and conservative management, the while it is reinforced by the enlistment of the capitalistic and executive support of citizens of the highest and most representative character. Its large resources, admirably conserved, make it a distinctive power in the financial affairs of this section of the state, and it is but consonant that in this publication be given a brief record concerning the same.

The First National Bank of Coleman was organized in 1886, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, and the personnel of the original executive corps was as here noted: J. D. Davidson, president; W. C. Dibrell, vice-president; J. B. Coleman, cashier; and J. D. Cummings, assistant cashier. Besides these administrative officers the directorate at the time of incorporation included R. H. Overall, J. E. McCord and E. T. Petty.

In 1890, to met the increased demands placed on the institution, its capital stock was increased to seventy-five thousand dollars, and at this time Mr. Cummings resigned his positions of director and assistant cashier, being succeeded in the latter office by Littleton E. Collins, and James P. Ledbetter succeeding him in the position of director. Later W. C. Dibrell succeeded Mr. Davidson as president and Richard H. Overall became vice-president. In 1892, when Mr. Dibrell declined farther service as president of the bank, he was succeeded by James B. Coleman, and at this time also Littleton E. Collins was chosen cashier, a position of which he continued incumbent until 1902, when upon Mr. Coleman's resignation of the presidency Mr. Collins became his successor in this chief executive office, of which he has since continued the efficient and popular incumbent, and at the same time time John H. Babington was elected cashier, an office which he held until 1910.

Upon the expiration of the original charter of the bank, in 1900, at the end of the twenty years designated by the government as the limit of national bank charters, the charter was renewed under the original title and for another period of twenty years. In 1908 the capital was again in-

creased, as the growth and development of the town and country made it practically imperative for this enterprising institution to keep pace with the march of progress, which it promptly did by expanding its capital stock to one hundred thousand dollars, which is the basic reinforcement now in evidence, with an additional surplus fund of fifty thousand dollars and undivided profits amounting to sixty-five thousand dollars. These figures bear their own significance and emphatically evidence the progressive policy followed in the management of the affairs of the bank, as well as indicate the substantial advances made in the civic and industrial upbuilding of this favored section of the Old Lone Star commonwealth.

Those who are in a position to know will uniformly concede that from the beginning of its history the bank has been managed with scrupulous conservatism. Its original stockholders, all men of high reputation, are still, to a large extent, identified with the institution, and yet even the foregoing brief statements show that the bank has at all times kept abreast of the times in this fast growing country, and it has led its influence in support of every legitimate enterprise that has been launched in Coleman. The personnel of the present official corps is as here noted: Littleton E. Collins, president; Joseph P. Morris, vice-president; Robert H. Alexander, cashier; and Charles W. Hemphill, assistant cashier. In addition to the president, vice-president and cashier the directorate now includes James C. Dibrell, William Anson, Charles J. Dibrell and John H. Babington. The banking offices, occupying a substantial and attractive building erected for the purpose, are thoroughly metropolitan in appointments and facilities, and the business of the institution shows an appreciable expansion from year to year, making it one of the staunch banking houses of central and western Texas.

HORACE R. STARKWEATHER.—There are few men in central or western Texas who have acquired a wider reputation as business men than Horace R. Starkweather, the president of the Farmers State Bank of Coleman. He was born in Lucas county, Ohio, in 1856, and he was reared and educated in Toledo of that county, and there he also received his business training as a bookkeeper and accountant. He came to Texas in 1877 and to Coleman in 1881, and he engaged extensively in the cattle business, having a pasture of forty thousand acres in the southern part of the county. And although the disastrous results following the fence cutting war in 1883 put him out of the business, he later resumed the vocation and for some years was engaged extensively in land and live stock transactions, one of his notable deals being the sale of a large portion of his land holdings in the southern part of the county to William Gould Busk, an English capitalist, who established there a large cattle ranch. But more recently Mr. Busk decided to sell this land, he having returned to his home in England, and Mr. Starkweather is his agent for the sale of it in small farming tracts for actual settlers, and in addition to the selling of these tracts he is also developing a town there called Gouldbusk, a post-



office, store, gin, etc., being already located there. It is situated in the midst of a rich agricultural country.

In June of 1907 Mr. Starkweather promoted and established the Farmers State Bank of Coleman, of which he is the president. Of the eighty-five stockholders connected with this bank the greater majority are farmers located in various sections of Coleman county, and the bank was established primarily for the purpose of enabling the farmers to borrow money at reasonable rates of interest and thus develop the agricultural resources of the county, and it has not only succeeded admirably in that purpose but has also been highly successful in every way. In 1908 the Farmers State Bank moved into the splendid new building erected for its purpose. The capital stock of this institution is valued at fifty thousand dollars, its deposits are guaranteed under the Depositors Guarantee Fund as provided by laws passed in the Thirty-first session of the Texas legislature, and the officers and directors are among the best known and most substantial citizens of Coleman county.

Mrs. Starkweather was before marriage Carrie Knox, born in Michigan, and they have three children, Elizabeth, Marjorie and Helen.

HON. WILLIAM R. McCLELLAN was born in Washington county, Texas, in 1846, and he is a son of one of the pioneers of that county, W. B. McClellan, who came from Tennessee in 1841, but he was born in North Carolina. The son William was reared in Washington county, and while yet a boy he went into the Confederate army, joining Company F, Twenty-first Texas Cavalry, and he served until the close of the war in the Trans-Mississippi Department, Parson's Brigade, Steele's Division. He was in hard service in Arkansas and Louisiana, including the hostilities in connection with the Banks' expedition, and he took part in the battle of Yellow Bayou, the last engagement fought west of the Mississippi river.

After the close of the war Mr. McClellan returned to his home in Washington county, and later went to Ledbetter in Fayette county, where he embarked in the mercantile business and enjoyed continued success and financial prosperity until retiring from that business in 1893. In the same year he came to Coleman, which has since been his home, and during his first nine years here was engaged mainly in trading in cattle, since living retired, although he has large and important interests in Coleman and in Coleman county. He is a director of the Coleman National Bank, and has a fine stock farm three miles west of the town and a beautiful city residence. Mr. McClellan's only political honor and which came to him unsought was his election to the legislature in 1899, 1901 and 1905, representing the One Hundred and Eighth legislative district, which comprises Brown and Coleman counties. He served in the Twenty-sixth, Twenty-seventh and Twenty-ninth legislatures, and his most important and useful services in the legislature, commencing with the Twenty-sixth session, were in his successful opposition to the proposed land legislation which came up at that time and which if it had been enacted would have been the means of depriving actual settlers of millions of acres of the state's

school land and thus retarded the community's development. This proposed legislation was in the interest of land speculators, as it would have disposed of all school lands in the state in bodies of not less than ten thousand acres at from seventy-five cents to one dollar an acre, no actual settlement being required. Mr. McClellan's efforts as a legislator were widely recognized, and they proved of signal usefulness to his state. He is one of the substantial and resourceful citizens of Coleman county, a retired merchant, a bank director and a wealthy farmer and stockman.

He married in Washington county Lou Ratliff, who was born in Mississippi, and they have four children: Claud McClellan, Mrs. Mary O'Hair, Mrs. Lela Johnson and Mrs. Mildred Woodward, all living in Coleman.

The Hon. William R. McClellan is a member of the Masonic order and of the Christian church.

ROBERT GOODFELLOW is well known throughout Coleman county and the state of Texas as a notable criminal officer and as a prominent stockman. Born in Dallas county, Texas, adjoining the Tarrant county line near Grapevine, in 1870, his parents were old time residents of that locality, and an older brother, J. J. Goodfellow, now of San Angelo, was for nearly thirty years the county surveyor of Tarrant county.

Robert Goodfellow was educated in Baylor University at Waco, studying under Dr. Rufus Burleson, and early in 1890 he came to Coleman county and began working with cattle on the Frank Anson ranch, remaining there for several months. His efficiency and trustworthiness in the meantime made him many friends, and after locating in Coleman he was elected the constable, that forming the beginning of his long and notable career as a criminal officer. This public career has included his services as city marshal, as deputy sheriff and for six years as sheriff, he having retired from the latter office in 1906. Since that time he has devoted himself to his extensive farming, live stock and business interests. As a stockman he handles cattle, sheep and horses, making somewhat of a specialty of the latter. He is a breeder of draft horses, coach horses, saddlers and racers of the highest grade and also, of mules, and he has helped to make Coleman county famous for its fine horses. He is also a member of the firm of Goodfellow and Bell, proprietors of the Coleman Buggy and Harness Company, which was established in 1906, a successful business institution. He has two farms and a stock ranch in Coleman county, one of the farms being located about thirty miles south of the Colorado river, and the other near the city on the northwest, while the ranch is eight miles northwest of the city.

As city marshal and as deputy sheriff and sheriff Mr. Goodfellow became noted as one of the ablest criminal officers in the southwest, this fact being recognized most of all by his fellow officers, the truest test, and he was honored by them through his election as vice-president of the Texas Sheriffs' Association and subsequently as president of that organization. He was the president of the association during his last term as sheriff of



Wm. Goddard



Coleman county. As an officer he did not merely perform his duties in a routine or perfunctory manner, but he was always alert and brought to bear a finely trained intelligence on the conduct of his cases. His reputation for actually catching criminals became such that Coleman county won the name of being an unsafe place for fugitives from justice, for if one came here Sheriff Goodfellow was sure to get him. One of the most notable cases with which he was connected was that of the Montana bank note robbery. In 1901 a Northern Pacific train in Montana was held up and robbed of forty thousand dollars in unsigned bank notes. The robbers scattered to various parts of the country, some drifting to Texas, and a few were convicted. Sheriff Goodfellow got trace of this work by one of the bank notes passed in Coleman county, and succeeded in capturing three men that were involved in the robbery, following them into Callahan county and having them put in jail at that point, where they were held until taken in charge by the Federal authorities. He captured these men in advance of the Federal Secret Service officers who were working on the case in this vicinity. Another important case in which Mr. Goodfellow was connected was his capture of A. P. Brady at Jackson, Mississippi, for murder committed in Coleman county, and this was a very unusual case owing to the fact that the murder had been committed twenty-five years before the date of the arrest. Bob Beaver, alias Meeks, Mitchell, etc., a desperate character and a partner of the notorious outlaw, Bill Cook, escaped from jail at Crowell in Foard county in 1900, and was traced southward by a number of sheriffs and deputy U. S. marshals, but in Coleman county they lost all trace of their man and were about to give up the chase when Mr. Goodfellow took the trail with his force, and late at night found Beaver in bed at the ranch of F. Beck, about twenty miles southwest of Coleman. He captured his man and turned him over to the officers who had come for him. In 1898 a Santa Fe passenger train was held up and robbed at Coleman Junction by five men, and Mr. Goodfellow took the leading part in the capture of these men in Sutton county, about thirty miles below Sonora. Some time previous to the above robbery and while he was serving in the office of deputy sheriff, another hold up occurred on the Santa Fe at Coleman, in which the train was robbed of about fourteen thousand dollars. For this crime Mr. Goodfellow caught and arrested Will Teague, the leading participant in the robbery, and he was sent to the penitentiary for a long number of years. Mr. Goodfellow also captured in Montana John Wiley Davis, a cattle thief who had jumped his bond sixteen years previously, and had been a fugitive during that time. He was a constantly busy officer and dealt with numerous cases of cattle and horse thieves, murderers and other criminals. It was his official duty to hang one man while serving as sheriff, the execution of John Pearl for murder taking place in 1901.

Mr. Goodfellow's wife was before marriage Miss Fannie Foster, born at Kirksville in Adair county, Missouri, and she came from there to Ellis county, Texas, with her parents. The three children of this union are Leita Eugenia, Robert Clarence and Nancy Lee

DR. CHARLES M. ALEXANDER is the pioneer physician of Coleman and he is a director of the oldest bank in Coleman, the First National. Born in Cumberland county, Kentucky, he is a son of Joseph H. and Julia (Wallace) Alexander, both of whom were also born in that commonwealth and both were of Scotch ancestry, the mother having been a descendant of William Wallace of that country. Dr. Alexander enjoyed liberal educational advantages in his youth, and he received the degree of A. B. from the Cumberland University of Lebanon, Tennessee, of which he is a graduate with the class of 1879, and he is a graduate of the medical department of the University of Louisville with the class of 1882. Practicing then in his home county of Cumberland until January of 1883, he came to Coleman, Texas, and has practiced here continuously ever since, his labors as a physician here covering the changing conditions of life that have taken place in western Texas since that formative period. And in those earlier years, particularly before the building of the railroad and when the country was but thinly settled and occupied only by the people connected with the great cattle outfits, Dr. Alexander's practice extended over a wide expanse of country and involved long drives into the neighboring counties of Runnels, McCulloch, Brown, Callahan and others. He is a physician of the highest standing in his profession, and is the president of the Fourth or San Angelo District Medical Association, the president of the Coleman County Medical Society, and during a long number of years the local surgeon for the Santa Fe Railroad Company. He is also a member of the State and American Medical Associations.

Dr. Alexander's wife was before marriage Mary Brown, from Mumfordsville, Kentucky, and they have four children: Howard L., Amelia (married Lloyd A. Brewer, of Washington, D. C.); Charles and Elizabeth. Dr. Alexander is a member of and an elder in the Presbyterian church.

HON. JOHN A. B. MILLER in 1897 came to Coleman, and since then as a lawyer, public official and citizen he has been an important factor in the development of the town and of the community. He was born at Homer in Claiborne Parish, Louisiana, in 1865, and his father, the Rev. John A. Miller, born in South Carolina, is living at Patterson, Louisiana, now retired after sixty years or more of labor as a Methodist minister. The son was reared at Homer and attended Homer College, but he studied law in the University of Mississippi at Oxford and was admitted to the bar at Pittsboro in Calhoun county, Mississippi, in 1891. He also began his practice there, his first law partner being Judge A. T. Roane, a circuit judge and a native Mississippian. Leaving Pittsboro Mr. Miller came from Ruston to Coleman, Texas, in 1897, and this city has since remained his home. While living at Pittsboro he was elected and served a term as the mayor of that city.

Within a year or two after coming to Coleman Mr. Miller was elected the county attorney, and he served in that office for one term, re-engaging at the close of that period in private practice. He served the

city four years as an alderman, and in April of 1906 was elected without opposition the mayor of Coleman, the petition which brought about his nomination and election being signed by a large majority of the citizens of Coleman. By re-election he has remained continuously in the office since that time. Mr. Miller's administration of municipal affairs has been highly efficient, economical, progressive and business like, and during his term many public improvements of importance have been made, the most notable of which was the purchase by the city of the water works system and the enlarging and improvement of this system, assuring a permanent supply of the best water in western Texas. Another great achievement for the city in which Mr. Miller took a most prominent part was the securing for Coleman the junction point for the new trans-continental division of the Santa Fe Railroad, to extend from Texico, a town on the main line of the road and on the northwestern border of Texas, to Coleman, where it joins the San Angelo branch of the Santa Fe and completes a new trans-continental route for the Santa Fe extending from Galveston to the Pacific ocean. Work was begun on the Coleman end of this new line in the latter part of June, 1909, and in the public celebration in Coleman in honor of this great achievement Mr. Miller was accorded the honor of handling the plow which started the grading operations. Previous to this time for several months and with unselfish spirit he had devoted much of his own time to the work of promoting the securing of this road for Coleman, and this work was accomplished in the face of strong opposition from rival cities seeking the honor. He spent much more of his time in the securing of this project than was required of him officially, and he also made three trips to Chicago to urge Coleman's advantages to the Santa Fe officials in that city.

He married in this city Miss Mattie B. Morris, a daughter of John P. Morris, a prominent stockman. They have four children, John P., Thomas Louis, Claude and Mattie B.

WILLIAM L. FUTCH has inscribed his name on the pages of the history of Coleman county as its present sheriff. He was born at Magnolia, the county seat of Columbia county, Arkansas, in 1866, and he was reared there, but since July of 1884 he has been a resident of Coleman county. His father made a trip to this state in 1873, stopping for a time in Hill county, but he afterward returned to Magnolia and he is now deceased. His widow is living at their old home there. Mr. Futch's first work here was on a cattle ranch, continuing with some of the large cattle outfits for several years, and this section of the state at that time was entirely a cattle country. He later went into the railroad service in western Texas, and for six years was with the western division of the Texas and Pacific Company and with the Pecos Valley Railroad Company.

Returning to Coleman county in 1897 Mr. Futch became the deputy sheriff under J. T. Sanders, later serving as deputy sheriff under Sheriff W. T. Knox, and then for about four years he was the superintendent in



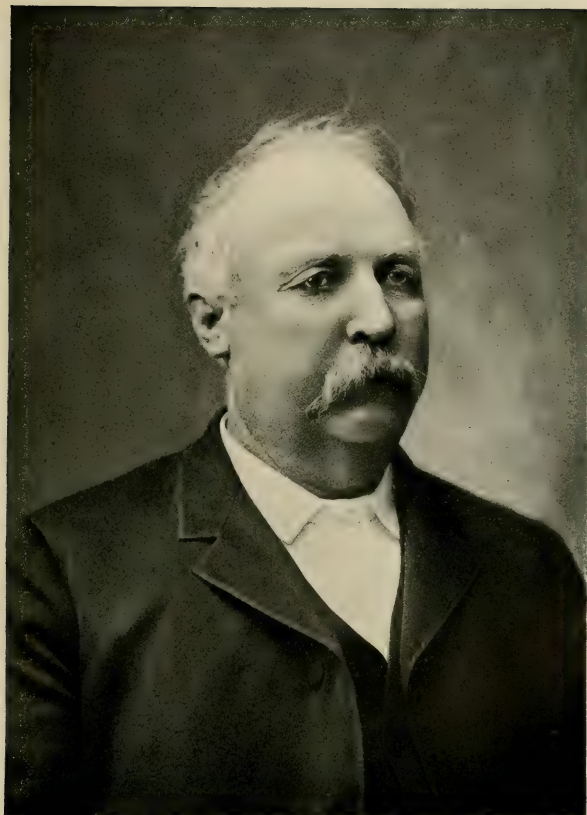
charge of the convicts on the county road work in Coleman county. In 1906 he was elected the sheriff of Coleman county, and was re-elected to the office in 1908, and his administration of the duties connected with that important office have given eminent satisfaction to the people. Through long years of residence in Coleman county and in western Texas he has become thoroughly familiar and prominently identified with its growth and interests.

Mr. Futch married in 1898 Miss Hattie Jones, born in McLennan county, Texas, and their three children are Neil, Jack and Allen. Mr. Futch has membership relations with the Odd Fellows and the Rebekahs and the Knights of Pythias fraternities.

COLONEL RICHARD H. OVERALL, a pioneer settler of Coleman county and a prominent and wealthy stockman, died at his home in Coleman in 1900. He was born at St. Charles, near St. Louis, Missouri, in 1832, and was reared and educated there. His father was one of the earliest pioneer settlers in Missouri, moving there from Tennessee, and he was a soldier in the Black Hawk war. The son Richard, after reaching mature years, was engaged in the lumber business at St. Charles until the breaking out of the war between the states, and during that conflict he was employed as a train conductor on the old North Missouri Railroad, now the Wabash road, running from St. Louis into central north Missouri. On account of the fierce contention and disorder throughout that portion of Missouri and the warfare that waged there, largely of a guerilla and bushwhacking nature, Mr. Overall was often a witness of and a participant in the scenes of violence enacted. One occasion in particular was in 1863, when his train was attacked at Centralia by forces headed by Frank James and Bill Anderson. The train was stopped, the passengers robbed and roughly used, and twenty-seven Federal soldiers on their way home on a furlough of sick leave were taken from the train and shot. The depot and practically the entire of Centralia were burned to the ground, and even the train was set on fire, but by a ruse worked by Mr. Overall in connection with the engineer he ran the train out of town for quite a distance and the remaining passengers, particularly the women and children, were taken out and given protection to a place of safety.

After the close of the war Mr. and Mrs. Overall went to live at Macon, Missouri, and there he was engaged in the milling business for about nine years. Early in 1876, his mill having burned, he and Mrs. Overall came to Texas to start life anew in a new country, and coming to Coleman county in the spring of the same year they located south of the present town of Coleman at what has ever since remained the Overall ranch and yet the property of Mrs. Overall. Colonel Overall as a beginning went into the southwestern Texas country, to Laredo, on the borderland, and brought back a small bunch of cattle, it taking him three months to make the trip, and this proved the nucleus of his cattle business which, growing from year to year through careful and intelligent management, finally reached what it is at present, one of the most valuable stock ranches





*R. H. Overall*



in western Texas. The Overall ranch consists of nearly thirty thousand acres, beginning about three and a half miles south of Coleman and extending southward for many miles. Colonel Overall handled horses, cattle and sheep extensively.

He also took a great interest and a prominent part in the growth and development of Coleman and of Coleman county, and at the time of his death he had been living in the town for some months, establishing his residence therein in 1900, the year of his death. He was a public spirited citizen and a valuable man in every phase of life, and his death was greatly mourned. In worldly affairs he had been a successful man, accumulating a comfortable fortune, but at the same time he was generous and liberal in all his dealings, and a man of the strictest honor and integrity.

Mrs. Overall was before her marriage Miss Martha Tye Robinson, a native of Callaway county, Missouri, and of Virginia ancestry. Her grandfather, also of that state, was a soldier in the Revolutionary war. Mrs. Overall was reared at St. Charles, Missouri, and was there married to Mr. Overall. She was educated at Science Hall College in Shelbyville, Kentucky. From the time of her marriage to Colonel Overall she was his constant companion and helpmeet. Leaving the comforts and conveniences of her home life in Missouri cities and coming to the Texas frontier in 1876, a region at that time very thinly settled and practically open range, far from sources of supply, she cheerfully took up her share of the burden of establishing a ranch and getting a start in the new country, and with a fine spirit of adaptability she not only performed her necessary household duties but readily learned the ways of the frontier, such as shooting, riding, etc., and also learned the cattle and live stock business thoroughly. She joined her husband at Waco after his tedious trip to Laredo above mentioned in search of stock for the ranch. In those days all their supplies had to be shipped from Fort Worth or Waco overland. Since her husband's death she has managed her ranch with ability, good judgment and the experience learned from long years in the live stock business. Although residing in town she is the active manager of her ranch, which is connected with her residence by telephone, and she has a competent foreman and trained assistants. Mrs. Overall also takes an active interest in the general affairs of the city, and as did her husband she enjoys a wide popularity.

BEN H. PITTMAN was born in Bullitt county, Kentucky, and he was reared there, finally coming to Texas in 1872 and locating at Prairie Lee on the San Marcos river in Caldwell county. In 1875 he came to Coleman county, thus becoming one of the earliest of the pioneer citizens of the county, and he is its present district clerk. Coleman county was permanently organized in the latter part of the year of 1875, and Mr. Pittman was made a member of the first grand jury in connection with the county's first district court, which convened in October of 1876. It was also during the summer of that year that the new town of Coleman was started and the site selected as the county seat, but as there was no per-

manent court house at that time Mr. Pittman recalls to mind that the grand jury conducted their deliberations in a grove of pecan trees not far north of the present court house.

Mr. Pittman established and conducted a ranch on Home Creek in the southern part of the county. In 1880 he was elected the county's sheriff, serving in that capacity for four years, and he was the county's third sheriff. In 1890 he was elected the district clerk, re-elected in 1892, serving for four years at that time, and following his retirement from that office he embarked in the hardware and implement business in Coleman, in partnership with J. F. Gordon, the firm name being Gordon and Pittman, and they built up a large trade extending over Coleman and adjoining counties, so large in fact that as it was conducted entirely on a credit basis, as was the custom then, the firm finally became unable to continue the business and finally retired. In 1908 Mr. Pittman was again elected to the office of district clerk, and he is now filling that important office with all his former efficiency. His life has been intimately associated with the history of Coleman county and he is numbered among its representative citizens.

Mrs. Pittman was before marriage Miss Maggie Malloch, from Caldwell county, daughter of E. Malloch, born in Edinborough, Scotland, and who came to Texas during an early period in its history. They have five children: Walter, Edward, Minnie, Mrs. Lucy Garland and Kate. Mr. Pittman is a member of the Masonic and Odd Fellows orders.

JUDGE FERDINAND M. BOWEN has long been one of the most prominent characters of Coleman and of Coleman county, an active and enthusiastic worker in their growth and development, believing that in central and western Texas no better country is found on earth. He is well known as a merchant and farm owner and as one of the best judges of Coleman county. The late R. S. Bowen, one of the pioneers of Coleman county and a brother of the judge, came to this part of the state in the early seventies as a land surveyor, and he was living in Coleman county at the time of its organization in 1876, assisting in laying off the town of Coleman and organizing it into the new county seat in the summer of the same year. He was elected and served as the first county surveyor of Coleman county, and he died at Waco in 1902.

Ferdinand M. Bowen was born in Yalobusha county, Mississippi, in December, 1848, and in 1851 he was brought by his parents to Texas, the family locating in Collin county, and there he was reared and lived for thirty-one years, coming then to Coleman county in 1882 and since remaining here. He located his home in the new county seat of Coleman and for several years was in the cattle business, continuing the vocation to some extent to the present time. But in later years he has given the most of his attention to the Bowen drug store, in which he is associated with two of his sons, Robert I. and Berry Bowen. In 1906 he was elected the judge of Coleman county, and served in that office for a term of two years.





W. T. Knox & wife

Judge Bowen married Alice Berry, and he is the father of ten children: Robert, Mrs. Cora E. Orr, Mrs. Dove Davidson, Mrs. Georgia Gough, Miss Cherry Bowen, Mrs. Blanche Beakley, Berry, Floyd, Joe and Nellie. The Bowen family are among the most prominent residents of Coleman.

WILLIAM T. KNOX is one of the most prominent farmers and stockmen of Coleman county and one of the largest land owners and wealthiest citizens in Central and Western Texas. He was born in Lavaca county, Texas, and was reared there and in DeWitt county, receiving in the meantime good educational advantages in local schools and in Concrete College in DeWitt county. On coming to Coleman county in the spring of 1882 he bought a ranch on Home creek in the southern part of the county, stocking it with cattle, and it is interesting to recall the fact that the land he bought at that time for a dollar and a quarter an acre he sold in recent years for twenty-five dollars an acre, an illustration of the wonderful increase in the value of the property in this part of the state within the past few years. After living on that place for five or six years Mr. Knox came to Coleman and bought a small place a mile east of the town, the nucleus of his present splendid land holdings in this location. Beginning at his home, located on a beautiful elevation commanding a fine view of the city and extending eastward, Mr. Knox has gradually acquired a large body of this rich valley land, until now, with his sons, he owns here considerably over a thousand acres of the finest agricultural land in western Texas, the Knox place being universally considered the best farm in Coleman county. And besides these holdings near the town, he also has other good farms in the county, and in Foard county he owns two thousand acres of fine wheat land. He has always been interested in live stock and until 1908 he handled each year from five hundred to one thousand head of beef steers.

Mr. Knox has not achieved this splendid prosperity in an easy way or by mere chance, but instead it has come to him through constant energy, industry and through the exercise of thought, foresight, common sense and patience in overcoming obstacles. He has had the courage at proper times to borrow money extensively to enlarge his cattle interests. Within a year or two after coming to Coleman he was practically ruined financially through the depression in price of cattle and sheep, drouths and the hard times generally that prevailed during a period in the '80s, but he soon came once more to the front. In those days he taught school in the northeastern part of the county, and with such success that he was called to the northern part of the state, at Harrold, to take charge of a school there. He has also been honored with quite an extensive public career in Coleman county. His first office was that of county surveyor, and he was then made the chief deputy sheriff and tax collector, and served in those capacities for four years, while in 1908 he was elected to the office of sheriff and served in that capacity for one

term. His official career was marked by strict efficiency and satisfaction to the general public.

In DeWitt, soon after leaving the school room, Mr. Knox was married to Miss Anna Edgar, a member of an old and wealthy family in that county, and they have ten children, namely: William Hugh, Maggie, Henry, David, Jesse, Edgar, Thad, Anna Lee, Percy and Myrtle.

JOHN F. GORDON.—The name of John F. Gordon is perhaps as closely associated with the history of Coleman county as any other of its residents, and the activities of his useful manhood have been of importance in the development of his city and county. He came to Texas with his father and family from Georgia in 1866, locating in Upshur county, and he was reared there and attended school at Daingerfield in Titus county. For some years he lived in Jefferson, Marion county, and in February of 1876 he arrived in Coleman county. This was the year of the county's organization and the laying off of the town of Coleman and its establishment as the county seat. Mr. Gordon, however, at first located at Camp Colorado, in the eastern part of the county and the oldest settlement therein. In pursuing his education he had learned surveying and engineering, and on coming to this county he resumed the profession and was principally engaged in the location of school lands. He served as a deputy under R. S. Bowen, the first surveyor of Coleman county, and later Mr. Gordon was elected and served one term as the county surveyor. In later years he was further identified with political life through his two terms' service as a district clerk.

Mr. Gordon started the first permanent drug store in Coleman, later taking into partnership L. E. Collins and adopting the name of Gordon and Collins. This house was established in 1878, and is still in business, now known as the Coulson drug store. After selling his interest in that store, Mr. Gordon turned his attention to the dry goods business and later to the hardware and implement trade in connection with B. H. Pittman, their firm name being Gordon and Pittman, and he has also been quite extensively identified with the cattle and live stock business and since about 1892 with agricultural pursuits, his home being on his farm two miles and a half north of town. Although he is no longer identified with mercantile pursuits he is an active member of the firm of Watson and Gordon, real estate, financial and insurance agents, and in recent years he has also dealt largely in lands that he surveyed as school lands in the early years of his residence here, it being interesting to note the wonderful increase in value of those lands since the days when he could have secured a half interest in a section merely for surveying and locating it.

Mr. Gordon is one of the few remaining pioneer citizens and business men who located here in 1876, and from those early days until the present he has been an active and public-spirited citizen in all movements of progress. His wife is Alice (Mason) Gordon, who was born at Weatherford in Parker county. They have eight children: William, Oldham,



Walter, Marshall, Mrs. Ethelyn Holcomb, Mrs. Edna Bardwell, Mrs. Annie Patton and Evelyn.

JUDGE JESSE O. WOODWARD is one of the pioneer lawyers of Coleman, a man of the highest attainments in his profession, and his influence extends not only into the professional, but in the political and social circles as well. He was reared on a farm and studied law at Mt. Pleasant, Texas, in the office of Judge P. A. Turner, the present district judge of the Texarkana District. He was admitted to the bar at Mt. Pleasant in March of 1876, and began his practice there as a partner of Judge W. P. McLean, for many years one of the prominent lawyers of Fort Worth. Mr. Woodward came to Coleman in the fall of 1878, and this city has ever since been his home. In the fall of 1880 he was elected the attorney of Coleman county, serving in that office for two terms, and then, after a term as the district attorney, he was elected a district judge, and served in that capacity for eight years. Resuming then his private practice, he has for many years enjoyed a lucrative practice that extends not only in the local courts but throughout other parts of the state as well. As a lawyer and particularly as a county and district attorney in earlier years, Judge Woodward had to pass through scenes and incidents in the discharge of his duties that were often in the nature of violence and tragedy, typical of the frontier period and the litigation characteristic of the times. But he was always an able and fearless judge and prosecutor. He attained particular success in murder and other criminal trials, and in that branch of jurisprudence his influence is far reaching. His law business is conducted under the firm name of Woodward and Baker, his partner being his son-in-law, J. K. Baker.

Judge Woodward was born in Cass county, Texas, in 1855. His father, Sam Woodward Sr., was born in Tuscaloosa, Alabama, and coming to Texas in about 1850 he located in Cass county. From there he came to Coleman county in the spring of 1878, and he lived here for some time, but his death occurred at his old home in Cass county in 1885. Judge Woodward married at Mt. Pleasant, in 1876, Miss Fannie Dillard, a daughter of Colonel John D. Dillard, of that place, and their six children are: Mrs. Willie Baker, Mrs. Mabel Henson, Walter C., Jessie, Garland and Nadine. Walter C. Woodward is the present attorney for Coleman county. Judge Woodward is a member of the Knights of Pythias and Odd Fellows fraternities.

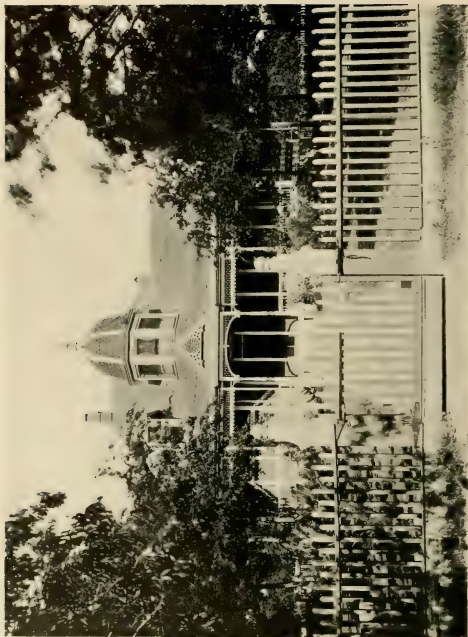
ED B. SMITH is prominently known in Central and Western Texas through his connection with railroad, townsite and ranch building, and as a railroad contractor and farmer. He was born at Chillicothe, Missouri, to John B. and Mollie (Griffey) Smith, both also Missourians. The father died when his son was a boy, and the mother subsequently married her present husband, L. G. Saunders. She was born in Boone county, but lived in Livingston county after her marriage to Mr. Smith,

and in later years she and Mr. Saunders came to Texas to make their home with her son, who has never married and has always taken care of his mother and his stepfather.

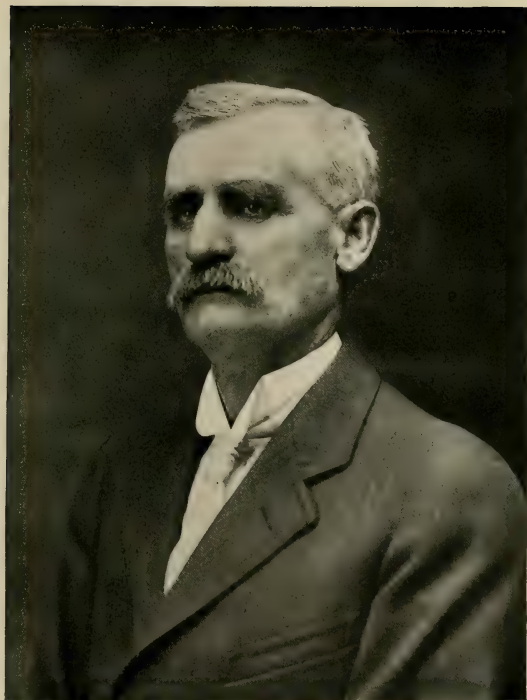
Ed B. Smith left northern Missouri when he was fifteen years old and came to Texas, locating at Sherman, in Grayson county, where he worked with cattle and horses, and from there he went into the Panhandle and worked on the large ranch of Colonel Charles Goodnight, at that time the largest cattleman in Texas and perhaps the state's wealthiest citizen. Mr. Smith had at that time gained some experience in sinking wells, and he worked along that line for Mr. Goodnight. He put down the first wells in the Panhandle, and, being successful in discovering water, he was afterward busily engaged for some time in drilling wells and making tanks in the Plains country. From the Panhandle he returned to northern Texas and accepted railroad grading contracts on roads being built at that time, including the Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fe from Fort Worth to Gainsville and from Dallas to Paris, also graded a line from Mt. Pleasant to Sulphur Springs and later worked on grading contracts on the Fort Worth and Rio Grande Railroad from Fort Worth to Brownwood. In 1886 he was busily engaged with his force on grading work for the Fort Worth and Denver City Railroad from Quanah through the Panhandle to Texline. He also put down the first wells at Washburn, Amarillo and other places, his efficiency as a contractor and his equipment of machinery being so well known and so complete that he obtained all the work he could do, and he took part in the first building and in the mushroom growth of a number of the new towns that sprang up along that line during its building, including several of the buildings at the instance of the townsite agents for the original town of Amarillo, and the moving of the court house, jail and a number of other buildings in the original town of Clarendon from its old location to its present one.

After completing his work in the Panhandle country, Mr. Smith returned to Dallas, where during the following four years he dealt in horses and mules. In 1900 he came to Coleman, where during a similar period he was engaged in the same business, resuming then his old occupation of making tanks and drilling wells, and in the meantime also taking up farming. He has leased land on the Robey ranch, north of Coleman, and in 1909 had one hundred and thirty-five acres planted with cotton. In the summer of 1909, when the Santa Fe Railroad Company decided to build its transcontinental cut-off through Texas from Texico to Coleman, Mr. Smith was awarded the contract for the building of the first three miles of grade from Coleman. The inauguration of this work was a notable event in Coleman. He also received the contract to build another section of grade through the northwest part of the county, and this work was completed by the 15th of January, 1910. His large business dealings have placed him among the leaders in industrial circles in Central and Western Texas, and he is leaving the impress of his forceful individuality in his special lines.





RESIDENCE OF W. J. ROBEY



W. J. Rabe



**WILLIAM J. ROBEY.**—During many years William J. Robey has been extensively engaged in the handling of cattle, sheep and horses, his interests increasing from year to year until he has become one of the county's most prosperous citizens. He was born and reared on a farm in Simpson county, Kentucky, born in 1849, and in 1883 he came to Coleman and acquired a ranch lying north of and almost adjoining the town, the nucleus of his later vast land properties, but much of his old pasture he has sold off in later years. He has retained some farms, however, and these afford him a substantial resource. He has built up a fine ranch property north of town, and also owns a large ranch in Ochiltree county and another in Glasscock county, and he has a beautiful home in Coleman, a splendid residence built in 1900. By conducting his business interests conservatively and with careful thought and planning for the future he avoided the disastrous failures that often overcame stockmen in the early days when panics, drouths or depressions in prices came on. He has been a large handler of sheep, and his wool clip each year has helped to swell Coleman county's total in large proportions. Mr. Robey's brother, the late J. H. Robey, also had a stock ranch north of town. He died in 1900, and his son, B. F. Robey, now has a fine farm which is a part of his father's old ranch.

Mr. Robey married Florence Batsell, a native daughter of Kentucky, and their three children are Trunion, Annah and George Robey. Mr. Robey is a member of the Methodist church.

**ROBERT L. DUNMAN** has achieved success in his native state of Texas as a stockman and farmer. Both he and his wife represent families that are truly Texans in every sense of the word, for they have lived here and have been prominently identified with its interests since the commonwealth formed a part of Mexico. The parents of Mr. Dunman came to Texas in 1824, at that time a part of the Mexican republic. The father, Scotch-Irish in descent, was born in Louisiana in 1811, and he died in 1885, in Harris county, Texas, where he had lived since 1858. The mother died in the year of 1905.

Robert L. Dunman was born in Liberty, now Chambers, county, Texas, in 1843. At Houston he enlisted in that famous fighting organization known as Terry's Texas Rangers, technically the Eighth Texas Cavalry, and during his services throughout that war he was twice wounded, and took part in all the battles fought by Generals Bragg and Joseph E. Johnston, being with the latter's army when it surrendered at Charlotte, North Carolina. He married in 1866 and left his parents' old home in Harris county to go to Chambers county, where he worked on a cattle ranch. He later obtained a start for himself in the cattle business, and in 1869 took a bunch of cattle to Refugio county, and he continued as a cattleman in that country for ten years. Early in the year of 1879 he came to Coleman county, bringing his cattle with him, and he established a home for his family in Coleman, but made his headquarters for his cattle at the mouth of the Concho in the southern part of the county.

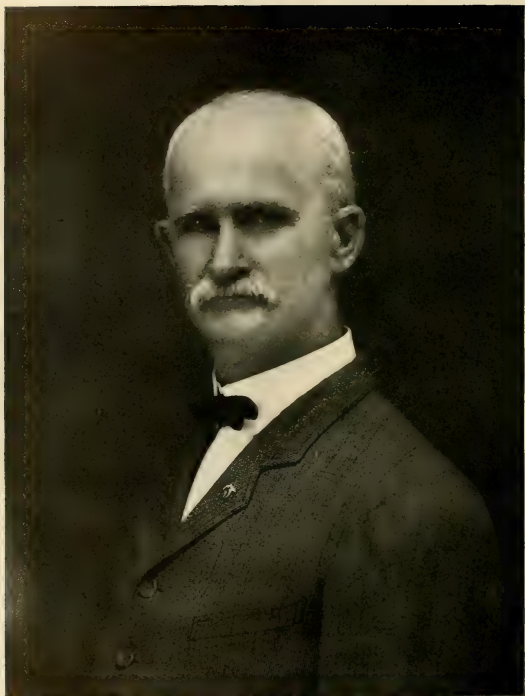
Mr. Dunman continued to operate his cattle ranch at that point until 1882, selling his cattle at that time to the Concho Cattle Company and receiving a good price, and as he had in the meantime acquired some fine land adjoining Coleman on the east he developed this land into a splendid farming property, this work having since occupied the most of his attention. He has there several hundred acres of as rich agricultural land as lies in the entire state of Texas, and it produces splendid crops of corn, cotton, wheat and oats. During late years Mr. Dunman has given very little attention to stock raising, with the exception of mules, of which he makes a specialty.

Mrs. Dunman was before marriage Miss Lucinda E. Winfree, born in Liberty county, Texas. Her mother, who is yet living, is also a native daughter of Texas, and she remembers well the battle of San Jacinto, although she was but six years old at that time. Her husband, Theophile Winfree, was a member of a French family, and he was born in Louisiana and came to Texas during his early years. Mr. and Mrs. Dunman have five children: Mrs. Emma J. Rynerson, Mrs. Mary E. Perry, Robert, Theophilus W. and Zoe E. Dunman. The Dunman home is in a beautiful location a short distance from Coleman, and is one of the hospitable and attractive homes of the community.

F. BECK has gained a wide reputation over Central and Western Texas as a dealer in sheep. He was born in 1853 in St. Charles county, Missouri, and he was reared there on a farm. His father was Henry Beck, a native of France and one of the pioneer settlers of St. Charles county, Missouri, that locality having been originally settled by the French. He had been trained in the sheep industry in his native land and he continued as a sheep raiser after coming to America, so that the son was practically reared in that vocation, and he has been associated with that important industry during his entire industrial career. Early in 1878 he came with his brother, H. Beck, to Coleman county, Texas, and after working together for about two years on the ranch of Colonel Overall, south of Coleman, F. Beck engaged in business for himself as a sheep and cattleman, and has been thus engaged with ever increasing success since that time. He has a valuable ranch of about fifteen thousand acres in Coleman county, seventeen miles southwest of the city of Coleman, and this place has become noted as one of the finest sheep ranches in the southwest. His wool clip averages about thirty thousand pounds a year, the wool being of the highest quality grown in America, and thus brings the highest market price each year. The sheep are practically all of the Delaine Merino breed, which Mr. Beck selected after years of study and experience, for their combined mutton qualities as well as for the quality and quantity of their wool production. He has become noted for the amount of money he has expended in grading his sheep and improving their quality in every possible way, and thus bringing them to the nearest possible point of perfection known to American







L. A. Raddelford

breeders. He has gained a wide reputation as a sheep expert, and is often selected as a judge or as an examining expert on sheep at fairs and live stock shows. Mr. Beck is also prominently identified with the raising of cattle, and usually has about six hundred Herefords, and is as equally successful with those animals as with his sheep. He has given hard work, hard study and intelligent direction to his live stock interests, and his success as a stockman has made him a citizen of large resources.

Mr. Beck married Melinda Pauley, born at Ashland, in Boone county, Missouri, and their seven children are: Mrs. Mary Horne, Oscar, Maggie, Louis, Edgar, George and Curtis Beck.

DAVIS A. PADDLEFORD.—The name of Davis A. Paddleford has been indissolubly identified with the annals of Coleman from the very earliest epoch of its history to the present time, and he is well and prominently known as an implement and vehicle dealer, as a pioneer merchant and as an influential citizen. He was born in Dane county, Wisconsin, about nine miles north of Madison, in 1846. He was reared in Dane county, and early in 1863 he enlisted in the Sixth Wisconsin Battery for service in the Civil war. He went with his command to the battlegrounds of Tennessee and participated in the battle of Missionary Ridge, in the campaign that was waged in the advance on Atlanta, under General Sherman, in the fighting around Atlanta, and was with the army that returned to Nashville after Sherman started on his march to the sea. From Nashville they went to Chattanooga, where they were mounted and converted into a battery of flying artillery, and, subsequently returning with his command to Wisconsin, Mr. Paddleford was mustered out at Madison in July of 1865.

In September of the same year he accompanied his father and family on their removal to Henry county, Missouri, their home until 1875, and in that year they came to Texas and located in Comanche county. In 1876 they came to Coleman county, arriving at Camp Colorado in March of that year. On the 4th of July, 1876, Davis A. Paddleford arrived in the new town of Coleman, which under the then recent organization of the county had been selected as the county seat, but there was no town to speak of at that time and it was not laid off until the following August and September. He had learned the carpenter's trade in Missouri, and with the beginning of the new town of Coleman he resumed that vocation and erected many of the first buildings of the town. He established his first mercantile business, a furniture store, in 1884, two years before the arrival of the railroad, and in 1892 he embarked in his present business, now conducted under the name of D. A. Paddleford and Son, and this is the pioneer implement and vehicle house of Coleman. Mr. Paddleford has always been successful in his business enterprises, and now has ample financial resources and is one of the substantial citizens of Coleman county and the vice president of the Coleman National Bank, of which he has been one of the directors since 1893. He has two splendid farms in

Coleman county, aggregating about one thousand acres. Henry Paddleford, his father, and who came to Coleman county at the same time as the son, died in New Mexico.

Mr. Paddleford is prominent in the Masonic circles of the state, having attained the Thirty-second degree, and he belongs to both the York and Scottish Rites. He is also identified with Hella Temple of the Mystic Shrine at Dallas, is district deputy grand master for his district, a past master of the local lodge and the present high priest of the local chapter. Mrs. Paddleford was before marriage Sallie Waring, born in Liberty county, Texas, and they have nine children: Henry, Ruth, Della, Mary, Laura, Nannie, Kate, Fred and Charles. Henry Paddleford, the eldest son, is associated with his father in the implement and vehicle business.

J. E. BOOG-SCOTT bears a name distinguished in industrial circles as one of the west's most prominent breeders of high-class registered Hereford cattle and as the owner of the famous Anson ranch in Coleman county. Mr. Boog-Scott was born in Roxburyshire, Scotland, in 1878, but he was educated in Warwickshire, England, and, through acquaintances and friends who had come to America and became connected with the great cattle industry of western Texas, he became interested in the business and in 1895 left his home and came to Coleman county, Texas. He went to work immediately on the range, and there in time he thoroughly learned the cattle business. Subsequently he became connected with the famous Anson ranch in Coleman county. The place had been established in 1886 by Claud Anson, a wealthy Englishman, and later it was purchased by his brother, Frank Anson, who made further improvements on and extensions to the ranch. He in turn sold it to Mr. Boog-Scott, its present owner.

The ranch is a very valuable property lying in the richest section of western Texas. It contains about thirty thousand acres, and, beginning about fifteen miles north of Coleman in Coleman county, it extends well up into Callahan county. It is permanently and abundantly watered by the best possible supply of water, and it is crossed by Jim Ned creek, Tuttle bayou and other streams, and the supply is further augmented by a number of tanks that have been built on the ranch.

Mr. Boog-Scott is widely known throughout the country as a breeder and shipper of the highest grade registered Hereford cattle. Beginning with 1903, his herds have each year taken prizes at the International Stock Show in Chicago. He makes a specialty of cattle for feeding in the north, and at the 1907 International Stock Show his pen of twenty feeders won the championship prize. His Hereford bulls bring the highest price paid for this stock, and they are eagerly sought for by stockmen. His ranch is also well known for its splendid Percheron horses, and in this branch of the business he has achieved splendid success. The Anson ranch is one of Coleman county's most greatly prized resources.

LEMAN BROWN has attained prestige in Coleman county through his identification with its public life, and he is now serving the county as its clerk. He is one of the very few native sons of Coleman county who are grown young men, but his parents, T. R. and Frances (Cayce) Brown, were early pioneers here, their residence dating from 1876. The father was born in Kentucky and came to the Lone Star state in 1873, and locating first in Hayes county he lived there some three years, and in 1876 came to Coleman county. This was at that time a frontier region, all open range, and the county was organized in that year and the new town of Coleman, selected as the county seat, laid out. Mr. and Mrs. Brown are yet residing here, living on their ranch eight miles northwest of the city of Coleman, at Mountain View, the birthplace of their son Leman in 1878.

The son was reared and educated here, and for some time in his earlier life was engaged in the grocery business at Coleman. In 1908 he was elected the clerk of Coleman county, and he is serving now most efficiently in that important capacity. He has six brothers and two sisters, and all, with the exception of the three eldest, are native sons and daughters of Coleman county. Mr. Brown's wife, before marriage, was Edna Hicks, born at Corsicana, and they have a son, Joel Ogden Brown.

GUS P. ROQUEMORE.—One of the most prominent of Coleman's business men is Gus P. Roquemore, a grain, hay, hide and pecan merchant and a bank director. He was born in Panola county, Texas, October 13, 1869. His father had located in that county in 1851. He was a Confederate soldier throughout the war between the states, a member of the Seventh Texas Cavalry, and the command served east of the Mississippi river. Mr. Roquemore, the father, died in 1897, and the mother survived for years and died in 1906. The father was born in Georgia, a descendant of a French Huguenot family, and his great-grandmother was born in France and on immigrating to America located in Georgia.

Gus P. Roquemore came to Coleman in the year of 1885, and this city has since remained his home. In 1901 he established his present business as a dealer in grain, hay, hides and pecans, a vocation in which he has been uniformly successful and prosperous. He is a member of the Texas Grain Dealers' Association. He is also prominently identified with the pecan industry, and as an item showing the importance and magnitude of this yet little known industry, Mr. Roquemore in 1907 shipped from Coleman sixty-five thousand dollars' worth of that commodity. He has during the past several years been the Coleman representative of the Waters-Pierce Oil Company, and he is a director of the Farmers' State Bank of Coleman.

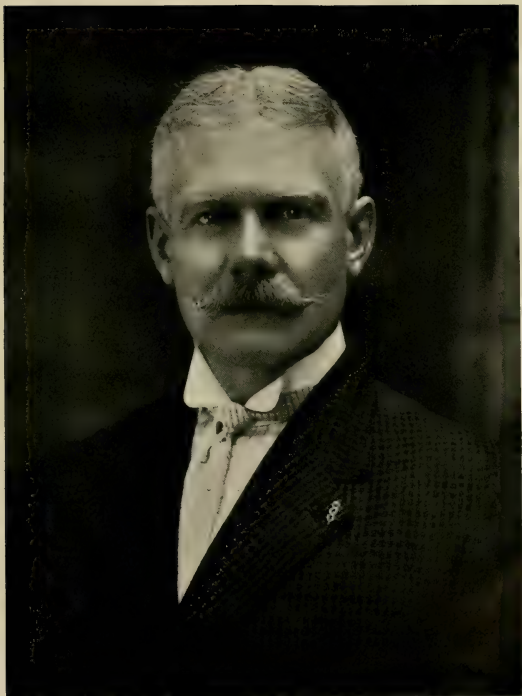
He married Alice Davidson, who was born in Kaufman county, Texas, and they have four children: Bennie May, Lurline, Veoma and Paul Crawford. Mr. Roquemore is a member of the Knights of Pythias,

Woodmen of the World and Modern Woodmen fraternities, and he is a Royal Arch Mason.

ALLAN L. DICKINSON.—One of the most prominent of Coleman's promoters is Allan L. Dickinson, the manager of the Coleman Development Company and an influential worker in the building up of the business and industrial institutions of the city. He was born in Milwaukee, Wisconsin, but was reared and educated in Chicago, Illinois, and in his early youth he became a traveling salesman and traveled for wholesale dry goods houses out of Chicago from 1881 to 1895, during a large part of that time covering the territory from St. Paul to the Pacific coast on the Northern Pacific Railroad, but during the latter part of the period he traveled in Texas. In 1892 he bought a ranch and went into the cattle business in Kendall county, but in 1898 he sold his interests there and came to Coleman county, where he resumed his cattle business and also engaged in farming and other interests. More recently he has engaged quite extensively in real estate development in Coleman, and with his associates has successfully promoted a number of important new enterprises in this city, including a cotton compress and a cotton oil mill, and plans are in progress for a new hotel, a large brick plant and other industries. He was one of the organizers and is the manager of the Coleman Development Company, which in the summer of 1909 placed on the market the Santa Fe addition to Coleman, an eighty-four acre tract situated in the northwest part of the town and laid off into building lots, with streets graded, water pipes laid and all conveniences furnished for the building of homes. The lots in this addition are particularly convenient for persons connected with the oil mill, the cotton compress and other industries located in the northwest section of the city, and it was in fact for their accommodation largely that the property was developed and improved. Mr. Dickinson took an active part in the securing of the Santa Fe cut-off for Coleman, and in fact many of the city's most prominent institutions owe their origin and development to him.

He married Josephine Forsyth, who was born in Florida, and they have two daughters, Marie and Josephine.

WILLIAM A. COFFEY, born in Parker county, Texas, in 1858, is a member of one of the oldest pioneer families of western Texas and a son of Rich and Sallie (Greathouse) Coffey. Rich Coffey was a noted pioneer in western Texas. Born in Georgia, he came to this state as early as 1856 and located on the extreme frontier in Parker county, but in 1862 he moved still further west and located in what is now Runnels county, on Elm creek, a short distance from the present site of Ballinger. In 1868 he settled at the mouth of the Concho river, on the Colorado river, where he established his headquarters, and from where he carried on his cattle business. This location remained his home until death, in February, 1897. Rich Coffey was a typical pioneer and cattleman of the old days. He made twenty-two trips over the West Texas plains to the



*W. J. Dickinson*





salt wells in western Texas, and on each of these trips he buried men that had been killed by the Indians. His widow is yet living at the old homestead. This old homestead is now in the northeastern part of Concho county and near the line of Runnels and Coleman counties, the postoffice being Leaday in Coleman county.

William A. Coffey, or as he is more familiarly known as "Bill," was one of the sons of this noted pioneer and frontiersman, and he still lives at the old Coffey place and carries on general farming there. His brother, John W. Coffey, is in the sheep business in Kimble county. These sons were reared on the extreme western frontier, and with their father took part in the battles waged against the Indians and in all the struggles of frontier life. William A. Coffey and his brother frequently made trips over the old trails to Kansas. While getting together a herd of cattle these two brothers and some of their neighbors were attacked on the 1st of June, 1871, by Indians, and John W. Coffey was twice shot and two of the other boys were killed.

William A. Coffey married Mary M. Haley, but she died in the year of 1894. He has five children: Robert W., Ed., John, Penny and Lonnie.

JOHN B. WARREN was born in DeWitt county, Texas, in 1862, and he was reared in DeWitt county and came from there to Coleman at the age of sixteen, in 1878. Since that time he has been prominently identified with the public and industrial life of this community, and has been influential as a pioneer merchant, as a member of the city council and as the city's treasurer. His first connection with industrial interests in Coleman was as a merchant, beginning the business with a general mercantile stock January 1, 1883, and in 1897 he established the Warren dry goods and grocery house, which he conducted successfully for eleven years. The business was destroyed by fire in 1907. During some years Mr. Warren also handled implements and vehicles quite extensively, his business extending over a large territory, and during many years he was widely known in Coleman's trade territory as one of its most active merchants. In 1909 he assisted in the organization of the Coleman Compress Company, of which he is the present secretary, and this corporation has added to the substantial industries of Coleman by building a new cotton compress, completed in September of 1909. In many other ways Mr. Warren has been a public spirited citizen in helping to promote the commercial and industrial growth of the city. He is a member of the city council and is the present city treasurer.

Mrs. Warren was before marriage Ollie L. Berry, and two sons have blessed their union, John B. Warren Jr. and Pat Ray Warren.

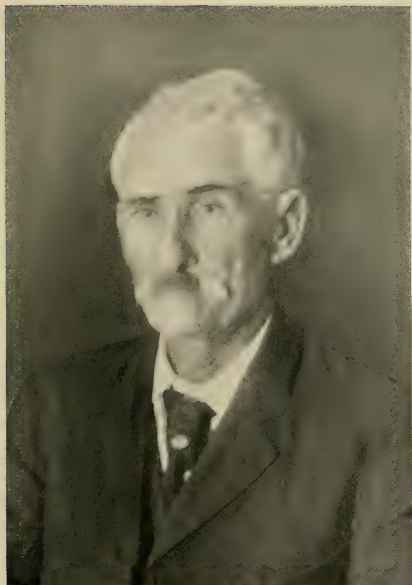
WILLIAM L. ROSE.—In reviewing the events which form the history of Coleman county the name of Rose figures prominently in its public life and in its growth and development, and the name of William L. Rose has gained distinction as a cotton oil mill operator and as a pioneer. He was born in Fairfax county, Virginia, in 1856, and he came to Texas with

his parents in 1858, the family locating in Fayette county. He was reared by his older brother and his wife, Mr. and Mrs. B. F. Rose, and came with them to Coleman county in 1876. As pioneers of this community they witnessed and took part in its frontier life and its rapid development to one of the richest communities of the commonwealth and became active factors in its interests. The brother, Judge B. F. Rose, died in 1904, and at the time of his demise he was serving his twelfth year as the judge of Coleman county.

Following his arrival here, William L. Rose went into the cattle business and later into the livery business, and for a time he operated a stage line from Coleman to Ballinger. At the completion of the railroad to Ballinger, and before it reached San Angelo, he operated the stage line between those two places, making his headquarters at Ballinger, and during that time he took an active part in the building up of the city. Moving his ranch headquarters to Runnels county in 1879, he dealt in cattle there for some time, and during many years was connected with the cattle and horse business in both Coleman and Runnels counties. In 1906 the oil mill of the Coleman Cotton Oil Company was built, and Mr. Rose was made the secretary and manager of the company. This is one of the largest industries in the city. Mr. Rose is also interested in two cotton gins, one in Coleman and one in Talpa. He is a Mason, an Odd Fellow and a Woodman, and he is one of the representative citizens of Coleman.

DR. GABRIEL B. BEAUMONT is the pioneer physician and surgeon of Coleman, a practitioner of the highest standing in his profession and a citizen of worth and influence. He was born in Clarksville, Tennessee, in 1845, and his parents, William and Susan (Cook) Beaumont, are both deceased. The father was born in Yorkshire, England, of French ancestry, and in his young manhood he came to America and located at Clarksville, Tennessee, where he engaged in the tobacco business. Mrs. Beaumont was a daughter of Valentine Cook, from Kentucky.

Although born in Tennessee, Dr. Beaumont was reared in Texas, his parents having moved to this state in 1848, locating on the Gulf coast in Calhoun county, and he was educated in various schools in LaGrange, Reutersville and in Soule University at Fayetteville. While yet a boy he was a member of that famous organization of the Confederacy known as Terry's Texas Rangers, being a trooper in Company A. He enlisted for the entire war, but was permanently disabled from further service at the battle of Murfreesboro by a bullet wound in the shoulder. He was only sixteen years of age when discharged from the service. Mr. Beaumont then took up the study of medicine, at first under private tutelage, and, passing the required examinations, he began practice in Harris county, about twenty-four miles from Houston, while following this period of practice he entered the medical department of the University of Louisiana at New Orleans, now Tulane University, and graduated from that institution with the class of 1869. He then located at Navasota, in Grimes



*G. B. Beaumont, M. D.*



county, and after eighteen years in practice there he came in 1886 to Coleman, which has ever since been his home and where he has continued as a successful physician and surgeon.

Dr. Beaumont married, at Navasota, Nannie Duke, from Grimes county, Texas. Of their sons, Dr. Edgar Chetwynd Beaumont is also a physician and surgeon, practicing with his father. He received his literary education in the Northwestern University at Evanston and studied medicine in the College of Physicians and Surgeons in St. Louis, and graduated from the medical department of Fort Worth University. Dr. Gulielmus A. Beaumont, another son, is a successful dentist in Coleman, a graduate of the dental department of Northwestern University, where he also received his literary training. Dr. and Mrs. Beaumont have four other children: Mrs. Gertrude Gay, Mrs. Salome Hortense Stevens, Mrs. Stella Beaumont McCord and Aubrey Duke Beaumont. Dr. Beaumont belongs to the Methodist church and to the Odd Fellows and Knights of Pythias fraternities.

#### RUNNELS COUNTY

One of the counties laid out by the legislature by act of February 1, 1858, and named in honor of Governor Runnels, this county was not permanently settled for twenty years afterward, and was finally organized in 1880. On Oak creek, just beyond the west boundary of the county, Fort Chadbourne was established in the '50s, and was garrisoned by federal troops until the Civil war. Under this protection a few settlers had located in Runnels county, but they were traders or wandering stockmen, and during the troublous times of the war decade the county was practically abandoned.

During the '70s the cattlemen took possession of Runnels county, driving the buffalo before them and establishing their camps all along the Colorado and its tributaries. By 1880 the T. & P. Railroad had been built through Abilene, about twenty-five miles from the county, and for many miles on both sides of that route the stockmen and settlers began permanent occupation. In 1880 the population of Runnels county was 980 (15 negroes). Agriculture had hardly been attempted, merely enough to test the productiveness of the soil. When the county was organized the place selected as the county seat was given the name Runnels. In 1886 the G. C. & S. F. Railroad was built through the county, and the town of Ballinger, founded on this line, soon afterward became the county seat and has since been the metropolis of the county.

In 1890 the population of the county had increased to 3,193; by 1900 it nearly doubled, being 5,379 (33 negroes); and by the last census, 1910, nearly a quadruple gain is shown, the population being 20,858.

The development of the county, as revealed in assessed values, has likewise shown remarkable gains. In 1881 taxable property was assessed at \$665,077, nearly half being represented by live stock. In 1882 the

county had about 42,000 cattle, 30,000 sheep, besides other stock. In 1903 the taxable values were \$4,188,000; and in 1909, \$10,571,775. Since the '80s, the county has changed from an exclusive range to a well diversified farming country. In 1903 over 15,000 bales of cotton were raised in the county, and Ballinger claims to have the largest wagon receipts of cotton among all the cities of Texas, 54,000 bales having been brought into town in 1909 over the country roads. In the meantime the number of live stock has decreased, though the values, under conditions of modern stock farming, are greater than thirty years ago. In 1909 about 12,000 horses and mules, 18,000 cattle and 11,000 sheep were assessed. About three thousand acres are now irrigated, and by this and other means the county's area is being adapted to productive agriculture.

The population of the principal towns in 1890 was: Ballinger, 1,390; Runnels, 416; besides a number of small places without separate enumeration. The census of 1900 gave Ballinger a population of 1,128; Runnels, 416; Winters, 138. Miles, Rowena and Winters are now the largest towns outside of Ballinger. From Miles to Paint Rock, the Concho, Llano & San Saba Valley Railroad (seventeen miles) has recently been completed, and the Abilene Southern is partly constructed.

C. A. DOOSE, as a banker, capitalist and as a public-spirited promoter of local enterprises, has attained a distinguished place among the men of affairs in central Texas. Although born at Hallettsville, in Levaca county, February 4, 1875, he came with his parents to Runnels county in 1884, two years before the town of Ballinger was started and two years before a railroad had entered the county. He was only nine years old at that time, and he is practically a product of Runnels county, for he was reared here, and since his early youth he has been a hard and incessant worker for its interests and upbuilding.

Retracing to the days when Runnels county was a commercial non-entity and given up to the cattle and ranch business, the building of the Santa Fe Railroad, the organization of Runnels county with "old Runnels" as the county seat, and the creating of Ballinger and the moving of the county seat thereto, there gradually rose upon the scene an aggressive real estate and land dealer, with modern ideas and straightforward methods. Having been taught his primary lessons in the real estate and land business from early boyhood, C. A. Doose took the initiative and was the originator of the scheme in western Texas, to buy up cattle ranches or large tracts of land, subdividing them into small farms and colonizing them. With a full knowledge of the future possibilities of the great West Texas country, he directed the greater part of his attention to people in the older settled parts of Texas, Mr. Doose's eminently correct judgment yet simple idea being that Texans are always Texans seasoned to the climate, adapted to the modes of living, farming and productions. How wise and well he reasoned is best told in the story of his future successes.

As noted above his principal field of effort has been in connection with the opening up of the old cattle ranches and subdividing them and colo-



*C. F. Doose.*





nizing them with intelligent farmers for agricultural purposes. Within the last few years Runnels county has become noted far and wide for the richness and extent of her agricultural products. This culminated in 1908 with wagon receipts of over fifty thousand bales of cotton in the city of Ballinger alone. It should be said, as a credit to Mr. Doose that these splendid results are due in large part to his constant energy in promoting immigration to Runnels county to occupy the lands he had subdivided. Merely getting people to the county, however, would not have been so beneficent in itself had he not backed this with financing and encouraging his customers in every possible way. A great majority of the farms he sold on a very low initial payment, allowing the balance to be paid through a number of years, and many of the farmers of exceedingly small resources that he started in this manner are now financially independent. As the original colonization missionary of western Texas, Mr. Doose has transacted some of the largest as well as some of the most attractive propositions in the history of West Texas, one deal alone involving one hundred and twenty thousand dollars and another one hundred and ten thousand, and all these have worked to the good of the country and its people. C. A. Doose and Company's magnificent twelve thousand dollar office building is situated on the corner of Hutchings avenue and Seventh street, and is quite in contrast to the "shack" in which Mr. Doose began business in 1895, and which was located on Eighth street. The abstract department is an important feature of the business, and its facilities for furnishing correct and accurate abstracts on short notice are unexcelled.

Mr. Doose is thoroughly familiar with all the movements of progress in Ballinger. He was one of the promoters and aided in financing the Ballinger end of the Abilene and Southern Railroad, which was completed into this city from Abilene in 1909, his efforts therewith being all the more commendable from the fact that they were expended during the hard months following the panic of October, 1907, and he has succeeded in a remarkably short time in giving Ballinger what she has long needed, another railroad outlet. He was one of the organizers in 1903 of the Citizens' National Bank. He was made the president of the First National Bank in January of 1905, and these two banks, on the 1st of August, 1909, were consolidated, retaining the name of the First National Bank, of which Mr. Doose was the president until January, 1910, at which time he resigned in order that he might give his undivided attention to his extensive real estate business which he has established in the past twenty years. This consolidation made one of the strongest and soundest financial institutions in western Texas. It has a capital stock of two hundred thousand dollars, with surplus and profits exceeding fifty thousand dollars. Mr. Doose is also a stockholder in the Higginbotham-Currie Mercantile Company, and he is vice president and a director of the local Business Men's League.

His wife was, before marriage, Emma Richardson, born in McLennan county, Texas, and their children are Collis P., Marguerite, and C. A. Doose Jr. The family worship in the Cumberland Presbyterian church.

EDMUND D. WALKER has been associated with the life of Ballinger since the period of its formation to the present time, and his name is enrolled on the pages of its history as the builder of its first business house. He was born and reared in Polk county, Texas, born January 21, 1861, and he received the most of his education at Add-Ran College at Thorp Springs. Moving to Brown county in 1880, he taught school there, later teaching in Polk county for a year, and then locating in Coleman county he taught at old Camp Colorado. In 1885 he came to Runnels county and engaged in business at old Runnels, the little town that was originally the county seat of Runnels county, located about four miles north of the present city of Ballinger.

In 1886, the year following Mr. Walker's arrival here, the railroad was completed into Runnels county, and on the 29th of June of that year the sale of town lots, the beginning of the town of Ballinger and which had been decided upon as the new county seat, was held. Mr. Walker had arranged to go into the drug business in the new town in partnership with Mr. H. N. Beakley, and previous to the date mentioned they had shipped in lumber from Coleman and erected a small frame building, but they were not allowed to locate it, however, until the day of the opening, the 29th of June. On that memorable day they located it at what is now the southwest corner of Hutchings avenue and Seventh street, and that was the first building in the new town. After a long and interesting career it is yet standing, though in a different location, in the eastern part of the city. A short time after establishing the store at its original location this firm moved to the northeast corner of Hutchings avenue and Eighth street, the corner now occupied by the First National Bank building. Still later their location was changed to the north side of Hutchings avenue, between Eighth and Ninth streets, the site now occupied by the store of Van Pelt, Kirk and Mack, while subsequently it was again moved to the south side of Hutchings avenue between Seventh and Eighth streets, and finally back to its old original location on the southwest corner of Hutchings avenue and Seventh street.

Mr. Beakley retired from the business, which had been conducted under the firm name of Walker and Beakley, and J. J. Erwin then came into the firm, which was subsequently known as Walker and Erwin, and after Mr. Erwin's retirement from the business it was known as the E. D. Walker Drug Store. This well known drug business continued in active operation until 1905, and in that year Mr. Walker sold the business and organized the Ballinger State Bank and Trust Company, while in the following year of 1906 the beautiful new bank building for this company, one of the finest bank buildings in western Texas, was erected on the old corner, Hutchings avenue and Seventh street, the corner where Mr. Walker had originally started in business in Ballinger. This bank is having an exceptionally prosperous career. It has a capital stock of sixty thousand dollars and a strong clientage of patrons representing the best elements of citizenship in Runnels county. Mr. Walker is the cashier and manager of the bank and Charles S. Miller is the president. Through

long years of business dealings, based on the strictest honor and integrity, Mr. Walker has built up a name and reputation that are a very strong asset, and he is thoroughly identified with all the public-spirited movements of the city. He is a Knight Templar Mason and a Shriner, and a member of the Knights of Pythias fraternity. He is a member of the Ballinger Christian church, and has served as the superintendent of its Sunday school since about 1895.

He married, in Coleman, Miss Willie Gertrude Payton, her parents, who are now living in Fort Worth, having been old-time settlers of Coleman. The six children in this family are: Alf, Edmund, Harold, Velma, Bill and Philip. The eldest son, Alf Walker, is in the United States navy, a member of the Pacific Squadron.

JACK MCGREGOR took part in the founding of his home town of Ballinger on the 29th of June, 1886, and since that time he has been one of its most prominent business men. He was born at Stratford, Ontario, Canada, a son of the late Alexander McGregor, from Scotland, and a pupil of the University of Edinburg. On emigrating to Canada he located at Stratford, and came to Texas with his family in 1876, first stopping in San Saba county. In 1877 he came to Concho county and engaged in the stock business on the open range. He died in the city of Ballinger in 1898, a well known and highly respected man, and particularly well known throughout the old cattle country of western Texas.

Jack McGregor, with his brothers, Duncan, Peter and Robert, was reared on the frontier and in the live stock business, and they put up the first wire fence in Concho county, it being of the old smooth wire, before barbed wire had come into use. Jack McGregor was for several years a member of the firm which composed the Western Mercantile Company, its secretary and treasurer, and that was the pioneer business of Ballinger, it having started with the town. At the organization of the Hall Hardware Company in 1901, Mr. McGregor became one of its members, and this company took over the hardware business founded the year the town was started, and it had for several years been conducted under the firm name of McAlpin and Company. Mr. Hall has since retired from the company and Mr. Tom Ward is now its president, Mr. McGregor being its secretary and treasurer. The Hall Hardware Company has one of the largest retail hardware, implement and vehicle houses in western Texas, and it is a thoroughly successful establishment. Its stores and warehouses are on the same site upon which the original store was established in 1886, the south side of Hutchings avenue, between Eighth and Ninth streets. Mr. McGregor is intimately identified in every way as a public-spirited citizen in the continued growth and development of Ballinger and its trade territory. He is one of the directors of the First National Bank.

He married, in San Saba county, Miss Cordelia Fentress, a daughter of the late Dr. D. W. Fentress, a pioneer citizen of that county and a member of the famous Fentress family of Tennessee. Mr. and Mrs.

McGregor have three children—Malcolm McGregor, Miss Armour McGregor and Alexander McGregor.

JUDGE JOHN I. GUION is one of the distinguished jurists practicing at the bar of Runnels county and one of the most honored of the pioneers and builders of Ballinger. Born at Jackson, Mississippi, January 4, 1854, he descends from Revolutionary ancestry, and he is a son of John I. Guion Sr., an intimate friend and law partner of S. S. Prentice, both of whom played an important part in the history of Mississippi during the stormy days of that state.

Judge Guion received his literary training at Cumberland University, in Lebanon, Tennessee, with its class of 1868-70, and he studied law under General F. J. Wharton, then attorney general of Mississippi. He was admitted to practice before the state supreme court in 1873. In 1875 he came to Texas, locating first at San Saba, the county seat of San Saba county, and in 1879 he located at Paint Rock, the seat of government of Concho county, but which at that time consisted of only two or three houses, and outside of that small collection there was not another house in Concho county. He opened the first law office in Paint Rock and in Concho county, and he resided there until 1886, the year of the completion of the Santa Fe Railroad to Ballinger and the beginning of this city, established by the railroad townsite department, the lots being sold soon after the completion of the road to this point.

While yet in San Saba county, Judge Guion was elected and served for two years as the county judge, which gave him a distaste for office, having held none before or since. He is, however, a true and loyal Democrat, always working for the success of Democratic principles and always found on the side of the people. He is also a patriot in behalf of Ballinger and Runnels county's development and future welfare, as a public-spirited and progressive citizen never failing to do his share. He was attorney for the First National Bank for more than twenty years. His office is on the second floor of the old First National Bank building.

Judge Guion married, on the 4th of June, 1877, Miss Armour Fentress, from San Saba county, and five daughters and three sons have blessed their marriage union. The family worship in the Presbyterian church, and the judge is both an Odd Fellow and a Knight of Pythias. The Guion home is on Eighth street, Ballinger.

LEE MADDOX represents one of the earliest of Runnels county's pioneer families. Born in Grayson county, Texas, in 1867, he came here with his father in 1881, and he practically grew up on the Texas frontier and has witnessed the marvelous changes that have taken place in the character and development of the country. The Rev. W. S. Maddox is his father, and he was born in Hunt county, Texas, in 1840, and his father was Nicholas Maddox, one of the earliest of the Texas pioneers. He came to what is now Grayson county in 1830, while Texas was yet a part of Mexico. Nicholas Maddox raised a family of sixteen children.

The Rev. W. S. Maddox lived in Grayson county until 1881, coming then to Runnels county and locating at old Runnels, the original county seat of the county, and which remained as such until the founding of its successor, Ballinger, on the 29th of June, 1886. Rev. Maddox has been a Baptist minister during a long number of years, and is yet active in the work of the ministry, and in addition and in company with his sons he carried on stock raising and farming in Runnels county for many years, the sons having been reared on the farm. Rev. Maddox now lives at Ovilla in Taylor county. All of his ten children are living, and they are Lee, Frank, Price, John F., Holmes, Dave, Charles, Mrs. Mary Stell, Mrs. Lillie Phillips and Mrs. Grace Henderson.

During the past fifteen years Lee Maddox has been prominent in the business circles of Ballinger, and for several years his principal vocation has been in connection with general fire insurance, in which he represents locally a number of the leading companies. He is also financial agent on the handling of bonds, municipal securities, etc. He was formerly for some time with the Hall Hardware Company, was later in the hardware business for himself, during a number of years was secretary of the Commercial Club, and he is enthusiastic on the question of public enterprise and improvement. He is a member of the Ballinger city council, having been selected for that duty particularly in connection with the solving of the municipal water works problem in Ballinger.

He married, in this city, Miss Josie B. Routh, daughter of Joseph Routh, another well known pioneer of Runnels county, and he originally owned the land upon which the city of Ballinger was built. A son, Lee, has been born to Mr. and Mrs. Maddox.

WILLIAM L. ELLIS.—Although a young man, William L. Ellis has gained the reputation of being one of the largest individual cotton buyers in Ballinger. In 1908, the banner year for that crop, Ballinger made the highest record of any town in the cotton growing states in point of the number of bales brought in by wagon and sold, the total amounting to over fifty thousand bales for the year. Of this enormous crop, Mr. Ellis bought a large share. His business training and mental equipment are such as to make him an ideal factor in this vocation, involving as it does the possession of a cool head, good judgment and an unlimited amount of nerve. He has played an important part in the making of Ballinger a notable cotton market.

Mr. Ellis was born in Louisville, Winston county, Mississippi, in 1879, and when he was ten years old he came with his parents to Texas, the family locating at San Marcos in Hays county, and the son's education there including a course in the Lone Star Business College. In 1904 he came to Ballinger and embarked in the retail grocery business and prosecuted the same with success for two years, but the close confinement required by that business made it expedient for him to give it up, and it was then that he engaged in cotton buying. He married Miss

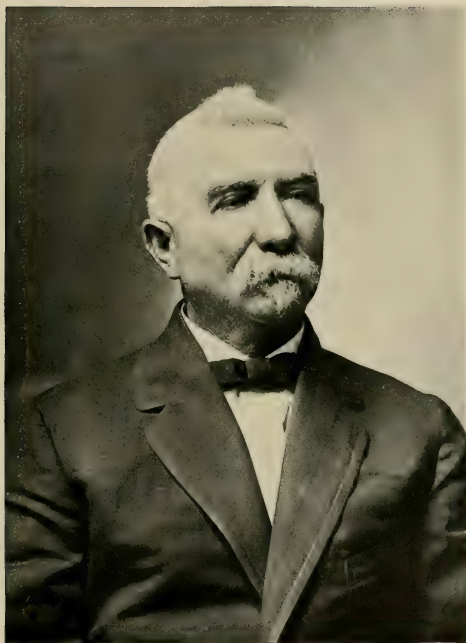
Addie Thorp, of Austin, and their three children are Lucile, Jesse and Lynn.

JUDGE THOMAS T. CROSSON served his judicial district as an attorney for eight years, and as a lawyer he stands second to none in point of force and ability, practicing before the courts of western and central Texas, his personality and conscientiousness in all things commanding the profound respect of a wide circle of acquaintances. He was born at Newberry in South Carolina, the son of Judge J. M. Crosson, a lawyer, who came to Texas when his son Thomas was but two years old, the family spending their first two years in this state in Freestone county, from whence they moved to Livingston, the county seat of Polk county. Young Thomas studied law under his father and was admitted to the bar at Livingston in 1877. Judge J. M. Crosson in later years moved to his present home at Woodville, the county seat of Tyler county.

Judge Thomas T. Crosson came to Runnels county in 1886, and he was here at the time of the founding of the town of Ballinger on the 29th of June of the same year. He has lived here since those pioneer days. At the time of leaving Livingston he resigned the office of county judge of Polk county, and he had previously also served that county as its attorney. Since coming here he has served Runnels county as its judge for four years, and for eight years—four terms in all—he served this judicial district, comprising the counties of Runnels, Brown, Coleman, McCulloch and Concho, as district attorney, and in that position he distinguished himself as an impartial prosecutor in the rigid enforcement of the law. As a Democrat, Judge Crosson has always been in hearty sympathy with the prevailing tenets of his party, and no man living has fought for them and the people more fearlessly and stubbornly. He believes there should be no compromise with honest principles. He has in the past served as chairman of the Runnels County Democratic Executive Committee, and no man in Central or Western Texas is more highly respected than he. He is a member of the firm of H. Zdaril and Company, real estate and land dealers, with offices on the second floor of the Opera House building.

The Judge's wife is M. A. (Hill) Crosson, the daughter of Dr. John E. Hill of San Jacinto county, where the daughter was born. They have two children, Edwin H. and Helen J. Crosson.

DOUGALD A. CAMERON is mentioned with prominence among the early pioneer residents of Runnels county and among the old time stockmen of Central and Western Texas. He was born in Warren county, Mississippi, in 1850, and is of Scotch ancestry, his paternal grandfather having come from the Highlands of Scotland and settled in Mississippi. Dougald A. was reared in his native county of Warren, and came from there to Texas early in the year of 1874, stopping for a month or so in Fort Worth, at that time a very small and unattractive town, and he then came to Runnels county in company with Nat Guest, another of the



*D. A. Cameron, Sr.*





pioneers of the county. They arrived at the Rich Coffey place, at the mouth of the Concho, on the 6th of April, 1874, and Mr. Cameron has been numbered among the citizens of Runnels county practically ever since those early days, although the county was not then organized. It is difficult for those of the present generation living as they do in a time when Runnels county has developed into a thickly settled agricultural community, rich and resourceful, to realize what the conditions were when Mr. Cameron came, when all was an open country given over entirely for range purposes, with no permanent settlements and only an occasional cow camp.

His first work on coming to this frontier was with cattle, and for several years he was engaged with some of the big cow outfits that operated on the great plains of western Texas. He showed such ability and trustworthiness with cattle that he was given many positions of responsibility. His principal employers were the Coggin Brothers and Tally Burnett, although he worked at times with other outfits, such as Tankersley's, Ike Mullins' and R. K. Wylie's, and in 1878, with his associates, he had charge of a herd of three thousand cattle which they brought from old Fort Sumner in New Mexico over the old Indian trail to the Yellowstone Canyon in the Panhandle, and from there to the Pease river, where they were delivered to the Matador Cattle Company. Mr. Cameron did this work for R. K. Wylie and the Coggin Brothers, who owned the cattle, and this was the first herd brought over the Fort Sumner trail by white men.

For several years past Mr. Cameron has made his home in Ballinger, retired from an active business life, but he has land and other interests in this city and in Runnels county. He has been a witness and an active participant in all the marvelous changes that have taken place in western Texas in recent years. He married in Warren county, Mississippi, Flora Hullum, a native of that county, and they have six children: Dougald, Stanley, Katie, Dorsey, Frank and John.

J. P. FLYNT is one of the most popular and efficient public officials of Runnels county, its present sheriff, elected on the 3d of November, 1908. He is a thorough Texan in all that the word implies, one of its native sons, and he is a man of many and stanch friends and honest convictions. He was born at Kosse in Limestone county, on the 19th of April, 1878, but when he was a little lad of five years the family moved to McLennan county, and from there he came to Runnels county in 1896, first locating at Winters, but later spent two years at Wingate, and then returning to Winters he resided there until elected the sheriff of Runnels county. Both Mr. Flynt's parents were from Georgia, and they are living now at Winters, aged seventy-two and sixty-two years respectively, but of their nine children all have passed away with the exception of the Sheriff and his brother, W. F. Flynt, who is living at Wingate.

Although the Republican party is represented in Texas it is yet greatly in the minority, and the real political battles are fought within the ranks of the Democratic party. So in Texas the Democratic primaries

are the most important and hardest fought elections. In the July primary of 1908 candidates for the office of sheriff were J. P. Flynt and R. P. Kirk, the latter the incumbent of that office for many years and an exceptionally strong man with the people, but Mr. Flynt won the nomination by a majority of fourteen votes. He was regularly elected in the following November and later duly inducted into office. He is proving an efficient officer, capable and fearless in the discharge of his duties, strictly enforcing the law but at the same time granting all necessary leniencies in its discharge.

He married at Ballinger, May 14, 1899, Carrie Patterson, and their five children are Carrie, Marion, Frank, Jim and Joe. Mr. Flynt is a Mason, a Knight of Pythias and a member of the Missionary Baptist church.

MARRYATT C. SMITH has attained prestige and success in one of the highest professions of the land, that of the law, and he stands in the highest rank of citizenship. Born at Dublin in Lawrence county, Georgia, March 7, 1847, he accompanied the family in 1852 on their removal to a plantation on Red Creek, a tributary of Red River, in Bossier Parish, northwestern Louisiana, eighteen miles east of Shreveport, and being planters they took with them their slaves. But in 1859 they left there and came to Texas, purchasing land and locating in the Brazos bottoms near Marlin in Falls county, where they engaged in cotton planting. Marryatt was the youngest of the six brothers of that family who served in the Confederate army in the war between the states. W. O. Smith, the eldest, was badly wounded in the battle of Opelousas, Louisiana, and although he returned home and was elected the first sheriff of Falls county following the reconstruction period, he died as the ultimate result of his wound in 1883. Marryatt C. Smith enlisted in January of 1864, when less than seventeen years of age, joining Company B, Waller's Battalion, General Tom Green's Brigade, and his services were entirely in the Trans-Mississippi department and principally in Louisiana, including the opposition to the Banks' campaign up the Red River. The battle of Yellow Bayou was the last serious engagement in which he participated.

Mr. Smith was educated mainly in old Baylor University at Independence, Washington county, and for the profession of the law his training and preparation were of the highest order. He is a graduate of the Harvard Law School, in the class of 1871, and among the famous tutors there when he attended were Emory Washburn, the great authority on Real Property; Theophilous Parsons, author of the work "Parsons on Contracts"; and Oliver Wendell Holmes, Jr., who has since become a member of the Supreme Court. Mr. Smith was admitted to the bar at Calvert, Texas, at the spring term of court, 1872, and he practiced his profession at Marlin until 1876, moving then to Brownwood, a successful field for his law practice until in 1886 he came to Ballinger, which had just been selected as the new county seat of Runnels county, and he was here on the opening day for the sale of town lots, June 29, 1886. Mr.

Smith has resided in Ballinger since those early days, devoted exclusively to the practice of his profession, and he is regarded as one of the best authorities on the law in western Texas.

He married Dona A. Tanner, born at San Marcos, and their three children are Hermia, Marryatt and M. Clarence Smith.

EDWIN DAY, prominently known in the cotton industry and as the tax assessor of Runnels county, was born in Marshall county, Mississippi, in 1865, a son of T. P. Day, who came with his family to Fort Worth, Texas, in 1872, and he is still in business in that city, one of its best known pioneer citizens and business men. He was also one of the first jewelers of Fort Worth. The son Edwin was reared and educated in that city, and he lived there until coming to Ballinger in 1897. In that year he embarked in the cotton gin business in this city, establishing the third cotton gin to be built in Runnels county, and he took a prominent part in the development of the great cotton industry therein that culminated in 1908 with wagon receipts at Ballinger of over fifty thousand bales, the highest record of any town in the United States. Mr. Day sold his individual interests in the cotton gin, but he is still connected with the industry as manager of the local gin owned by N. A. Perry and Company at Brownwood.

In 1906 he was chosen as the tax assessor of Runnels county, and as it is an unwritten law of the Runnels County Democracy to give an official when his duties have been well performed a second term, Mr. Day had no opposition in the recent primary and was regularly elected on the 3d of November, 1908, and he is now serving his second term. A man of high honor and unquestioned integrity, he has made a most efficient officer, a strong champion of the full rendition law. He is one of Ballinger's most progressive and best citizens.

He married in Fort Worth Miss Hattie McCamant, daughter of Captain J. D. McCamant, a well known pioneer citizen. He was born in Grayson county, Virginia, and coming to Texas in 1855 he located in Hunt county. He remembers visiting Fort Worth as early as 1857, when it was a small and very insignificant outpost, the only store there at the time being owned by Julius Field. Captain McCamant served two terms as clerk of Hunt county before the war, and at the outbreak of the conflict he joined McCulloch's Company of Texas Rangers and was in service on the frontier of Texas for protection against the Indians. After twelve months of this service he returned to Hunt county and organized the company of which he was elected captain and reported for duty to General Albert Pike in the Indian Territory, and continued in service there during the remainder of the war. He lived in Fort Worth from about 1880 until 1885. In 1881 he made a trip to Jones county, and in 1885 moved there permanently, where he is now engaged in the mercantile business at McCamant, the postoffice having been named in his honor.

Mr. and Mrs. Day have one child, Delia. The Day home is one of

the beautiful residences of Ballinger, located on Broadway near the corner of Phillips street.

DR. WALTER WEBER FOWLER is one of the pioneer physicians of both Runnels and Concho counties, and he is well known in the professional life of this community. He was born in Pulaski, Tennessee, and he was reared and lived there until eighteen years of age, coming in the later seventies to Texas and to Spring Hill in Navarro county, where he was employed in the store of T. P. Sparks, now a prominent retired merchant of Waco. It was while employed in that store that he decided to take up the study of medicine, and entering the medical department of Vanderbilt University at Nashville, he graduated with its class of 1882, and at once began the practice of his chosen profession at Dawson in Navarro county, his field until 1885, and he then located at Paint Rock in Concho county, then on the western frontier. There Dr. Fowler experienced a pioneer physician's life, making the long drives to far distant cattle camps and ranches, and leaving there in 1892 he came to Ballinger, where he has ever since been actively engaged in the practice of medicine, now doing an exclusively family practice. He is a member of the County, State and American Medical Associations, and he stands in the front rank of his profession. As a citizen of Ballinger he has been identified with all the movements that make for a better town and community, and he is a former trustee of the Ballinger Independent school district.

Dr. Fowler takes pride in and derives much pleasure and profit from his valuable farm of over twelve hundred acres six miles south of Ballinger, on the Paint Rock road. It is one of the best farms in all Runnels county, and produces splendid crops of cotton and the various other products grown in this section. His wife was before marriage Ida Hartin, born at Magnolia, Arkansas, and who died in Ballinger in 1897, the mother of four children, Leslie C., Tom, Mabel and Clyde.

THOMAS J. STOCKS has passed through the trying experiences of pioneer life and stands among the few courageous ones who withstood its many hardships, its panics, its drouth and its general hard times and have lived to see a substantial and wealthy city and county grow from a former wilderness. The town of Ballinger, which had been selected for the county seat, was opened for settlement by a public sale of lots on June 29, 1886. Mr. Stocks had arrived on the 25th, four days previously, and he took part in the beginning as well as the subsequent history of Ballinger. For several years he was in the lumber business, the most of the time being yardman for the Cameron Lumber Company, and he was also for a time engaged in the cattle business. In 1894 he was elected the treasurer of Runnels county, and he served two terms in that office, and in 1908 he was returned to that office and is its present incumbent. He has large property interests in Ballinger, conspicuous among which is the Stocks Hotel, of which he is the proprietor.

Mr. Stocks was born and reared in LaFayette county, Mississippi,

born on the 7th of June, 1849, and his home was there until in 1870 he came to Bell county, Texas. After five years there he moved to Lampasas, and in June of 1886 he came to Runnels county. While living in Bell county he was married to Miss Sarah Elizabeth Wright, a childhood companion back in his native county in Mississippi, and they have become the parents of eight children: Mrs. Callie Lewin, Joe Stocks, Mrs. Ada Brooks, Thomas Stocks Jr., Mrs. Lela Sparks and Boyd, Mildred and Roscoe Stocks.

#### TOM GREEN COUNTY

Tom Green county, as originally created by act of the legislature March 13, 1874, was an immense territory extending from the western limits of Runnels and Concho counties to the Pecos river. A dozen counties have since been carved from this area, some of which are still unorganized, the last being Reagan county, which was created and organized in 1903.

The act creating Tom Green county in 1874 named commissioners who were to meet in the town of Ben Ficklen and provide for an election of county officials and choice of a county seat. Ben Ficklen was to be the county seat until another site was regularly chosen. This old settlement was a little below the confluence of the south and middle forks of the Concho river.

About 1870 Fort Concho was established at the forks of the north and south branches of the Concho river. In 1858 the "Overland Pacific Mail" had been inaugurated, a stage line extending from St. Louis, through Fort Smith, Ark., Sherman, Tex., and through northern and western Texas, to the Rio Grande, passing through what is now Tom Green county. The stage line from San Antonio originally met this line beyond the Pecos, and after the Civil war another route was opened, leading northwest from San Antonio through Boerne, Fredericksburg, Mason, Menardville, on to a junction with the northern trail at Fort Concho, and thence west and southwest to the Rio Grande.

A Texas map of 1874 indicates the site of Fort Concho, and south of it "Ben Ficklen's stage station," while a little to the east was "Bismarck." The only other locality in the county shown on this map was "Stone's rancho," to the north of Fort Concho.

The military post and the overland stage route preceded permanent settlement by some years. Along these roads and around the military posts were settled a number of frontiersmen and stockmen. But the decade of the '70's was nearly over before the great range was despoiled of its buffalo and the Indians subjugated, and even then the only inhabitants were the owners and attendants of the domestic herds that grazed on the pastures.

In 1880, when Tom Green comprised an area of 12,500 square miles, or the size of fourteen counties like Tarrant, its population was 3,615 (645 negroes). In 1890, when it still contained several counties since detached, the population was 5,152. In 1900, when Reagan county was

included, the population was 6,804. At the last census, 1910, the county with the present limits has a population of 17,882.

In 1877 the only postoffices in the limits of the present county were at Ben Ficklen, which was still the county seat, and at Fort Concho. Later San Angelo was founded, and became the county seat, which claimed a population of about 800 in 1882, while Ben Ficklen had half that number.

In 1903 the assessed values of property in Tom Green county were \$4,260,695, and in 1909, \$8,780,625.

In September, 1888, San Angelo became the western terminus of the G. C. & S. F. Railroad. During 1910 this road has been extended to Sterling City. The "Orient" Railroad has recently been completed to San Angelo, which is now the southern terminus of that proposed trans-continental line.

Since 1888, therefore, San Angelo has been the shipping point for an immense territory as far west as the Pecos valley. As a result this city has for a number of years been the metropolis of this part of Texas, and has prospered both from its commercial advantages and as a health resort in the highlands. In 1890 its population was 2,615; at the census of 1910 the enumeration was 10,321.

#### HOWARD COUNTY

Howard county was created from the Bexar district during the '70's, but a county government was not organized until June 15, 1882. Its total population at the census of 1880 was only 50. Cattlemen and buffalo hunters had taken temporary possession, and Big Springs, on account of the abundance of water, had long been an oasis in these western plains. A map of Texas in 1874 indicates the springs as one of the conspicuous geographical points in the country.

During 1881 the large army of railroad builders passed through the county, laying the track of the T. & P. Railroad, and the Springs were as useful to the railroad as they had been to the buffalo and cattle. With the railroad came permanent settlement, stock ranches and farms were established for miles along the right of way, and from that time civilization began to develop its various institutions and activities.

By 1890 the population of the county was 1,210; it doubled during the next decade, being 2,528 in 1900; and at the last census, in 1910, was 8,881. In 1900 the population of Big Springs was 1,255. The assessed value of taxable property in 1903 was \$2,422,420, and in 1909, \$4,797,940.

Mr. James T. Brooks, secretary of the Big Springs Commercial Club, contributes the following sketch of the city and vicinity:

#### BIG SPRINGS

The Texas & Pacific Railway was completed and ran its first train into Howard county, Texas, in 1881, and the town of Big Springs was laid out and made a division point on the road.

At that time, and even at this time, Big Springs possessed an advantage over all other points along the western part of the T. & P., viz., plenty of good water. It is probably due to the excellent water that Big Springs was made a division point on the Texas & Pacific Railway.

About one and one-half miles south of the city we find the famous Big Springs. Their like are not to be found in West Texas and are seldom found in the East. The railroad company has always used these springs as a lease for the water supply, and for a number of years they furnished water for the city.

When the Big Springs Water Company was organized it began to sink deep wells near the Big Springs and found an abundance of good water, and these wells now furnish the water supply for Big Springs, a city of five thousand inhabitants. The wells are on an elevation above the city, which enables the water to be brought into town by gravitation.

In 1881 Big Springs was a village of tents and adobe huts. There was nothing to support the town at that time except the railroad interests and the scattering ranches, but as the railway company began to enlarge its machine shops and the ranches became more numerous, the little village began a steady growth that has continued until this time.

When in 1906 the railway company began to build its new shops, that cost \$500,000, and the farmers began to crowd out the ranchmen and it was demonstrated that this was a farming country, Big Springs experienced the only boom that it has ever had. In two years it increased in population from 2,000 inhabitants to 5,000 inhabitants. The village of 1881 that had witnessed the town being "shot up" by the cowboys had grown into a business center.

Many of the old timers of Big Springs have moved to other parts of the state and could doubtless call to mind many interesting incidents of the early days. One of the early settlers of Big Springs was Mr. Sam H. Cowan, who now lives in Fort Worth and has come into national prominence as an attorney.

It was in Big Springs that he started as a young lawyer. He made his reputation while district attorney prosecuting cattle thieves. Big Springs has always watched his course with pride.

The city was not incorporated until in April, 1907, hence there was much public improvement that had been neglected, but in the years since it has become incorporated there has been much improvement and we have begun to take on a city appearance.

The Commercial Club of Big Springs has a membership of 150, and they are all alive and awake to everything that will help the city and surrounding country.

As was stated above, the Texas & Pacific Railway shops are located here. These shops are modern and up-to-date in every respect. They are said to be the finest on the T. & P. west of Marshall. The railroad interest gives a stability to the city that few western towns have. The monthly pay roll amounts to \$45,000. At this time there is good prospect of our getting a road north, also one south to San Angelo.



The mercantile interests of the city are strong and prosperous. It can be truthfully said that there cannot be found in the state another town the size of Big Springs that has stronger banks and business houses. During the panic of 1907 the banks never were affected. Depositors' checks were always paid upon presentation.

The public buildings of the city will compare favorably with those of any western town. The new court house that has just been completed is the pride of the city. The jail that is in course of construction is to be modern and up-to-date in every particular. The public school building is large and conveniently arranged, and we are proud of our public school.

Nearly all of the fraternal orders are represented in Big Springs. The Masonic lodge is very strong. It owns its building and the building can safely be estimated to be worth \$30,000. They have a very fine hall. The Knights of Pythias, Odd Fellows and Woodmen of the World have strong organizations. The Woodmen of the World have a membership of 350.

In the last three years the population of Howard county, outside of the city, has increased from 1,000 to 7,000. Ranchmen have given way to farmers, and today wagon loads of cotton, corn and maize are familiar street scenes.

The soil of Howard county is very fertile and is well adapted to the growth of cotton, Milo maize, Kaffir corn, and all kinds of fruits. The soil is underlaid with a subsoil of clay that holds the moisture and stores it for the growing crops. It has been demonstrated that good crops can be grown with less rain in West Texas than in any part of the United States. It has been demonstrated that the Big Springs country is the home of the farmers and is destined to be a farming country.

REUBEN B. ZINN, of Big Springs, was born in Pontotoc county, Mississippi, in 1845. For the last quarter of a century he has been a resident of Big Springs, having come to this town soon after it was founded. His arrival here was on March 1, 1883. His advent brought a member of the surveying profession to this vicinity, and he was best known for a number of years as a surveyor. He was county and district surveyor at a time when ten counties, including Howard, were in this district. Of late years Mr. Zinn has given most of his attention to the real estate business, and it is needless to say there is none more familiar with the Big Springs country and Western Texas generally than he.

His father was a minister of the Cumberland Presbyterian church and an educator as well as a theologian. Rev. J. A. Zinn and his wife, Sarah Anne (Ragland), came to Texas in 1849, locating about fourteen miles from Jefferson. About 1852 he moved to Daingerfield, where he became president of Daingerfield College. After some years he left this position, at the solicitation of citizens of Grayson county, and established a private college at Kentuckytown in that county. Later he was president of Larisa College in Cherokee county. At the same time Dr. Yoakum was principal in that college, and became president after Rev. Zinn resigned. Dr.





*Ruben B. Zinn*



Yoakum was the father of B. F. Yoakum, the railroad magnate, and the Yoakum boys and Reuben B. Zinn were schoolmates together in that school.

Some time before the war the Zinn family located at the White settlement in Tarrant county, at the mouth of Silver creek. Reuben B. Zinn was about fifteen years old then, and had attended his father's schools and laid the foundation of a good education. With the breaking out of the war he and his two brothers and his father all enlisted in the Confederate service. They were in Company K, Seventh Texas Cavalry, in General Tom Green's brigade. This regiment was in the expedition to New Mexico during the first year of the war, and after the return to Texas was engaged in the Trans-Mississippi department in Texas, Louisiana and Arkansas. Rev. Zinn was chaplain of the regiment during the war.

The family lived in LaFayette and Cass counties, Missouri, for two years after the war, then returned to Tarrant county, and before coming to Big Springs in 1883, Reuben B. lived at Waco and also at Mineral Wells.

Mr. Zinn married Miss Mary E. Moon and there were six children of this marriage, two of whom are living. The son is James Samuel, and the daughter, Mrs. Tula Ann Baggett, whose husband was formerly sheriff of Howard county. Mr. Zinn is a member of the Methodist church.

JOHN I. McDOWELL, the president of the First National Bank at Big Springs, came to this part of Texas in 1883, two years after the Texas & Pacific Railroad was built through. At that time and for some years later the only shipments from the railroad stations for hundreds of miles through Western Texas were cattle and their products, and the freight put off at these stations consisted largely of the supplies and machinery for use on the ranches.

During the period when Howard and the adjacent counties were under the dominion of the range cattle industry, the McDowell brothers, John I. and L. S., were among the most successful and energetic of the ranchmen, their interests being principally confined to the sheep business. With the settlement of the country and the change of conditions, Mr. McDowell became one of the active citizens of Big Springs. The bank of which he is president is the oldest institution of the kind in the county, having been established in 1890. Those who experienced life in Western Texas during the last two decades know that the early nineties were times of stress and hardship, marked by financial panic and drouth and conditions that made the existence of new settlers almost beyond endurance. Under such circumstances it is a remarkable record that the First National Bank of Big Springs has stood all the tests and now ranks as one of the most solid and influential banking institutions of Western Texas. Its capital stock is \$50,000, its surplus and profits are largely in excess of \$150,000, and it is also a United States depository. The success of the bank is largely due to the vigorous banking methods which have been followed. For many years no officer, director nor even a shareholder has ever been allowed to borrow a dollar of the bank's money, all of its loanable funds being available only for those who may be properly considered customers. The extent of its deposits, averaging nearly half a million dollars in 1909, indicates the confidence of the community in the stability of the bank.

As the active managing officer of the bank, Mr. McDowell has won a large success in the business world, though his activities have extended beyond the immediate sphere of the bank into many matters of practical citizenship which have promoted the welfare of his home town. With the breaking up of the big ranches and the development of a farming community, he has been one who has shown a progressive attitude toward the new era, and is as closely identified with the twentieth century period of Western Texas as formerly when all this region was in the open range.

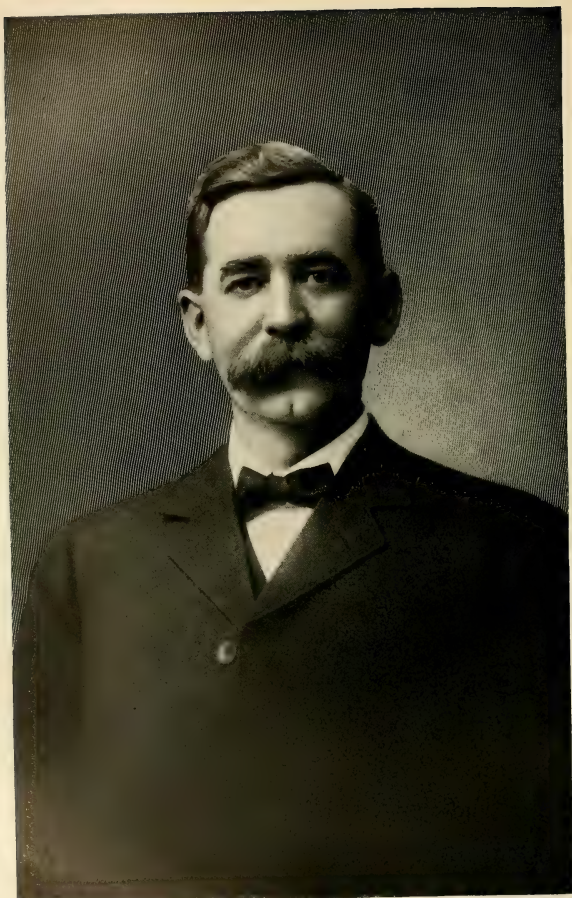
Mr. McDowell is an Ohioan, having been born, reared and educated at Ashland, and from there moved to Dallas, Texas, in 1877. Dallas was then practically on the frontier, but two years later he moved into the unsettled regions of what would now be Central Texas, to San Saba county, and was engaged in the stock business there until he moved to Howard county in 1883. Mrs. McDowell before her marriage was Miss Libbie Estill, a native of Virginia, where the family name is a familiar one.

G. L. BROWN.—The president of the West Texas National Bank at Big Springs is G. L. Brown. Like many other prominent business men of this region he laid the foundation for his success in the live-stock business, and is still known as a leading cattleman. He was born in that part of Texas which is described by the title of this work, and both he and his father before him deserve to be classed among the pioneers of Western Texas.

His father, W. F. Brown, came to Texas in 1845, and has been a resident throughout the period of Texas statehood. At the age of eighty-nine he is, at this writing, still living, at his home in Brownwood, one of the honored and aged pioneers. One of his sons, William Brown, was killed by the Indians near the present town of Robert Lee in Coke county in 1875. He was with a party engaged in the pursuit of a band of Indians who had made a raid in Brown county. Cabe Brown, another son, also deceased, was also a member at different times of these frontier scouting expeditions, and G. L. Brown also had similar experiences which entitled him to a place among the frontier fighters of the pioneer times of West Texas.

G. L. Brown was born in Brown county near Brownwood in 1861. His earliest associations were with ranch life, and he was a cowboy almost as soon as he could ride a horse. In 1879 he and his brother Cabe established headquarters, with a bunch of cattle, near the sources of the Concho river, in what are now Mitchell and Sterling counties (then unorganized). This vicinity has been his home ever since. There was no settlement at Big Springs at that time, although the springs attracted several cattle outfits, who often camped there. With the building of the railroad in 1881 a station was established, and among the first permanent residents of the town was Mr. Brown. He has very extensive interests in the cattle business, being owner of two ranches in Howard county, and another, the largest, being in Ector county, near Odessa. The West Texas National Bank, of which he is president, was established in 1903. Mr. Brown is a Royal Arch Mason and an Odd Fellow. Mrs. Brown before her marriage was Miss Eddie Lee. She was born in Lampasas county. Their three children are Burton, Ethel and Eula.





Charles L. Alderman

CHARLES L. ALDERMAN.—When consideration is given to the progressiveness and constructive ability of the "captains of industry" in the great state of Texas and when cognizance is given to the manifold channels along which their splendid energies have been directed, it can not be a matter of astonishment that the fine Lone Star commonwealth has so rapidly forged to the front along industrial, commercial and civic lines. An idea of the diversity of interests represented in central and western Texas is to be gained from a perusal of the various descriptive and biographical sketches appearing within the pages of this work, and among those who have done much to accelerate the march of development and progress is Charles L. Alderman, one of the most public-spirited and influential business men and most honored citizens of Big Springs, the attractive and thriving county seat of Howard county. The family of which he is a member has been most prominently and potently identified with the upbuilding of Big Springs and with the development of the admirable resources of the county, and thus there is all of propriety in offering to those who have thus conserved advancement special recognition in this publication.

Charles L. Alderman, secretary and general manager of the Big Springs Water Company, and also of the Western Telephone Company, whose headquarters likewise are maintained in Big Springs, claims the old Buckeye state as the place of his nativity, and is a scion of one of its sterling pioneer families. He was born at Joy, Morgan county, Ohio, on the 23d of August, 1862, and is a son of Arza and Lois (Wheeler) Alderman, both of whom were born in the state of Ohio. They now reside in McConnell, Ohio, but pass a portion of each year in Big Springs, Texas, where the family have extensive interests. The Alderman family was founded in Ohio in 1808, when its first representatives there moved from New York state and settled in Morgan county, where they numbered themselves among the pioneers. With the civic and material development and upbuilding of that section the name has been most prominently linked. Arza Alderman was for many years one of the prominent and influential citizens of Morgan county, and was a well known banker at McConnelsville, that county, for a long period. He was president and a director of the First National Bank of McConnelsville, which was one of the first one hundred national banks established in the United States.

In 1884, while on a tour of prospecting and investigation in the west and southwest, Arza Alderman noted the favorable location of Big Springs, Texas, and he was particularly impressed with the quality of the pure, soft water in the springs two miles south of the town. Soon afterward he showed his confidence and his mature judgment by purchasing a large tract of land in Howard county, including that on which the springs are located. A few years after this important investment had been made by their honored father the two sons, Charles L. and Arza Dale, took up permanent residence at Big Springs, with whose every interest they have since been identified. Concerning the association of Charles L. Alderman with business and civic affairs in this section more definite mention will be made in succeeding paragraphs of this article.

Charles L. Alderman was reared to maturity in Morgan county, Ohio, to whose excellent public schools he is indebted for his early educational discipline, which included a course in the high school at McConnelsville. At the age of twenty-four years he was chosen cashier of the

Citizens' National Bank in that place, and of this position he continued incumbent until his removal to Big Springs, Texas, in 1895. He came to this city to assist in the construction of the Big Springs water works, and he and other members of the family are now the principal stockholders in the Big Springs Water Company, of which he is secretary and general manager. No city in the state has a purer or more abundant supply of water. It was the presence of the springs in this vicinity that first attracted settlers to this point, and it is due to the enterprise and initiative of the Alderman family that the admirable water system was given to Big Springs. The sources of the water supply are not the springs themselves, but recourse is had to wells that tap the veins from which the water reaches the springs. By reason of this fact the water supplied to the city is purer and clearer than that to be secured directly from the springs at the surface, as there is no possible means of contamination. The reservoir is one hundred and eighty-five feet above the ground level of the city, and by this means is given a pressure varying from fifty to eighty pounds to the square inch.

In 1903 Charles L. Alderman became one of the organizers and incorporators of the Western Telephone Company, which installed exchanges at Big Springs, Stanton, Midland and Roscoe, and which has established toll lines from Odessa to Abilene, and from Big Springs to Garden City, Gail and Lamesa. This company, giving one of the most valuable public-utility services in this part of the state, strung the first copper wire circuits and built the first standard exchanges and toll lines in western Texas, thus affording facilities that have had much influence in furthering progress along commercial lines, to say nothing of the convenience and domestic value of the service. Of this important company Mr. Alderman is secretary and general manager, as has already been noted. His progressive ideas, liberality and high civic ideals have been potent influences in connection with the social and industrial development of this section of the state, and it is largely due to the interposition of the Alderman family that Big Springs has become one of the splendid little cities of the Lone Star commonwealth. Charles L. Alderman donated the first legally established road in Howard county, and every enterprise and measure that has tended to foster the best interests of his home city and county has enlisted his zealous support. He was one of the first to fence the farming and grazing lands of the county, where he has a valuable landed estate, besides being the owner of much valuable realty, both improved and unimproved, in Big Springs.

In politics Mr. Alderman gives his allegiance to the Democratic party, but he has had no predilection for the honors or emoluments of public office. He and his wife hold membership in the Methodist Episcopal church. In the Masonic fraternity Mr. Alderman is one of the appreciative and prominent representatives in Texas, as is measurably indicated by the fact that he has been granted the ultimate and honorary thirty-third degree in the Ancient Accepted Scottish Rite, in which his affiliation is with Dallas Consistory. He has shown the deepest interest in the work of all departments of the time-honored fraternity, is a past officer in all of the local bodies of the York Rite and has represented his lodge and chapter in the grand lodge and grand chapter of the state, in which latter he is at the present time (1910) incumbent of the office of grand king and in line of succession for the office of grand high priest.



He is a charter member of Dallas Consistory, of Sublime Princes of the Royal Secret, and in the same city is identified with Hella Temple, Ancient Arabic Order of the Nobles of the Mystic Shrine; the Royal Order of Scotland; and St. Mark's Conclave, Order of the Red Cross of Constantine. He was a member of the committee that was primarily instrumental in securing the erection of the Masonic Temple in Big Spring,—one of the finest and most complete of the kind in the entire state.

At McConnelsville, Ohio, on the 22d of November, 1882, was solemnized the marriage of Charles L. Alderman to Miss Lizzie M. Stanbery, who was born and reared in that state, and they are the parents of five children,—Stanbery, Blanche, Carmen Sylva, Justus and Maydelle, all of whom were born in Ohio except Maydelle, who is a native of Big Springs. The family is prominent in the best social life of the community, and the home is a center of refined and gracious hospitality.

GEORGE D. LEE is the mayor of Big Springs, being the first to hold that office after the incorporation of the city in 1906, and having been honored by re-election in the municipal election of 1908. Mr. Lee takes much pride in the progress of Big Springs since he became the executive head of the city, and it is very gratifying that so many improvements have been inaugurated during his administration. Previous to the time it became a city Big Springs lacked many of the public improvements which have since been pointed to with much pride by the citizens. The construction of a two-story, fireproof stone city hall and fire station, the extension of the water works, the purchase of the first combination auto fire engine sold in the state of Texas, the grading of the streets, and other public works have brought many changes in the appearance and convenience of the city. These changes, though the result of public spirit and enterprise, have likewise reacted for increased prosperity in the city. This is seen in many new and handsome business blocks along Main street and in the number of new residences, all indicating a substantial volume of new business and population that have found a center at this point. The mayor has been an active worker in behalf of all these improvements, and the citizens express thorough satisfaction in their choice for a municipal head.

Mr. Lee came to Big Springs as a railroad man. He was born in Weedsport, Cayuga county, New York, and was reared and educated at Clyde, Ohio. He came west while still young, and after learning telegraphy found a position as night operator in the Santa Fe railway station at Walton, Kansas. For seven years he was operator and train dispatcher for that road in Kansas and Colorado, and in 1889 came to Big Springs as train dispatcher for the Texas and Pacific Railway. Later he was promoted to chief train dispatcher, and held that position until his resignation in 1906 to engage in the general insurance business. He is a prominent Odd Fellow and Mason, being a Knight Templar and Shriner and secretary of Big Springs Chapter, No. 178, R. A. M. He has four children: Bernice E., Myrle F., Naomi E. and Hazel P.

ELLIS DOUTHIT has been an active member of the bar of West Texas since 1891, when he established himself at Big Springs. He is a successful lawyer, and a man of high standing both professionally and personally. In 1896 he had the honor of succeeding the Hon. H. Cowan

to the office of district attorney, and he made a record during his four years' incumbency of that office. Mr. Cowan, his predecessor, is one of the distinguished Texans of the present time, and Mr. Douthit, previous to his election as district attorney, had been associated in practice with him.

Mr. Douthit was born in Lexington, Missouri, but has lived in Western Texas almost continuously since 1883, when the family home was established in Sweetwater. Between 1907 and 1909 he had a temporary residence in southern California. His higher education was obtained in the University of Texas, where he studied law and was graduated from the law department with the class of 1891. In Masonry he is a Knight Templar, a Shriner, and a thirty-second degree Scottish Rite. In 1910 he moved from Big Springs to Sweetwater, where he is an attorney for the Texas Pacific and the Santa Fe Railroad Companies.

On January 12, 1898, Mr. Douthit married Miss Mary Kennedy, from Colorado, Texas, and their three children are Mary E., Helen F. and Ellis K.

JOHN D. BIRDWELL, of Big Springs, is a pioneer West Texan, including in his many experiences life as a ranger, sheriff, cattleman, banker and property owner. His life began in Walker county, Texas, where he was born October 1, 1848. His father's career was even more remarkable than his own from an historical standpoint. William Birdwell (father) was born in Tennessee, February 15, 1808. That state was also the birthplace of Sam Houston, and perhaps for this reason or for some other equally natural he came to Texas in 1833 and during the next three years followed the fortunes of the struggling Texans in their battles for independence from Mexico. He was both friend and associate of Sam Houston, and at a later date was a soldier of the United States in the war against Mexico.

For the first twenty years of his life John D. Birdwell lived in his native county, and then went to what was then the frontier, where for three years he pursued the variable career of the cowboy. His work was mainly in Southwest Texas, engaged in rounding up cattle for the trails leading to the north. His next adventure was as hotel clerk and stage agent at Waco, and he then lived for a while in Fort Worth when that town was just beginning to grow in population and notoriety because of the coming of the railroad.

Before the herds of buffalo were swept from the great plains of Texas, Mr. Birdwell played a part in their extermination. He left Fort Worth, February 14, 1877, on a buffalo hunt which took him to Blanco canyon, at the headwaters of the Brazos. This was an industry that engaged hundreds about that time, though it did not last long. His expedition after buffaloes led him to old Fort Griffin, where he was engaged as town marshal during the summer of 1880. In the fall of 1878 he enlisted in the ranger service and helped patrol the frontier until 1880. His record as a ranger has given him high esteem among that body of public servants, and it with extreme pleasure that he recalls that period of his life.

Mr. Birdwell became a resident of Big Springs in the fall of 1880, about the time the railroad was built and the town started. After being engaged in the cattle business for a few years he was elected, in 1886, sheriff of Howard county. That office was a difficult one at the time,





*Jim Roberts*

since Howard county was then the judicial center for a number of unorganized counties (Glasscock, Borden, Dawson, Terry, Yoakum and Lynn), and the sheriff's jurisdiction extended over all this territory. Also, the duties of tax collector were at the time combined with those of sheriff, and in the performance of these double duties the sheriff-collector spent six arduous years in office. There were placed to his credit some notable achievements. An example of which that might be mentioned was the capture of a notorious negro, Jim Toots, who had killed Policeman Waller in Fort Worth. For his efficiency and accuracy of accounts as tax collector he received a letter of commendation from the state comptroller.

To hundreds of persons who have traveled up and down the line of the Texas and Pacific, Mr. Birdwell is best known as the former proprietor of the railroad station dining room at Big Springs. This was his principal occupation for nineteen years, until he retired in 1907. He is owner of ranch and town property, and now devotes most of his time to the management of those interests. He is one of the directors of the West Texas National Bank. Mr. Birdwell's home, built without regard for expense and equipped with all modern conveniences, stands on a slightly location at the southeast edge of town. Mrs. Birdwell, his wife, is a native of Tennessee, and her maiden name was Annabelle Green. They have six children: Mrs. Lillian Mills, Annabelle, Dan, Banton, Maydelle and Johnnie. Mr. Birdwell is a thirty-second degree Scottish Rite Mason, a Shriner, and belongs to the Dallas Consistory.

JOHN ROBERTS owned at his death a ranch of about twenty-nine sections in the southeast part of Howard county. He was one of the pioneer cattlemen of Western Texas. His success in business and his extensive dealings and large ownership of lands gave him much prominence as a citizen, and at Big Spring and elsewhere in the state he was held in high esteem.

Mr. Roberts was a resident of West Texas from 1877, in which year he came to Mitchell county. He was a cattleman then as in his late years, having been brought up in that pursuit, his earliest experiences having been connected with the range and trail. Renderbrook Springs was his headquarters for a time, and from 1885 to 1891 his cattle ranged over the plains in the vicinity of Midland. From the latter year his home was at Big Springs. The Roberts ranch is one of the best equipped and improved in this part of the state. Part of it has been converted to farming land, and the orchards and grain fields are both a profitable and pleasing feature to distinguish this from the once monotonous range country.

Mr. Roberts was born in Lamar county, Texas, in 1849. Through his father, whose name was also John, he claims connection with Texas for almost a century. According to all accounts, John Roberts settled near the Red river in the Texas country in 1818. To better appreciate how early a date this is in Texas history from the standpoint of its American settlement, it will only be necessary to state that in 1818 Texas was still a province of Spain, that the Republic of Mexico had not yet been established, that Stephen Austin had not yet begun the colonization of Texas, and that nearly twenty years passed before Texas achieved its independence at San Jacinto. This pioneer Roberts was born in South

Carolina, and after the settlement along the Red River some of his brothers were killed by the Indians.

Mr. Roberts spent his youth at the family home in Lamar county, but at quite an early age began life on the frontier. The cattle business had already assumed importance as the principal industry, and in a few years he accumulated enough to get an independent start, and was a cattleman all his life.

Mr. Roberts married Mrs. Dora (Nunn) Griffin, whose two children by her former marriage, Dochia and Mittie, are now part of the Roberts household at Big Springs. Mrs. Roberts is a native of Alabama, but was reared in Texas. Mr. Roberts was a Mason, being a Knight Templar and Shriner, and also an Odd Fellow. His death occurred on the 28th of September, 1909, and in his passing away Howard county lost one of its most honored pioneers and business men.

ROBERT D. MATTHEWS, the vice-president and manager of the West Texas National Bank at Big Springs, is a native of Huntsville, Alabama, where he was reared and educated. His family had lived for several generations in northern Alabama. His grandfather was an old-time planter of wealth and prominence, and owned many slaves and a large plantation, most of which property disappeared in the ravages of the war.

A youthful ambition of Robert D. Matthews was to live and gain his success in the west. This led him to Texas in 1885. He was book-keeper in a store at Belton, Bell county, for three years. The turn of fortune next opened for him a place as accountant in a mercantile house at Boca del Rama, in Nicaragua. A short time in the uncongenial tropical climate endangered his health, and on his return he spent a year on a ranch on the southern plains.

Mr. Matthews has been a resident of Big Springs since 1892. When he arrived he had but thirty-two dollars, and his first experience was as clerk in a store. He was later one of the organizers of the Matthews-Wolcott Company. Their store was one of the largest and best in Big Springs. As a partner in the business Mr. Matthews applied himself closely to the management and detail work for ten years, and was largely responsible for the success of the firm. Ed. S. Hughes of Abilene was also a member of the firm, and since the retirement of Mr. Matthews and Mr. Wolcott the business has been conducted as the Stokes-Hughes Company, a familiar establishment of the city. Mr. Matthews retired from the mercantile business in 1903 and became one of the organizers of the West Texas National Bank. He was cashier of the bank until January, 1909, and has since been vice-president and one of the active managing officers. The record of the West Texas National has some unusual features of success. Since the bank was established, the stockholders have been paid dividends amounting to fifty-two per cent, in addition to an accumulation of one hundred per cent in surplus and profits. The credit for this showing largely belongs to Mr. Matthews, who has acquitted himself as one of the most successful bankers of the state. He gives the same care and attention to the conduct of the bank as he does to his own private business affairs. Although still a young man he has laid the foundation for a comfortable fortune, which he has earned in straight, legitimate business transactions, void of any phase of speculation. He never takes a step in any direction until the foundation has been laid for it.

Another interesting fact about his business connection with Big Springs is that he bought the first cotton and built the first gin in the town, thus giving a start to a department of agriculture which up to a few years ago was hardly considered feasible in this portion of Western Texas.

Mrs. Matthews, his wife, was before her marriage Miss Sallie Bourland. Her father, Rev. Dr. H. A. Bourland, now of Dallas, is a distinguished minister and educator. There are two children, Frances and Wilbur Matthews.

STEPHEN AUSTIN PENIX became identified with the Howard county bar in 1902. He was a successful young lawyer, and his record as county attorney for nearly four years is still fresh in the memory of Howard county people. His natural equipment and training are ideal for the successful lawyer, and he has built up a gratifying practice. He studied law for the most part in the office of Captain W. M. Veale, of Palo Pinto, where he obtained his admission to the bar in 1901.

Mr. Penix is a Missourian by birth, born in Osceola, St. Clair county, but from the age of three years was reared at Palo Pinto, his parents establishing their home in Palo Pinto county at that time. In addition to attendance at the local schools he was a student in Add-Ran College at Thorp Springs, and began the study of law after his college career.

His marriage connected him with a prominent family of West Texas. Mrs. Penix was formerly Miss Flora A. Lindsey, whose father, J. J. Lindsey, has been actively identified with West Texas affairs for many years and who is practically the father of the thriving town of Lamesa, Dawson county, where he lives. Mr. and Mrs. Penix are both interested in Masonry. The former is a Knight Templar and now (1910) generalissimo of the local commandery, while his wife was worthy matron of the local Eastern Star lodge in 1909, and also occupied the position of grand Esther in the grand lodge of that order in the state during that year. Mr. and Mrs. Penix have two children, Chauncey Edward and Lindsey Stephen.

PETE JOHNSON, of Big Springs, is a native of Scotland. When he was six years old his parents came to America, and he was reared in their home in Luzerne county, Pennsylvania. His life work for many years was in connection with railroading, and he began this when he was young. This finally brought him to the southwest, and he was engaged in the track repair and construction work of the Texas and Pacific Railroad, west of Fort Worth, since 1886. He has made his permanent home in Big Springs since 1897, and has charge of the track department of the ten mile section east and west of this town, five each way from town.

Since becoming a citizen of Howard county, Mr. Johnson has gained a well merited position of influence in public affairs. He was elected and served as county commissioner for two years, from 1906 to 1908, and at the city election of April, 1909, was chosen a member of the city council. His stock ranch three miles east of town is an enterprise in which he takes much pride. His Durham cattle are of the highest grades to be found in West Texas. The ranch contains four sections of fine land, and its value is one of the evidences of his successful career in business. His home is in town, the ranch being worked by tenants. Mr. Johnson is a Knight Templar Mason and Shriner, and his wife is treasurer of the local



order of the Eastern Star. Mrs. Johnson is a native of Fannin county, Texas, her maiden name being Zora Patterson. They have five children in their family, named as follows: Mary, James, Vivian, Ruth and Monroe.

LORIN S. McDOWELL, of Big Springs, was one of the organizers of the First National Bank of Big Springs. His chief success in business is based upon his activities as a stockman. He is reputed to have one of the finest ranches in West Texas, containing from 25,000 to 26,000 acres. This tract is about eighteen miles southwest of Big Spring, and in area is about the same as an entire township. The land extends partly into Glasscock county. Four hundred acres have been taken from the range and devoted to general agriculture, for the production of such crops as can be readily grown in Western Texas, those grown on the McDowell ranch being cotton, grain, milo maize, kaffir corn and other fodder crops. This ranch is one of the best examples of the modern agricultural enterprise which is transforming West Texas, and Mr. McDowell deserves full credit for the energy and intelligent efforts which have been needed to bring about the success of his establishment.

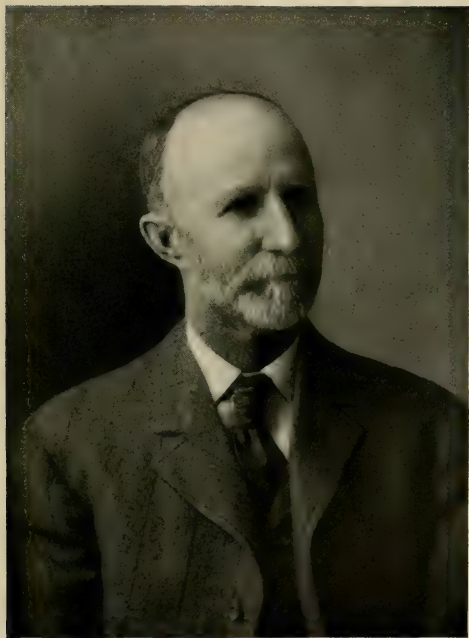
Mr. L. S. McDowell was born at Ashland in Ashland county, Ohio, and came to Texas in 1875. For several years he was in the sheep business in San Saba county, at the time when the sheep industry was the principal live-stock enterprise of southwestern Texas. From 1879 to 1885 his headquarters as a stockman were in Tom Green county, and since then his home has been at Big Springs. His residence on Scurry street is one of the handsomest in this young city. His wife was before marriage Miss Fredonia C. Cunningham, a native of Alabama. They have a son, Lorin S. Jr.

H. CLAY READ, of Big Springs, is a native of Warren county, Kentucky, and was reared and educated there. He is a pioneer citizen of Big Springs, and came here almost coincident with the establishment of the first important industry—the railroad. The railroad shops were built here in 1881, and on his arrival in the following year he became timekeeper and has held that position, with faithful service to the company, for the subsequent twenty-eight years. He is engineer and firemen's timekeeper of the Rio Grande division, between Fort Worth and El Paso, the headquarters of which division are at Big Springs.

During his long residence in Big Springs Mr. Read has been very successful through his faith in local property investments. He has confined them almost entirely to city property, and his name is identified with some of the best known extensions and developments of the city. He is owner of two of the best subdivisions—the Earle Addition, in the west part of town, between the railroad property and the city proper; and the Fairview Heights Addition, comprising a level plain in the south part of town.

The Read family was well known and highly respected in their former home in the Bowling Green section of Kentucky. Mr. Read's father was Theophilus Read, who spent the greater part of his life in Warren county. Another son is also a pioneer citizen of Big Springs. This is Charles D. Read, brother of H. Clay. He first came to Big Springs in 1881, the year in which the town was started. Four years later he returned and has





*L. S. McDowell*



since made this his permanent home. He is best known perhaps as president of the First State Bank of Big Springs, though his chief interests are as a land and cattle owner. He is proprietor of the Iatan ranch, one of the best in this region, located twenty miles east of town, in Howard county.

H. Clay Read married Miss Lillie A. Heckman, of Warren county, Kentucky. Their three children are Earle A., Ethel and Gladys. Mr. Read is a Knight Templar Mason.

JOHN S. CORDILL, proprietor of the J. S. Cordill Storage Company at Big Springs is one of the men of foresight, judgment and enterprise who develop a new country and cause it to realize to the fullest degree all its possibilities. He has believed in as a matter of theory and has advocated practically the development of the Big Springs country as an agricultural center. What he has accomplished in this direction would seem a conclusive test. In partnership with Mr. R. D. Matthews he has produced on their farm two miles northeast of the city, in a recent season, one hundred wagon-loads of Kaffir corn, and seven thousand bundles of cane was raised on nine and one-half acres of land, the former with only one plowing and the latter with no cultivation at all after breaking up the sod and doing the planting. The Kaffir corn was fed to their cattle and brought large profits through that source. There are about four hundred and eighty acres in the farm referred to, two hundred of which are in cultivation. Mr. Cordill also owns a large body of agricultural land in the northwest part of Howard county. In connection with his warehouse business he has bought and shipped a great quantity of corn. This in itself is a remarkable proof of the productiveness of this portion of West Texas, since it was only a few years ago that corn was considered a product that could not be adapted to this soil and climate.

Mr. Cordill was born in Howell county, Missouri, and came to Texas with his parents when he was four years old. He spent his boyhood in Hunt county. For about twenty years he was one of the leading business men of Abilene, engaged principally in the grain and lumber business. When he came to Big Springs in 1902 he established a lumber yard but soon disposed of that in order to give his entire attention to his present business. His storage company maintains a large warehouse for the storage of grain and other products, and carries on a wholesale and retail and shipping business in flour, grain, hay, etc.

Mr. Cordill has a wife and five children. Mrs. Cordill before her marriage was Miss Margaret F. Miller, a native of Franklin county, Texas. Their children are Edgar, Olie, Claudie, May and Quinnie Lee. Mr. Cordill is a member of the Knights of Pythias and Woodmen order.

ISAAC DAVID EDDINS, foreman of the car department of the T. & P. Railroad at Big Springs, is perhaps the only man connected with the construction of the railroad through Western Texas who still lives in Big Springs. He was here before there was a house on the site, the springs alone giving distinction to the locality. It was the presence of the springs, with their ample water supply, which caused this to be made a division point of the railroad.

Mr. Eddins has had a varied and interesting life. Born at Pineapple, Wilcox county, Alabama, January 28, 1846, he was a boy when the war

broke out, and as such he joined the Seventh Alabama Cavalry, his officers being Captain Scarborough, Colonel Hodson and Brigadier General Clanton, the regiment being attached to Forrest's cavalry. His service was in Florida, at Fort Morgan (Mobile), Devil's River, in Mississippi, Tennessee and northern Alabama, and finally the close of the war found him at Columbus, Georgia.

At Montgomery, Alabama, he learned the trade of carriage and coach carpenter, and it is in this line of mechanical workmanship that he has attained his greatest skill and the success which is the reward of industry. He engaged his skill in railroad service at an early age. His first home in Texas was at Dallas, from which city he followed the progress of the Texas and Pacific Railroad westward. After the road was completed to Fort Worth in 1876, he was employed in the car shops there. The shops were located for a time at Weatherford, then again at Fort Worth, and he lived at both these points. When the extension of the railroad west from Weatherford began, Mr. Eddins was chosen by H. H. Sessions, then master car builder, as foreman of the floating repair gang which followed construction work and did all the repairing of construction cars, machinery, etc.

It was in this manner that he reached Big Springs early in 1881, before the springs which had long been a favorite camping ground of the cattle outfits had any permanent signs of settlement or improvement. He remained in charge of his crew until the road was completed beyond this point, and then, this having been selected as a division point and the shops being established here, he was given a permanent position at this point. He brought his family to Big Springs in September, 1881, and since then has lived here, has given faithful service to the railroad company, and has watched Big Springs grow from an oasis in the Staked Plains to a prosperous and flourishing city. He was the first justice of the peace to hold court in Howard county, this being in 1883, where Big Springs now stands. He is foreman of the car department in the shops, and besides having charge of all repairs and rebuilding of car equipment and machinery, he and his force pick up the wrecks along the line of the Rio Grande division.

Mr. Eddins is a member of the Masonic fraternity and the Knights of Honor. He has three children, all by his first wife, whose maiden name was Mary Spears. She was the mother of these children, Mrs. Minnie Hadlock, Roy and Hamp, and Charlie, Laura, Estalena and Olive, deceased. Hamp is a machinist on the battleship Tennessee. Roy, now living in Big Springs, was formerly ship's carpenter on the U. S. ship Marblehead. After the death of his first wife Mr. Eddins married Mrs. Bettie Brown, his present wife.

WILLIAM H. VAUGHAN, of Big Springs, is now a retired citizen of that town, but in his past life both here and elsewhere his career and experiences entitle him to much distinction. As one of the oldest living practical telegraphers in the United States, as a pioneer railroad man who was at the "springs" before the railroad came and established the station since called Big Springs, and as an active and public-spirited citizen, he commands the esteem and respect of all men.

He was born at Hanover, the seat of Dartmouth College, in New Hampshire, in 1841. When he was ten years old he began to learn telegraph-

raphy, which was then a comparatively new art, and only a few in the whole country were skilled in it. He came west before the war and became a telegrapher for the Chicago and Alton Railroad at Wilmington, Will county, Illinois. That was his home for about twenty years. One of the events of the time which he recalls; and which is interesting as giving him a connection with the past which is now possessed only by a few men, was the debate between Lincoln and Douglas at Aurora, which he heard.

Perhaps no one is more familiar with the successive stages of railroad building in North Texas than Mr. Vaughan. He became train-master at Houston for the Houston and Texas Central Railway in 1871. That road was then under construction towards Dallas, and he recalls when the first train was sent into Dallas. Soon afterward he engaged with the T. & P. Railroad, which was constructed between Dallas and Fort Worth in 1875 and 1876, and several years later was pushed on toward El Paso. He was with the advance guard of railroad men who arrived at Big Springs in 1880, nearly a year before the tracks were laid at this point. He has occupied various positions of responsibility with the transportation department of the railroad, including chief clerk to the superintendent, but since 1906 has been retired from active service. All the years he has manifested a keen interest in the progress of his home town, and in civic affairs has contributed his services whenever needed.

Mr. Vaughan was the founder of the Masonic order in its various branches in Big Springs. In proportion to its population, Big Springs perhaps leads all other Texas cities in the numerical strength of all the higher Masonic degrees, hence it was no small honor to have been chiefly responsible for the organization and institution of these various bodies. He is himself connected with the Royal Arch and Knights Templar degrees and with the Mystic Shrine. He was the first worshipful master of Stake Plains lodge, No. 598, was the first high priest of the chapter, and the second eminent commander of the commandery, his son Frank having been the first commander.

Mr. Vaughan was married at Wilmington, Illinois, to Miss Mary A. Mitchell. She was born and reared there. They have four children, Mrs. Carrie Jones, Frank O., Walter M. and Mrs. Lulu Leeper.

DR. JOHN H. HURT settled at Big Springs in 1887, at a time when the surrounding country was still the frontier, and when the doctor who attended the ills of the country had to travel great distances and endure all the hardships which have been recounted so often in connection with the lives of pioneer physicians. He has gone over a hundred miles to visit a patient. Such experiences brought him in close contact and friendship with the cattlemen who were then the principal residents of this country, and he still retains the friendship of many old-time ranchmen, who have complete confidence in his professional skill and personal character. In later years, with the settlement and development of the country, his practice has assumed more of the character of that of the city doctor. He has been local surgeon for the Texas and Pacific Railway since 1895. He is a member of the State and the American Medical Associations.

Dr. Hurt was born in Warren county, Kentucky, near Bowling Green, in 1858. His ancestors had lived there for several generations, and he was reared and educated there in accordance with the best tradi-

tions of the family. He was a student in old Warren College (now Ogden College), a notable institution of Kentucky. His professional education was obtained at Vanderbilt University. After his graduation from the medical department of that university with the class of 1880, he began practice in his home county, and continued there until he came to Big Springs in 1887.

Dr. Hurt's wife was formerly Miss Lillie Read, who was born in the same county of Kentucky. Her brothers, Charles D. and H. Clay Read, are successful and well known residents of Big Springs, having come here almost at the beginning of the town and have become wealthy through cattle and land investments. Dr. and Mrs. Hurt have four children: Mrs. Readie Thomas (wife of Dr. John B. Thomas, of Midland, Tex.); Miss Lillian, John Clifford and Harry. Dr. Hurt is a Royal Arch Mason.

DR. WILLIAM C. BARNETT.—The name Barnett is associated at Big Springs and in West Texas both with the profession of medicine and also prominently with state politics. Two physicians, father and son, have carried on their profession in Big Springs since the former located here in 1886. The late Dr. J. W. Barnett, who died, much lamented, at Big Springs January 23, 1903, was a notable character in public affairs for many years. He was born in Mississippi, was educated in medical colleges in New Orleans and New York, and after practicing a few years in Arkansas came to Texas in 1867. From Grayson county, his first place of residence, he moved in 1869 to Weatherford, in Parker county, at a time when that town was on the frontier line of development in Western Texas. Raids by the Indians occurred in this county after he had established here as a physician. Through the following years a wide practice over a wide extent of country brought him into intimate association with the people, and it was on this account largely that he was drawn into the political affairs of the period. He was elected and served as a member of the state legislature from Parker county for three terms, and was also a member of the state constitutional convention in 1875. A man of independent thought and action, he fearlessly took up the cause of political reforms. He became a member of the Greenback party, and notwithstanding the power of the regular Democratic party his personal worth and popularity were sufficient to achieve his election on that party ticket to the state legislature. However, in his subsequent campaign for congress on the same ticket he was defeated by the late S. W. T. Lanham, who was governor of the state, 1905-06.

The late Dr. Barnett took part actively in all the pioneer movements leading to the development of West Texas. He rode on the first train that went into Weatherford on the completion of the T. & P. Railroad from Fort Worth westward to that point. In 1881 he moved from the county seat to a ranch on Bear Creek in Parker county, and in 1886 came to Big Springs, where he carried on a successful practice until his death. His wife, Virginia (Allen) Barnett, a native of Kentucky, is still living, a resident of Big Springs.

Dr. William C. Barnett, a son of the pioneer physician above mentioned, and the present representative of the medical profession at Big Springs, was born at Weatherford in 1871. He was reared in Parker county and, after the age of fifteen, in Big Springs. His equipment for his profession was obtained mainly in the St. Louis College of Physicians

and Surgeons. After graduating with the class of 1893, he began practice at Big Springs. He has lived here during the period of greatest development of the town, and his practice and standing have increased correspondingly. In his general medical practice he has given no attention to surgery, but he has achieved success in the treatment of tubercular diseases, of which he began making special study and investigation in 1902.

Dr. Barnett has also had some experience in local politics, having served four years as treasurer of Howard county. His fraternal relations are with the Masons and other orders. He has attained to the Knight Templar degrees in Masonry. His family consists of his wife and four children. Mrs. Barnett bore the maiden name of Johanna Anna Deering, a native of Cherry Springs, Gillespie county, Texas. Their children are: William C. Jr., Gill Alfred, Milburn L. and Elsie Jannette.

ANDREW C. WALKER is president and manager of the Howard County Abstract Company. He organized this company in 1906, and its business has been increasing rapidly every month. A few years ago there was practically no abstract business in Western Texas, but the influx of settlers and the breaking up of the large ranches into small farms have made the abstractor an important factor in the business life of each county.

Mr. Walker had special qualifications for the business. He may be reckoned as one of the pioneer citizens of Big Springs, having located here December 8, 1883, when the town was small and before the railroad had brought in many settlers to disturb the cattlemen that then controlled all this region. Howard county was organized in August, 1882, and in 1885 Mr. Walker was elected to the office of county clerk. He was a capable official and popular citizen, and by successive elections held this office until 1898. This official experience gave him a familiarity with county records and an acquaintance with conditions and persons that have served as valuable equipment in carrying on his present business.

After leaving the county clerk's office Mr. Walker spent several years on his ranch, about fifty miles south of Big Springs, and organized the abstract company after he had returned to make his permanent home in Big Springs. In the spring of 1909, Colonel C. C. Slaughter gave his company the contract for all the abstracting in connection with the sale of 260 sections of the great Slaughter ranch.

Andrew C. Walker was born at Greensboro, North Carolina, and came to Texas in 1883. He was married in this state, his wife before marriage being Miss Maud Lee. She was born in Jefferson county, Texas, but was reared in Dallas county. They are parents of two children, Alma and Andree. Mr. Walker is a Royal Arch Mason.

JUDGE L. A. DALE is county judge of Howard county. He was elected to this office in 1906, and was re-elected in 1908. As county judge he is administrative head of county affairs, and for this reason deserves much credit for the most important county undertaking in recent years. Reference is made to the building of the large and handsome Howard county court house, which was erected during the first term of Judge Dale, and was dedicated in 1908. Judge Dale is also, ex-officio, county superintendent of schools.



Judge Dale was born in Stone county, Arkansas, was reared to manhood at McMinnville, Warren county, Tennessee, studied law in the office of Judge Abercrombie at Opelika, Alabama, with correspondence law courses at the Chase Law School of Detroit, Michigan, and in 1897 was admitted to the bar at Opelika and began his professional practice there.

Five years later he established himself at Big Springs and in a short time attained a leading position as lawyer and citizen. Besides the business of his public office, he conducts a practice in the state and federal courts.

Judge Dale lives in a nice suburban home on a fourteen-acre tract adjoining Big Springs on the east. He has a wife and five children. Her maiden name was Georgia McDaniel, and she was a native of Mississippi. The children are Audra May, Homer, Merle, Lillie and Cecil. Judge Dale affiliates with the Odd Fellows and is a member of the Christian church.

J. M. MUNDY, of Big Springs, is one of the pioneers of Western Texas. He left home when sixteen, in 1871, came to Texas and began working on the frontier on the old open cattle ranges. For ten years after that date the plains of Texas were covered with buffalo and the raiding of Indians continued. Fort McKavett, on the head waters of the San Saba in what is now Menard county, was one of the first localities in which he began his cowboy experience. The fort was at that time an active military post, with a garrison of soldiers for protection against Indians. In subsequent years his work extended around the head waters of the Nueces and in different sections of western Texas.

This early career, as well as the success of his later business life, has given Mr. Mundy a large acquaintance and prominence in West Texas, and his name is known in many counties. He is a North Carolinian by birth, born at Denver, Lincoln county, in 1855. The family is an old one in that part of North Carolina and many of the name still live there.

After moving to Texas in 1871 and after the initial experiences on the range above noted, he became associated with M. B. Pulliam, now a wealthy resident of San Angelo, in the cattle business, and continued around the head waters of the Concho until 1880. At that time the Pulliam interests were moved west to the Pecos valley, and Mr. Mundy was engaged in business there until 1886. Returning to the western portion of Tom Green county, he then established for himself the well remembered High Lonesome Ranch, where for several years he had a large success in the raising of cattle and horses. In 1897, having acquired an interest in the R Bar ranch in Howard county, about six miles south of Big Springs, he sold his property in Tom Green county and has since made his residence in Big Springs. Soon after coming here he engaged in the general merchandise business, and has since disposed of all his ranch interests and devoted all his business efforts to the large store. When first established the business was a partnership, Mundy & Harnish, then for a time under the individual style of J. M. Mundy, and is now the well known firm of Mundy-Bryant-Jones Mercantile Company.

Mr. Mundy married Miss Sallie B. Jackson, and they are the parents of four children—Reta, Floyd, Louise and Minnie. Mrs. Mundy



was born in McLennan county, her father, Gilbert Jackson, being a pioneer citizen of that county.

JOHNSTON J. HAIR is one of the county commissioners of Howard county and one of the most energetic and public-spirited citizens of Big Springs. He gives the same painstaking care and attention to the business of the county that he does to his own affairs, and as a member of the Big Springs Commercial Club is quick to turn everything possible to the advantage of his home town.

Mr. Hair was born and reared at Anderson in Grimes county, and he still retains an important part in the commercial activities of that city. After an education in the public schools, at Baylor University, and a special course in a business college, he began his career in mercantile affairs. The firm of Hair & Brown has been for many years one of the principal mercantile establishments of Anderson. It is under the direct management of Mr. Brown, a brother-in-law of Mr. Hair, who also returns to Anderson twice each year to look after his interests there.

Mr. Hair came to western Texas in 1899 on account of his health. At Big Springs he is proprietor of the Hair Addition, a subdivision of this thriving city. It is a quarter section of land adjoining the city on the south. The land is in the nature of an almost perfectly level plateau, lying eighty feet above the business section proper, and affords the choicest locations for residences. The addition comprises five hundred and sixty lots, size fifty by one hundred and forty feet, with streets seventy-five feet wide and twenty-foot alleys. Some handsome residences have already been erected there. Mr. Hair owns valuable agricultural lands in the Big Springs country. He is a director in the West Texas National Bank. He is a member of the Baptist church at Big Springs and affiliates with the Woodmen of the World and with the Modern Praetorians.

Mr. Hair married Miss Mamie Brown, who was born and reared at Anderson. Their children are: Joe Fountaine, Johnston J. Jr., George Dudley, Marion, Clinton. J. F. and Henrietta (Johnston) Hair were the names of Mr. Hair's parents. His mother is still living. Her father was the late Rev. Jonas Johnston, a pioneer minister of the Baptist church and one of the early settlers of Grimes county. His birthplace was in North Carolina.

JAMES C. SMITH was one of the first permanent settlers in the vicinity of Big Springs after the coming of the railroad in 1881. With the opening of this avenue of civilization and commerce he moved out from McLennan county, where he had long been a successful farmer and stockraiser, and established a home a mile and a half north of Big Springs, on the estate which has long been known as the old Smith place. He developed this into one of the best and most productive ranches in the Big Springs country. He was among the first farmers of this vicinity to sink deep wells for water supply, this being now a characteristic of all this country. In all his improvements he was in advance of his time. A few years ago he moved to town and now lives in a comfortable home on Scurry street.

Mr. Smith was born in Tishomingo county, Mississippi, in 1844.

The family moved to a farm near Waco in 1852, and he spent most of his early life in that locality. From Waco he entered the Confederate army, about the beginning of the war, and remained in service till the close, being in the Trans-Mississippi department in the states of Arkansas, Indian Territory, Louisiana and Texas. He was at Hempstead, Texas, at the close of the war, and then returned home to engage in farming and stock raising.

Mr. Smith married Miss Angebel Farney, and they have become the parents of three children, namely: Amasa G., James F. and Mrs. Mary A. Monk. Mrs. Smith is a native of Alabama. Mr. Smith affiliates with the Independent Order of Odd Fellows and is a member of the Methodist church.

J. B. D. BOYDSTUN was the pioneer farmer of the Big Springs country. The efforts of an individual often set in motion activities that go on increasing through the generations. It is for this reason that the first to make the useful effort is honored with a place in history. Mr. Boydston was the first to make a thorough trial of the principles of diversified farming in this part of western Texas, and his success stimulated the efforts which have since made this region productive of a varied agricultural wealth.

Mr. Boydston's career forms an interesting chapter in the history of western Texas. Born in Woodford county, Illinois, and reared on a farm, then living for a few years, about war times, in Warren county, Kentucky, afterwards returning to his native state and living in Knox county until 1870; he then moved to Tarrant county, Texas, and subsequently spent a few years in Dallas, Ellis and Brown counties. In 1880, when the extension of the Texas & Pacific Railroad was begun from Weatherford, he got employment in the construction work and followed the line in its progress across western Texas. His family accompanied him, and thus it was that he reached Big Springs on the day that the track was completed and the first train reached this point on June 6, 1881.

He remained at Big Springs and soon became identified in an important way with the development of this country. Being experienced in surveying, in 1882 he was elected county surveyor of Howard county. Then the legislature created a district of eleven counties and his duties were extended over all this large region of western Texas. As a result of his work in this capacity he possesses an intimate knowledge of the topography and character of soil of an extensive region around Howard county.

But his most important achievement at Big Springs was as a farmer. West Texas was at that date the greatest range cattle country in the world, and the cattleman regarded it as his special domain, from which the humbler pursuits of husbandry would always be excluded. Furthermore, the cattlemen as far as possible showed their dislike to the small farmer and often made the pursuit of his vocation inconvenient to say the least.

But the Texas & Pacific Railroad Company, having extended their line across the Staked Plains, had hopes that the plains country would at some day produce other and more valuable freight than cattle. As a consequence, Mr. Boydston was given a commission, in 1882, by the railroad company, to establish an experimental farm adjoining Big

Spring. He began raising millet and various kinds of grains, also garden vegetables, and made a beginning of fruit culture. He endeavored to prove that by dry farming, depending only on the average rainfall, this country would produce a variety and quantity of crops that would support a great industrial population. He was successful, and his efforts became the models for a great number of farmers who subsequently came to western Texas and in recent years have developed a continuous chain of farms and modern ranches all along the line of the Texas & Pacific. During the early years he had to endure the opposition of the range cattlemen, but since then the cattlemen have come to appreciate the real usefulness of his labors.

Mr. Boydstun raised the first cotton in the Big Springs country. He hauled two bales a distance of sixty-nine miles, to Sweetwater, where the nearest gin was then located. He is now owner of valuable agricultural tracts in the vicinity of Big Springs.

Mr. Boydstun married, in Warren county, Kentucky, Miss Julia Williams, a native of that county. She bravely bore with her husband the hardships of pioneer life in a new country and in cheerful spirit contributed by her own labor in establishing a home and properly rearing the children, of which there are seven: Mrs. Nannie Davis, Mrs. Jennie Cook, Mrs. Belle Long, Noble, Henry, Mrs. Delia Gillespie and B.P.

LAWRENCE B. WESTERMAN, who now resides in the city of Big Springs, the judicial center and metropolis of Howard county, has been a resident of Texas for about a decade, within which he has gained distinctive success and prestige as one of the representative building contractors of the state. He has secured and completed contracts for the erection of many fine buildings in western Texas, as well as in Galveston, Dallas and other cities, and the high reputation he maintains in his line of productive enterprise bears ample testimony to his sterling integrity and his technical and executive ability. He has been a resident of Big Springs since 1907, and in the interim he has undertaken and carried to successful completion the contracts for the erection of many large and important buildings along the line of the western division of the Texas & Pacific Railroad.

Lawrence B. Westerman is a scion of one of the old and honored families of Kentucky and is a native of Newport, Campbell county, that state, where he was born on the 24th of April, 1874. He is a son of E. F. and Martha (Rowland) Westerman, both of whom were born and reared in Kentucky, where the former long held a position of prominence as a contractor and builder. The parents are now in Fort Worth, Texas. He whose name initiates this article was afforded the advantages of the public schools of his native state and was reared to maturity in Paducah, Kentucky, which represented the family home for a number of years. There he became associated with his father in the latter's contracting and building operations, and he learned the business in all of its practical details, so that he eventually became well equipped for independent work along the same lines. He is recognized authority as to value of materials, cost of detailed construction and efficiency and value of work performed, so that he is able to conserve both economy and exact observance of plans and specifications in all contracts assumed by him. He continued to be identified with contracting and building in

Kentucky until 1900, when, after the devastation and virtual destruction of the city of Galveston by the disastrous storm and flood of that memorable year, he located in the stricken city and for about one year was actively concerned in reconstruction and other important contract work. He then removed to the city of Dallas, where he maintained his home and headquarters until March 7, 1907, when he established his permanent residence at Big Springs. In Dallas he completed a large number of important contracts and erected many substantial modern buildings. Among the more noteworthy of these were the fine buildings at Lake Cliff, the attractive and popular resort near that city. These are excelled by no structures of similar order in the state, especially the casino and skating-rink buildings. During one year he gave special and practically exclusive attention to the erection of cottages, and within this interval he erected fifty-two such buildings in Dallas. He held the contract for the erection of the fine court house of Howard county, and this ornate building, a source of pride to the citizens of Big Springs and of the county in general, was completed by him in 1908. In 1909 Mr. Westerman completed the splendid building of the Pecos Mercantile Company, at Pecos, Texas, which was erected at a cost of thirty thousand dollars. The building is of gray brick and is the largest and most modern in the business section of the city. In 1910 he completed the First Baptist church of the same city, erected at a cost of thirty thousand dollars, and this is one of the most elaborate and substantial church edifices between Fort Worth and El Paso. In 1909 he erected the substantial and attractive high school building at Odessa, Ector county; he built the county jail of Howard county, at Big Springs; and his successful work as a contractor is given tangible evidence in several of the leading towns and cities of newer growth in western Texas.

Even as he is alert, progressive and enterprising as a business man, so also is Mr. Westerman loyal and public-spirited as a citizen, and he is held in unqualified confidence and esteem by the people of his home city, in whose progress along civic and material lines he manifests a constant and lively interest. In politics he is aligned as a staunch supporter of the cause of the Republican party, but he has never had time or inclination to become a seeker of public office.

On the 26th of July, 1895, Mr. Westerman was united in marriage to Miss Nellie Bingham, who was born and reared in the state of Ohio and who is a daughter of the late Major John Bingham, who was a prominent and influential citizen of Athens, Ohio, and who served as an officer in an Ohio regiment in the Civil war. Mr. and Mrs. Westerman have three children—Kathleen, Laurys and Burwick—all of whom remain at the parental home, which is a recognized center of gracious hospitality. Mr. and Mrs. Westerman are members of the Methodist Episcopal church, South. Having decided to locate in West Texas, Mr. Westerman has just completed the most substantial residence, at a cost of seventeen thousand five hundred dollars, in Big Springs, it being considered one of the most modern and beautiful homes in the section of the state.

JESSE EVANS, whose home is on a ranch fourteen miles northeast of Lamesa, in Dawson county, where he has been enjoying life in ease and contentment for several years, is one of the noted old-time cattlemen





BATTERY OF AUTOMOBILES, PECOS, TEXAS, 1910

of Texas. He is one of the few men still living who experienced the fortunes of the cattle business when it was still an infant industry in Texas and continued to follow it through the remarkable changes of subsequent years.

Born in Cleveland county, North Carolina, in 1834, he came to Southwest Texas in 1853, and during the years before the war was identified with the cattle industry in the region around San Antonio, in what is now Wilson county (though then still a part of Bexar county). During the war he had charge of the mail route between San Antonio and Victoria. Returning to the cattle business, he was for some years engaged in taking cattle to market over the great trails from the Southwest Texas frontier north through the Indian nations. He was also a cattle trader, well known among the cattlemen of that time. For three years after the war he lived at New Braunfels, but then went into the cattle business on a ranch on Medicine river near Dodge City, Kansas. During his career he has worked cattle all over the frontiers of West and Southwest Texas, and also in Oklahoma and Kansas. For a time he had his ranch headquarters at Fort Supply, in what is now northwestern Oklahoma. Among the well known cattlemen then associated with him was Charles Colcord, the wealthy and prominent citizen of Oklahoma City. On the Evans ranch, near Fort Supply, occurred the fight between the United States troops and the Cheyenne Indians under Chief Dullknife. Mr. Evans has had his headquarters in the Big Springs country since 1885, and has pitched the camp where he intends to rest during the remaining years of his life.

He has a comfortable home and a happy family. He was married while living in Southwest Texas, to Miss Emma Beall. She was born in Georgia. Their six children are: J. D., W. H., Mrs. Emma Graham, R. L., Brinkley and Mrs. May Smith.

#### REEVES COUNTY

In 1883 the northwest portion of Pecos county, including an area of 2,721 square miles, or three times the size of an ordinary county, was set off under the name of Reeves county. A county government was organized in 1884. In 1880 Pecos county, an immense region, bounded on the south by the Rio Grande and on the east and north by the Pecos river, had a population of 1,807, three-fourths of whom were Mexicans. Old Fort Stockton was the county seat.

During 1881 the T. & P. railroad was built across the northern part of old Pecos county, and the Southern Pacific across the southern part. Settlement began along the former road, merchants and mechanics and farmers locating here in the midst of what had for some years been occupied solely by stockmen. It was as a result of this settlement that the new county of Reeves was formed.

The population of the county in 1890 was 1,247; in 1900, 1,847. In 1899 the Pecos River railroad was built north from Pecos City to the New Mexico line. In 1903 the assessed value of the county's wealth was \$2,342,989; in 1909, \$7,065,548.

Reeves county lies in the dry-farming and irrigation region of West Texas. The Pecos river forms the entire northeast border of the county, while at right angles and flowing centrally through the county is Toyah



creek, the watercourse of the now noted Toyah valley. In these valleys during recent years have been undertaken some large projects of irrigation development, besides the many individual enterprises in dry-land farming.

Pecos City, the county seat of Reeves county, was founded about the latter part of the year 1881, when the railroad was completed. The town was at first located nearer the Pecos river, about a mile and a half east of the present site, to which the town was removed in 1885. It has been the county seat since the organization of the county in 1884.

Perhaps the chief charm of the city is its residence section, beautiful, home-like places surrounded by pretty lawns and embowered among the cypress-cedar trees which have been imported from California and flourish in this vicinity. The altitude is about 2,600 feet, the average rainfall is eleven inches, and the climate is one of the valuable assets. In the business part of the town the sidewalks are of cement, though the town has not advanced far in this kind of municipal improvement. Artesian wells are in all parts of the town, and hydrants are placed along the streets in the business section, so that there is an ample supply of pure water for all purposes. There is also an electric light system. The city is incorporated, and its property assessment for 1908 was about \$800,000.

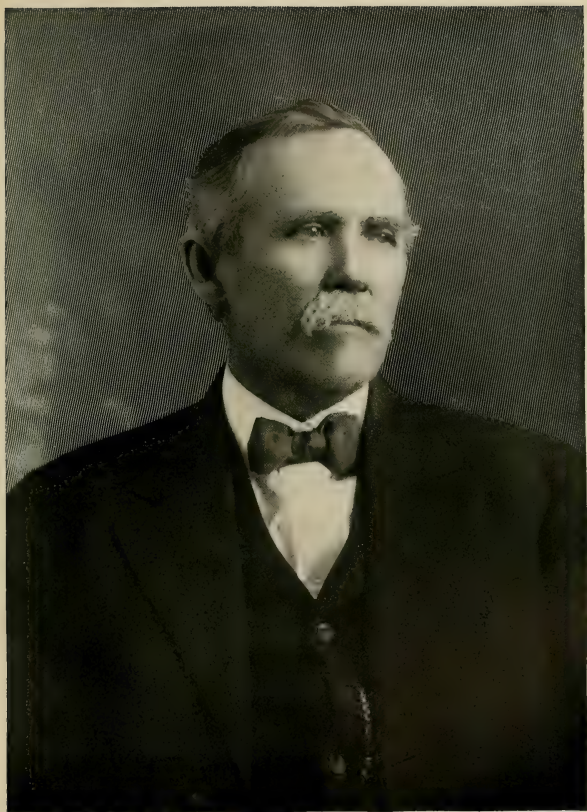
Commercially, Pecos City has for years been the business center for a large section of West Texas, and several of the mercantile firms transact a business that is larger in the aggregate than similar establishments in the large cities of the state. The Pecos Valley Bank has been an institution from the early history of the town, and a national bank was recently established.

W. D. COWAN, president of the Pecos Valley Bank, was born in Gonzales county, Texas, in 1851. He has been identified with ranch and range and similar interests all his life. He spent his boyhood in Fayette county, his parents moving there in 1852. In 1871, when he was twenty years old, he made his first trip to the north over one of the old cattle trails. His business interests have run along the same direction ever since.

Mr. Cowan is one of the pioneer settlers and stockmen of the Pecos valley. He located his ranch headquarters at Alpine, in Brewster county, in 1883, and the following year moved his outfit over on Toyah creek, in Reeves county. At that time the only farming done in the Toyah valley was in the primitive, unenterprising fashion followed by the few Mexican farmers who dwelt there. This young ranchman was therefore among the first to introduce thorough American methods into this region, and from that time to this has been an important factor in the development of the Trans-Pecos country. In 1888 he moved his home from Toyah creek to his present ranch in the western part of Reeves county. His place of residence was in the town of Toyah until 1894, when he moved to Pecos City.

The Cowan ranch is one of the largest of the many extensive Texas ranches, the main body of land consisting of about one hundred and twenty-five sections, a portion of which he owns. Originally this was the old Clayton and Cooksey ranch. Mr. Cowan also controls, with his sons, William and Sidney, a large tract north of the Texas and Pacific





*W S Cowan*





Confederate States of America,

WAR DEPARTMENT

Richmond April 30. 1864

Sir.

You are hereby informed that the President has appointed you

Major  
38th Georgia Regiment

In the Provisional Army in the service of the Confederate States: to rank as such from the second day of July one thousand eight hundred and sixty three. Should the Senate at their next session, advise and consent thereto, you will be commissioned accordingly.

Immediately on receipt hereof, please to communicate to this Department, through the Adjutant and Inspector General's Office, your acceptance or non-acceptance of said appointment and with your letter of acceptance return to the Adjutant and Inspector General the OATH, herewith enclosed properly filled up, SUBSCRIBED and ATTESTED, reporting as that same time your AGE, RESIDENCE where appointed, and the STATE in which you were BORN.

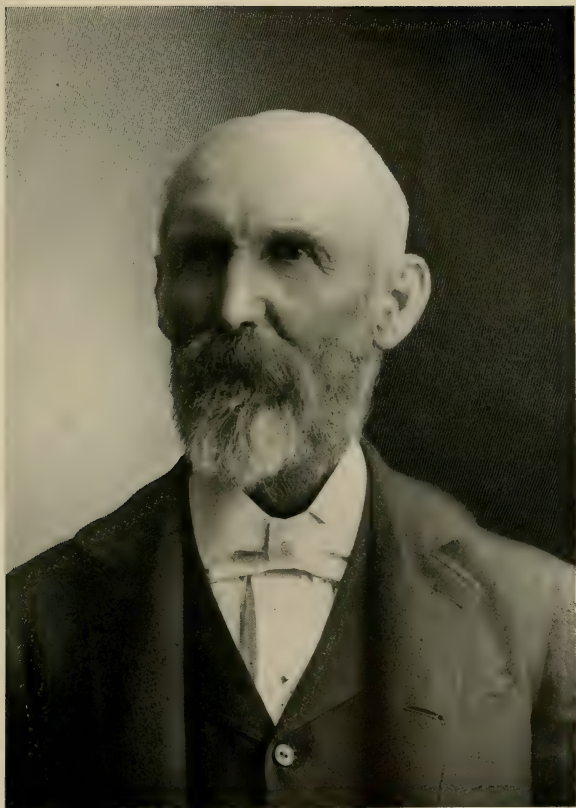
Should you accept, you will report for duty to Adj. Gen. Robert. Jones

Sam. A. Foster

Secretary of War.

& Lt. Major Thomas H. Boman.  
38th Geo. Regiment  
V. A. C.

Wm. A. Foster  
Adj. Gen.  
Richmond



Major Thos. H. Bomar



Railroad, in Reeves and El Paso counties, comprising sixty sections, part of which he owns and part he leases.

In Pecos City Mr. Cowan is a man of great business power and influence. He is president of the Pecos Valley Bank, the oldest bank in the city, which was founded in 1891 by W. D. Johnson and associates, and through hard and good times has remained a solid and thoroughly reliable financial institution. Mr. Cowan became president of this bank in 1900, and has since given close care and attention to the affairs that come under his supervision. The bank has a capital and surplus of over \$100,000. Mr. Cowan is one of the old-time stockmen who realize that the trend of events means the development of the country for agricultural purposes, and has given his encouragement to the advancement of these modern economic principles. He is a member of the executive committee of the Commercial Club, and has numerous local financial interests. He is owner of Cowan Park addition to the city of Pecos. He is a member of the Baptist church and was ordained a deacon in 1873, at the age of twenty-three, in the Elm Grove Baptist church in Fayette county, Texas. He has been a member of the executive board of the El Paso Baptist Association since its organization.

Mrs. Cowan is a native of Missouri. Before her marriage in that state to Mr. Cowan she was Miss Letha Porter. Their seven children are named as follows: William, John, Sidney and Marvin, the four sons, and three married daughters—Mrs. Lou Duncan, Mrs. Frances Prewitt and Mrs. Myrtle Thomas.

Mr. Cowan's first marriage took place in Fayette county, Texas, to Miss Josephine Darling, where she was born on a farm near Cistern Post-office. She became the mother of the above mentioned children, save Marvin. Her father was a soldier under Sam Houston, in 1836, and was in the battle of San Jacinto.

MAJOR THOMAS H. BOMAR has become notable in Central and Western Texas for his work of many years in the development of the Toyah valley and the Pecos country, and he is also prominent as a civil engineer. He was born near the city of Atlanta, Georgia, in 1842, and was educated in the Georgia Military Institute at Marietta. He left that institution to accept a captaincy of a battery of light artillery for service in the Confederate army at the time of the breaking out of the war between the north and the south, receiving his commission when but nineteen years of age. During all of the first part of the war he was retained in the artillery service. At the siege of Charleston, one of the most notable naval sieges of history, he had charge of a battery on Sullivan's Island and commanded what was at that time the heaviest siege gun in the world. In May of 1864 he was transferred to the infantry service in the Army of Northern Virginia, under General Gordon. He participated in the raid across the river into Maryland, his command being in sight of Washington, but his most extended service in Virginia was in the Shenandoah valley, and on going into that state he received his commission as major of the Thirty-eighth Georgia Infantry. He was captured at the battle of Cedar Creek, where, in command of the rear guard on the extreme left of General Gordon's line, he held the enemy in check until the greater part of the general's command had passed safely across the celebrated Stone Bridge. Major Bomar was imprisoned at Fort Delaware, and when the

war closed all of the Confederate troops in prison there were released with the exception of Major Bomar and sixteen others, who refused to take the oath of allegiance, this refusal being merely for the purpose of making it easier for them to carry out their cherished plan to join Maximilian's army in Mexico, but on learning of the untimely end of Maximilian's projects, Major Bomar and his comrades complied with the necessary requirements and were given their freedom from prison in August of 1865. General John B. Gordon, in an informal reception given him at the Pecos Valley Bank, Pecos, Texas, spoke of Major Bomar in the following highly complimentary manner: "There goes one of the bravest men I ever saw."

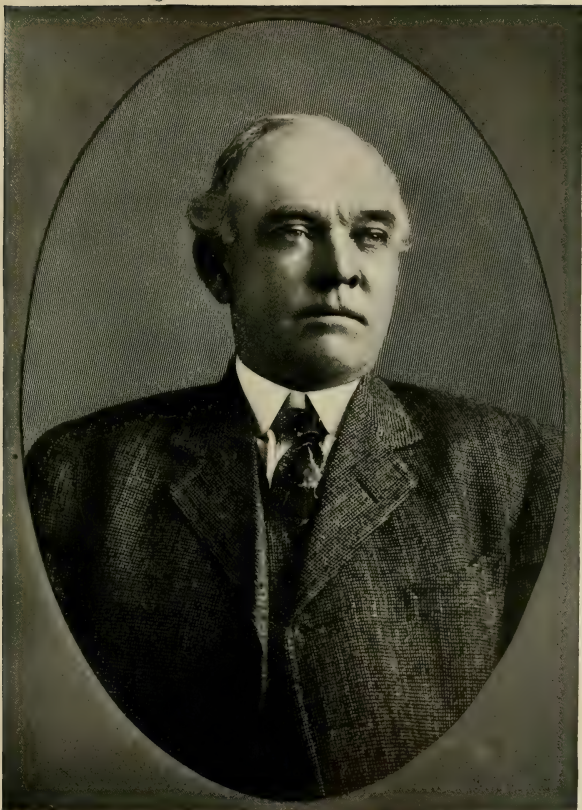
Returning from the war to Georgia, Major Bomar accepted a position as rod man with the surveyors on the Atlanta and Charlotte Air Line Railroad, subsequently becoming instrument man and still later entering seriously into the engineering profession. For several years he was a civil engineer in North Carolina, South Carolina, Tennessee and Virginia, chiefly with the Western North Carolina Railroad Company, the Richmond and Danville, and latterly the Southern. He was in charge for a number of years of the intricate and costly work through the Blue Ridge mountains at Round Knob. He also executed the engineering work on the noted Cumberland Gap tunnel on the Knoxville, Cumberland Gap and Louisville Railroad. This tunnel work has been notably successful, and in later years he has erected a tunnel in New Mexico for the El Paso and Southwestern Railroad Company, and received particular commendation for his splendid work. The latter made the thirteenth tunnel constructed under his supervision.

Major Bomar came to the Pecos valley in the winter of 1890-1, and as an engineer became connected with various irrigation projects that have had a successful development here, but his most important connection for several years has been with the irrigation possibilities of Toyah lake, of which he owns the larger portion of this remarkable body of water. And throughout his connection with this country he has in addition to his irrigation work been in the land business as a member of the Bomar Land Company. His name is almost synonymous with the development of the Toyah valley and the Pecos country generally, and with the growth and expansion of Pecos City, for which he sees a splendid future. In about the year of 1878, in connection with the Hon. Peter Cooper, he donated valuable property for the establishment of the Female College at Limestone Springs, South Carolina.

Major Bomar married Mary Wilson, from Morgantown, in North Carolina, a daughter of the Hon. James W. Wilson, the father of the railroad commission of that state and its first chairman. Major and Mrs. Bomar have an only child, a daughter, Miss Louie Bomar. The Bomar summer home is ten and a half miles south of Pecos, on the shore of the beautiful Toyah lake.

FANNIN WOODYARD JOHNSON.—The career of Fannin Woodyard Johnson, of Pecos City, corresponds very closely with the history of Central and Western Texas. He began his career on what was then the frontier in Coleman county about thirty years ago and gradually moved westward until he reached the valley of the Pecos. In this same thirty years is comprehended most of the history of this remarkable region, in





H. W. Johnson







J. F. MCKENZIE

which time its railroads have been constructed, its towns founded, and its vast ranges passed under the dominion of the stock farmer and agriculturist.

F. W. Johnson is probably the best known and most highly esteemed citizen of Pecos City. He has been characterized as "the whitest rich man on earth," which seems to signify better than anything else the degree of esteem in which he is held in his home town.

He was born in 1851, near Brenham, Washington county, Texas, and is a member of a well known Texas family. His father, J. H. Johnson, came from Illinois to Texas in 1836, the year of Texan independence. He was a prosperous planter in Washington county and a man of much influence.

Fannin W. Johnson was reared on the home estate in Washington county, and lived there until he was twenty-two years old. He then became interested in the cattle business, and in 1876 moved his cattle outfit to the frontier in Coleman county. A little later he was in the sheep business in Nolan county, at a time when the sheep and wool industry was a very attractive one in Texas.

He has been identified with the Pecos country since 1886, in which year he again took up the range cattle industry. The open range still prevailed, there being hardly a fence in all western Texas. Mr. Johnson took up his residence at Pecos about the time the town was moved from its original location on the river to its present site about three miles west. W. D. Johnson and J. L. Johnson, his brothers, also cattlemen, came to Pecos about the same time, and the three have been associated more or less closely in business since that time. The two brothers, however, are no longer residents of Pecos, W. D. living in Kansas City and J. L. in Fort Worth. The Johnson Brothers' ranch is one of the largest in western Texas, and also in the world, consisting of about twelve hundred sections of land in Winkler, Loving and Ward counties. The ranch headquarters are about thirty miles northeast of Pecos City. Among the most successful cattlemen of the state, the Johnsons have always possessed the enviable reputation of having acquired their wealth through honesty and fair dealing, and it is this character no doubt that has gained them such marked esteem among their fellow citizens.

F. W. Johnson is a member of the executive committee of the Texas Cattle Raisers' Association. He is also president of the Pecos Commercial Club. In 1891 the Johnsons established the well known Pecos Valley Bank, in which they still own large interests, and of which F. W. Johnson is vice president. This bank is a landmark in the financial history of the Pecos valley. It was established when the development of the country was just beginning, and has continued a strong resource through a period which has been marked by depressions and by a general expansion of industry throughout this great scope of country.

Mr. Johnson and wife are among the leading members of the Baptist church at Pecos City. Mrs. Johnson is a native of Wharton county, Texas. Her maiden name was Zemula Day.

HON. J. F. MCKENZIE is one of the most talented and prominent of the members of the Reeves county bar, and he is also a member of a family prominent in the pioneer life and history of Texas. Thomas N. McKenzie, his father, came to this state from Henderson county, Ten-

nessee, in 1839. He was then but a lad of eleven, and the journey hither with his parents was made by boat down the Tennessee and Mississippi rivers, thence across the gulf to Matagorda Bay, landing at the old town of Linnville, and they were not there long until the town was sacked and burned by the Comanche Indians, the family barely escaping with their lives by taking boats and rowing out in the bay. On this same raid the Indians burned the town of Victoria.

Thomas N. McKenzie was early inured to the cattle business, which remained his life-long occupation, and he, with his sons, was among the earliest cattlemen of the Texas frontier. In his early life he owned a large ranch in Atascosa county, and later owned an outfit that operated west of San Antonio. His home for a time was at Prairie Lea, in Caldwell county, from whence he moved to a place across the river in Guadalupe county, and there he resided for some years. He was one of the old-time rangers and Indian fighters, and among other expeditions in which he took part was with the famous Callahan Rangers that crossed the Rio Grande at Eagle Pass and had the fight with the Indians and Mexicans at Piedras Negras that came very near involving Mexico and the United States in an international complication. He served in the Confederate army, and upon the capture of the Harriet Lane by the Confederates he was one of the first to board the ship. He continued in active life until an advanced age, and he died at Fort Stockton on the 18th of February, 1909, and was buried at San Marcos on February 21, 1909.

J. F. McKenzie, his son, born March 18, 1873, at Prairie Lea, in Caldwell county, was reared at the home in Guadalupe county and received his educational training in the country schools, A. and M. College of Texas and in the Vanderbilt University at Nashville. He prepared for the law principally in the office of F. M. Etheridge in Dallas, and was admitted to the bar in that city, and forming a partnership with R. E. L. Saner, he practiced in Dallas until moving in 1898 to Fort Stockton in Pecos, where he established the McKenzie ranch on the Escondido creek in that county. This is one of the best ranches in western Texas and the McKenzie brothers are noted for their successful enterprises in the cattle business. They have had a large and varied experience in this line in the west, they having been among the first to establish headquarters on the southern plains. They had an outfit in Andrews county in its early days, and moving from there farther north, on the line of Texas and New Mexico, they established a large ranch, and afterwards they located permanently at the Pecos county ranch. While at Fort Stockton, J. F. McKenzie was elected and served as the county judge, and coming from there to Pecos in 1903 he has since been actively engaged in the practice of law and identified with the professional life of this city. He was elected and served as a member of the Twenty-ninth and Thirtieth legislatures, representing the Ninety-ninth legislative district. He is an able lawyer and commands a large practice, and he also owns valuable property interests in the Pecos country.

Mr. McKenzie married Blanche Terrell, a member of the Seguin branch of the well known Terrell family of Texas. Their two sons are James F. and Terrell McKenzie.

DR. WILLIAM J. VINSANT was born in Marion county, Tennessee, and he was educated for the medical profession in the University of Ten-

nessee at Nashville, where he graduated from the medical department with the class of 1900. But since then he has pursued general post graduate work in the New York Post Graduate Medical School.

Dr. Vinsant came to Texas in the year of his graduation, 1900, locating first at McKinney in Collin county, but early in the year of 1906 he came to his present home at Pecos and identified himself prominently with the medical profession of this city, a partner of Dr. James Camp. He is a member of the El Paso County, of the Texas State and of the American Medical Associations, and he is a physician and surgeon of the highest standing, while, in addition to his professional work, he is an active and public-spirited citizen in all local movements for the upbuilding of his city and of the surrounding country. He is one among the body of enterprising citizens who are energetically bringing the Pecos country to the notice of the world, and he is a member of the executive committee of the Commercial Club of Pecos, and is a member of the city's board of aldermen. Both he and his wife belong to the Methodist church, and he also has membership relations with the Masonic, Knights of Pythias and the Woodmen of the World fraternities.

Dr. Vinsant married Minnie Grace Overmier, of Aledo, Texas, and a son and a daughter—Collin Bennett and Gussie Lucile Vinsant—have been born to them.

JOHN Y. LEAVELL.—There is no citizen of the Pecos valley deserving of greater honor than John Y. Leavell, for twelve years the sheriff of Reeves county. During all those years he bore a well earned reputation throughout western Texas for a highly efficient officer, fearless and unrelenting in the discharge of his official duties, regardless of whom was affected. During the earlier years of his incumbency of the sheriff's office he was often required to deal with desperate characters, among whom might be mentioned the notorious Jim Miller, who made the Pecos country the field of his criminal operations for some years and whom Mr. Leavell finally arrested, put in irons and later took to Eastland, Texas, for trial, following the murder of Bud Frazer, Mr. Leavell's predecessor in office. He was active and fearless in establishing law and order, and too much cannot be said of his efficiency in ridding the Pecos country of many of its desperate and lawless bands and establishing the peace and security which the community now enjoys.

He was born in Garrard county, Kentucky, and coming to Texas in 1880 he located first in Tarrant county, but later moved from there to Young county, and in 1892 he came to Pecos. In 1896 he was elected the sheriff of Reeves county, and by successive re-elections continued in the office until 1908. In the meantime he had acquired an interest in the Pecos Valley Bank, and he declined a renomination as sheriff to become the assistant cashier of that institution in 1908, his present position.

Mr. Leavell married, in Young county, Texas, Mrs. Alice Williams. They are both members of the Baptist church in Pecos.

EDMOND L. COLLINGS has gained a prominent place in the industrial life of his community as controlling owner and manager of the Reeves County Telephone Company. In July of 1907 he purchased the Reeves county telephone system, and with the ensuing period of time he has increased and extended the system and has conducted the business under

its present name. In addition to the local exchange he has long distance lines amounting to one hundred and twenty miles and extending to Grand Falls, Dixieland, Toyah, Saragosa, Balmorhea, Grand Forks, as well as various lines to the surrounding ranch headquarters and connections with Fort Stockton and Monahans. This system is being gradually increased with the present rapid growth and settlement of the country about Pecos and the Toyah Valley.

Mr. Collings was born in Erath county, Texas, in 1861. His father, Lewis Collings, born in Illinois, came to Texas when he was sixteen years of age, coming with his father, Thomas Collings, who settled first in Dallas county. An interesting event in the history of Dallas, particularly in connection with the development of the Trinity river for navigation purposes, is that this Thomas Collings operated the first ferry over the Trinity at that city. This was in the early years of the forties. The family later moved to Erath county, which during the early part of the Civil war was in the path of the most murderous Indian raids which afflicted the frontier of Texas at that time, and Lewis Collings became a member of Captain Monroe Whitesides' Company of Texas Rangers for protection against the redskins. And he was later killed by them, an arrow piercing his heart in a battle at a point then known as Paint Creek in Haskell county, on the 1st of August, 1863. He was at that time a member of a scouting party composed of rangers from Captain Whitesides' company, reinforced by a small detachment from Captain M. B. Loyd's company, their object being to recapture some horses that had been stolen by the Indians. Mr. Collings was a sergeant in Captain Whitesides' company when they went into camp on the Brazos river, July 30, 1863. The following day he went through the camp seeking volunteers to go with Lieutenant Stockbridge on the trail of the Indians, and the next day the following party started: Lewis Collings, Tom Rodes, Dan Rodes, Steve Trimble, Tom Powers, Bill Tankersly, A. Howard and D. W. Reece, of Captain Whitesides' company, and Stockbridge, Hester, Vernon, White and Sharp, of Lieutenant Stockbridge's men, and three others whose names are not known. They formed camp and placed a look-out, but the Indians soon being sighted the party remounted their horses and started in pursuit. On being overtaken, the Indians fought fiercely with arrows and spears, and the soldiers were beginning to retreat, when Mr. Collings called to them to stand and shoot, being hit at the same instant with the arrow which caused his death wound. Just before he breathed his last he called Tom Powers and said, "Tommy, tell my folks," repeating this three times between hemorrhages.

Mr. Collings' body was buried at old Fort Belknap. Mrs. Collings still survives her first husband and is now the wife of the Hon. J. T. Tucker, a prominent citizen of Merkel, Texas, a former member of the state legislature. Mrs. Tucker has a daughter by her former marriage, Mrs. Nancy J. Perkins, living in Jones county.

While Edmond L. Collings was a young child the family moved to near Oak Grove in Tarrant county, where he was reared. He lived in Tarrant county until in 1879 he settled in Taylor county, and for a time followed ranching there. He came to Pecos in 1892 and is numbered among the pioneer business men here. For some years he successfully conducted a furniture and undertaking business, but disposed of that interest on the 1st of January, 1908, and in the following July he became







*C. F. Thomason*

the owner of the local telephone system. He is also in the fire insurance business, representing ten first-class companies.

Mr. Collings' wife was before marriage Miss Katie Beall, and she was reared at Arlington in Tarrant county, a daughter of Captain W. D. Beall, a member of the well known Beall family of Texas, and a cousin of Captain Thomas J. Beall of El Paso and of Dr. Beall of Fort Worth. Mr. and Mrs. Collings have six children: Mrs. Dora Gertrude Means, Lewis Dent Collings (a prominent young lawyer), Henry Earl Collings, Sarah Katharine, Nannie May and Annie Warren Collings.

CHARLES F. THOMASON.—No adequate memorial of Charles F. Thomason can be written until many of the useful enterprises with which he was connected have completed their full measure of good in the world and until his personal influence and example shall have ceased their fruitage in the lives of those who were about him when he was yet an actor in the busy places of the world. He left the impress of his forceful individuality upon almost every line of progress and improvement of the city of Pecos, and his life's span of over forty years was an era of splendid achievement. During the early formative and struggling period of the city he proved of inestimable value as a conservative citizen, and as a man the highest tributes were paid to him at the time of his death, on the 17th day of May, 1898. During many years he had been accorded a place of the highest standing from every viewpoint of character. He was a constantly busy man, full of energy and resources, but always open handed in works of charity. His commercial business was built upon the highest ideals of honor and integrity, and the work which he performed for his city and fellow townsmen is an enduring monument to his memory. He lies buried at his old home town of Waco.

Mr. Thomason was born at Pontotoc, Mississippi, on the 20th of November, 1857, but in infancy he came with the family to Waco, Texas, where he was reared and educated and where he obtained his start in commercial affairs. Leaving Waco in 1883 he came to western Texas and located at Colorado City, where he secured a good position in the store of John Walker. In 1886 he came to Pecos and started in business for himself, in time building up a large and successful commercial establishment, and commanded a trade which extended over a wide expanse of territory in western Texas. His business house was a thoroughly substantial two-story structure built of Pecos red sand stone, and after his death and the discontinuation of the business the building was occupied for several years by the Pecos Mercantile Company. Mr. Thomason established the original quarry from which the famous Pecos red sand stone is obtained. He developed the industry in a thorough manner, and the business is conducted under the name of the Pecos Red Sand Stone Company, of which he was the president. He also took a deep and abiding interest in the early development of irrigation for agricultural purposes in the Pecos Valley and established what still remains one of the best irrigated farms in this section, located a few miles above the city. Through his never failing industry and ability as a business man Mr. Thomason earned a comfortable fortune, although he was scarcely over forty years of age at the time of his death, and this competence provides substantial resources for his family.

Mr. Thomason is survived by his widow, nee Miss Rosa Ward, to

whom he was married at Pecos on the 15th of April, 1896, and a daughter, Rosa Thomason. Mrs. Thomason is the daughter of A. C. and Julia (Hampton) Ward, the former of whom is deceased and the latter is residing with her daughter in Pecos. Both the mother and daughter were born in the ancestral home of the Wards at Independence in Grayson county, Virginia. Mrs. Ward comes of distinguished ancestry, and is a daughter of Wade Hampton of Grayson county, who was a nephew of General Wade Hampton. Mr. Thomason descended from a branch of the Robert E. Lee family. He was a prominent Mason, a Knight Templar and a Shriner, and his religious home was in the Methodist church. The Thomason home in Pecos is one of the most beautiful residences in western Texas.

E. D. BALCOM has been a successful irrigation engineer in the west and south for the past fifteen years, and he is prominently and widely known at the present time as engineer in charge of the Toyah Valley Irrigation Company, and manager of the Swenson Land Company, Chicago, Illinois. Reared and educated in Nova Scotia, he came to the west while still a youth, and located first in Nebraska, and later, for a short while, in Colorado. His position in each one of these states had more or less to do with irrigation farming, and after being in Colorado a short while, was employed by the Pecos Irrigation and Improvement Company of Eddy, Pecos Valley, New Mexico, in whose employ he remained for several years, until the separation of those companies, holding various positions, and in 1899 became general manager for the Felix Irrigation Company, owned by the Hagerman interests of Colorado Springs and Roswell, New Mexico, which district has become famous as a great alfalfa and fruit growing district. While acting as general manager and chief engineer for this company he installed the first system of measurement for this district ever operated in New Mexico, and is now being taken as the standard of use in practically all plants being operated in the territory. In 1906 Mr. Balcom became interested in the Toyah Valley, forming a company known as the "Toyah Valley Live Stock Company" and "The Toyah Valley Irrigation Company," which he operated and started on its successful career, and in 1908 put the first lands in the Toyah Valley upon the market, organizing and operating what was known as the "Toyah Valley Land Company,"—a selling company handling exclusively Toyah Valley lands owned by himself and associates.

During the period which Mr. Balcom operated this company (at the same time pushing ahead development of his other company in which he was interested), he brought to the Toyah Valley a great many actual settlers and successfully put on foot the new town of Balmorhea, named for himself and associates. In 1909, to further the advancements of the Toyah Valley proposition, Mr. Balcom was the means of inducing to locate here, one of the best land firms operating out of Chicago—the "Swenson Land Company"—which company later became the owners of the Toyah Valley Live Stock Company and the Toyah Valley Irrigation Company, Mr. Balcom retaining the actual management of these companies as the irrigation engineer for the Toyah Valley Irrigation Company, and manager for the Swenson Land Company, in charge of their large farming interests and developments at Balmorhea.

These companies represent one of the most modern irrigation sys-





*John N. Newell*

tems, being laid out and installed upon the same plan as the work heretofore in charge of Mr. Balcom in his other enterprises. The plant covers approximately twenty-five thousand acres of land, of which about seventeen thousand acres are at the present time in actual cultivation. This company is pushing to completion this splendid irrigation system, under the direction of Mr. Balcom, and by the end of the season 1911, will be considered one of the most perfect systems of irrigation, based upon sure business principles, in operation in Texas. The source of supply from which this irrigation system is taken is from inexhaustible springs that never diminish in flow during the longest dry season, while another favorable feature is the splendid supply of pure drinking water free from alkali or other injurious ingredients.

The Swenson Land Company maintain large selling offices at Balmorhea, Pecos (Texas), and Chicago (Illinois), and are carrying on large advertising campaigns to bring prospective settlers to the Valley, operating private cars for this work. Its work in this direction has been very thorough, and is bringing splendid results, as the magnificent development of the many beautiful farms being opened up in the Valley will attest.

In 1897 Mr. Balcom married Miss Emma Ream of Elgin, Illinois, and with two children now reside at Balmorhea, where they have their home.

JACKSON G. LOVE is numbered among the young men who have achieved success and a splendid standing in the southwest, and he is a good example of what a young man who is alive to his opportunities can achieve in this resourceful country. He is the cashier of the Pecos Valley Bank, one of the oldest and best known financial institutions in this section of Texas. The bank was founded in 1891, and its name is a synonym for solidity and conservatism. It has always had behind it men of the highest character and of large financial resources.

Jackson G. Love was born in Cass county, Texas, in 1871, and he was reared and educated in Marion county, but at an early age started out for himself and came westward to Texas. Here he became connected with the Texas and Pacific Railroad Company in a clerical capacity in the station department, and that position brought him to Pecos in 1893, where for some years he was with the company as cashier, etc. In the meantime he had begun to invest judiciously in lands in the vicinity of Pecos, as well as in city property. In 1900 he entered upon his connection with the Pecos Valley Bank as a bookkeeper, and through continued promotions he has become the cashier of this widely known financial institution. He, with H. T. Collier, own a fine cattle ranch in Reeves county, twenty-four miles south of Pecos on Toyah creek, and this is one of the richest sections of the Pecos country. He is thoroughly identified with all the forward movements in the commercial life and agricultural development of the Pecos country, and he belongs to the time honored order of Masons.

Mrs. Love, nee Ludie Owen, was born in Llano county, Texas. They have a daughter, Aileen.

JOHN N. NEWELL.—The city of Pecos numbers John N. Newell among her earliest pioneers and real builders. He has been a Texan since the early years of the seventies, at that time connected with the westward

construction work of the Texas and Pacific Railroad then building toward El Paso. It was thus that he came to the Pecos Valley, and he arrived in what is now the city of Pecos in the summer of 1881, although the road did not reach here until late in the following fall. The town was started in a very small way at about the time of the completion of the railroad to this point, and thus Mr. Newell is practically the "oldest inhabitant" of the city, his arrival here antedating its organization, and throughout all the intervening years he has been one of its most efficient workers. During several years he was one of the best known cattlemen of the Pecos Valley, his first headquarters being on Toyah creek, and selling his interests there he bought a ranch three miles south of Pecos, but he has in later years also sold the most of this place, retaining only a small portion of it. For several years he was also in the hotel business in Pecos, but he is now practically retired from an active business life, only looking after his property interests in Pecos. He owns several residence properties, and his own home is a substantial residence which he has built on his property in the southern part of the city, one of the most favorable locations of Pecos.

Although so long and prominently identified with the life and interests of the Lone Star state Mr. Newell is a native son of Alabama, born in the county of Lee in 1844. He was reared there, and there enlisted in the Confederate service for the Civil war, joining Company D, Twenty-fourth Alabama Regiment. He began active service at the battle of Corinth, and from there was in service through Kentucky, Tennessee, the Dalton campaign in Georgia and the beginning of the Atlanta campaign, from the latter point returning with the portion of the army which returned to Nashville, and he took part in the battle of Franklin and in all the engagements of that campaign. He was also with the troops that surrendered to General W. T. Sherman at Bentonville, North Carolina, at the close of the war.

Mr. Newell married Mollie Haseltine Moore, also from Lee county, Alabama, and their eight children are Henry Tolbert, Claude, William R., three that died in youth, Mrs. Beulah Brannon, who is living near Greenville, Texas; and Beattie, deceased, who married Frank Ratliff and who died on March 21, 1909, leaving two children, Ruth and Joe.

A. T. WINDHAM.—The Pecos country claims A. T. Windham as one of its pioneers, and he is also one of the frontier cattlemen of western Texas and has passed through all the phases of the old range cattle industry, with its accompanying dangers and inconveniences from Indian raids, cattle thieves and the desperate characters which made their home here in the early days of the state's history.

Mr. Windham, familiarly known as "Trav," was born in Kemper county, Mississippi, December 17, 1856, and in 1872 he came with his parents to Texas, the family locating at Stephenville in Erath county, which was then on the Texas frontier. He was then but a boy, but soon afterward he started in the cattle business on the old range and in a short time was a typical cowboy. He first came to the Pecos country in 1879, coming from Abilene with the outfit of the Continental Cattle Company, familiarly known as the Hash Knife Outfit, one of the large cattle companies of those days of the open range. Their headquarters were at Abilene, and Mr. Windham was on the trail from there to the west with five







*J. B. Sibson*

different herds for that company for nearly nine years, and afterward was employed for about eight years with the Seven Rivers Cattle Company of Colorado City, Texas, principally in a managerial capacity. He then went into the cattle business for himself, which has proved his life-long occupation, and since 1882 his home has been practically in the Pecos country. He operated a large ranch in Reeves county, south of the city of Pecos, until June of 1908, and selling his interests there at that time he settled down permanently in Pecos and has since confined his business to looking after his large land holdings in the Pecos country. For about five years he owned a livery stable at Carlsbad, New Mexico, but the most of his financial interests are now in lands in the Pecos country.

Mr. Windham married Annie Goedeke of Abilene, and their two children are Lee Windham and Mrs. Bonnie Ferguson. Mr. Windham is a member of the Odd Fellows and Woodmen of the World fraternities.

**JAMES B. GIBSON.**—Prominent among the members of the Pecos bar is numbered James B. Gibson, a prominent and successful lawyer, an honored pioneer citizen and a business man of well known ability. He was born in Burnet county, Texas, but was reared and educated in the San Antonio region and he came to Pecos in 1886, thus winning his honored title of pioneer. In 1889 he was elected the county and district clerk of Reeves county, and served in that capacity by successive elections until the year 1904. In the meantime he had studied law, and since his admission to the bar at Pecos in 1904 he has been successfully and prominently engaged in the practice of his chosen profession in this city. He is also in the general land and cattle business in partnership with Judge Ross, their firm name being Ross and Gibson. Mr. Gibson has one of the handsomest homes in the Pecos valley, located on the western edge of Pecos, and it is one of the show places of the city. He also has a valuable ranch twenty-five miles south of Pecos, which he owns in partnership with his brother-in-law, George Mansfield. His wife was before marriage Miss Ney Mansfield.

The many friends of Mr. Gibson unite in saying that he is worthy of commendatory notice for the fearless and effective part he took in riding Pecos of the notorious outlaw, Jim Miller, and his gang. For some years the city and surrounding country were the scenes of operation of this unsavory character, who from all accounts was the most lawless and desperate character that ever infested the state of Texas. He possessed none of the bravery or manliness that sometimes formed a romantic background in the case of some desperadoes, but on the other hand he was sneaking, underhanded, shooting in the dark and from behind, and in most cases his murdering was done for money or for some financial advantage. It is said that for a consideration he would undertake to kill or have killed any man that any one might want to have put out of the way, and in connection with his trials for his numerous murders it is also said that he always had the case against him beaten before the crime was committed. He would do this by premeditating the circumstances of the crime and by hiring witnesses in his favor. In the Miller-Frazer feud, which terrorized the Pecos country for some time, Miller finally killed

Bud Frazer, a former sheriff and son of Judge Frazer, a prominent pioneer of the Pecos country.

Mr. Gibson lost his own brother, Con Gibson, by an assassin's bullet during the troubles arising from this feud, he having been shot at Carlsbad, New Mexico, by a man hired to do the work by Miller. The Gibsons had incurred Miller's enmity through their activity in proving a conspiracy on the part of Miller to kill Bud Frazer. Both prior and subsequent to the murder of his brother Mr. Gibson, in association with Sheriff Leavell and a handful of other citizens who upheld law and order, were relentless in their efforts to rid the country of the outlaw, often at the risk of great personal danger to themselves, for in addition to Miller's own gang many others on account of their fear of Miller refused to take a hand against him. He was, however, finally driven out of Pecos, and it is a matter of history that following this event the town began to change its character from a lawless and practically uncivilized community to what it is at present, one of the most law-abiding cities of Texas. Miller was finally lynched by a mob at Ada, Oklahoma, on April 19, 1909.

JUDGE THOMAS J. HEFNER.—The name of Judge Thomas J. Hefner is enduringly inscribed on the pages of the history of western Texas in connection with the records of its jurisprudence and as a pioneer and public spirited citizen. Born and reared in Fayette county, Texas, he received the most of his education in old Trinity University at Tehuacana in Limestone county, this state, and he read law under Timmons and Brown at LaGrange and was admitted to the bar in 1885 at Breckenridge in Stephens county. In that same year he also came to the city of Pecos, the town at this time having just been moved from its old site about a mile and a half east to its present location, but there was not much to move at that time, however. But although the town was new and a small one there was considerable litigation characteristic of the times and of the country, such as land and cattle litigation and criminal trials, the latter being a lucrative branch of the profession here at that time, and Mr. Hefner soon became established in a lucrative law practice. In 1896 he was elected the judge of Reeves county, and by successive re-elections he has served most efficiently in that position to the present time. But aside from this he has a large general law practice in the district and higher courts, and he has one of the most valuable and largest working law libraries in western Texas, and is thoroughly equipped for all branches of litigation.

Judge Hefner is one of the public spirited and useful citizens of Pecos, and beginning in the early years when it was a lawless, wide-open town, with the criminal element often predominating, he has ever been stanch in his support of law and order and is numbered among the foremost of those who finally made Pecos what it now is, one of the most law-abiding little cities of the commonwealth of Texas. And he is also numbered among the most prominent and successful of the lawyers practicing in the courts of western Texas.

He married at Tehuacana Miss Annie E. Morgan, a daughter of W. I. Morgan, one of Limestone county's most prominent citizens. Their eight children are: Mrs. Etta May Mederis and Mrs. Clara L. Dean, Thomas Clifften, Robert Lee, Charles Newton, George Burette, Clarence

Wycliffe and Balser Dixon Hefner. A daughter, Miss Willie Morgan Hefner, died in 1907. Judge Hefner is a Mason and a Knight of Pythias and a member of the Baptist church.

#### CHILDRESS COUNTY

The movement of population into the uplands of Northwest Texas began in the '70s. One of the pioneers was the stockman, Charles Goodnight, who established his headquarters in the Palo Duro canyon in 1876, having to dispute the possession of that region with both the Indians and the buffalo. From that time on the cattlemen were the lords of these vast plains, and their herds were driven from range to range and from creek to water hole, without a single "squatter" or permanent habitation to obstruct them.

In 1876 the legislature divided all this territory into counties, leaving the organization of local government to wait on settlement. About the same time Fort Elliott was established in Wheeler county. By 1880 there were several thousand inhabitants in this plains region. First of all the counties to organize was Wheeler, which obtained a local government in 1879, with county seat at the old town of Mobeetie. Oldham county was organized in December, 1880, Wilbarger in October, 1881, Donley in March, 1882, Hardeman in December, 1884, and Childress on April 11, 1887.

At the census of 1880 the population of Childress county was 25; Hardeman had 50; Wheeler, 512; Oldham, 287; Armstrong, 31; Donley, 160; and Collingsworth, 6.

For several years conditions were little changed, with the cattlemen supreme. The entering wedge of civilization was the railroad. The Fort Worth & Denver City in May, 1885, was built as far as Wichita Falls; in April, 1887, Quanah was its terminus, and on March 14, 1888, the two divisions were connected at Texline. All along this road stations and cattle pens were built, and around each point merchants, mechanics, laborers, farmers and stockmen collected as the nucleus of a town, and in a short time something like permanent conditions prevailed, whereas before population and wealth had obeyed the transient laws of the range and the cattle trails.

At the census of 1890 Childress county had a population of 1,175, the county seat town having 621 of this number. In 1900 the population of the county was 2,138, and at the recent census of 1910 the figures are 9,538. In the early '90s crop failures and the financial panic caused a general exodus from all Northwest Texas. But about the close of the decade immigration began again, and this time with a more substantial class of settlers. The conditions of success in this country became better understood, and in the last ten years the development has proceeded on the basis of solid and lasting prosperity, and the population of Childress county has more than quadrupled during the decade. In 1903 the value of taxable property in the county was \$1,992,707, and in 1909, \$5,110,300.

JOHN M. AND HOWARD S. CRAWFORD, both educators of note in northwest Texas until within a comparatively recent period, and now members of the real estate firm of Crawford & Crawford, of Childress, are sons of the late Dr. Augustus W. Crawford, who engaged in the practice of his profession and in farming for a period of over a quarter

of a century, the family homestead being located in Ellis county about two miles southwest of Midlothian.

The paternal grandfather, Samuel Crawford, was born in South Carolina in 1767, his father (great-grandfather of John M. and Howard S.), William Crawford, having been a Scotchman who had migrated to the north of Ireland. The Crawfords spread into Alabama and Georgia, and became prominent in the making of history for these states. One of the members of this branch of the family was Hon. William H. Crawford, United States senator from Georgia, minister to France, secretary of war, secretary of the treasury and (1824) candidate for the presidency. He died in Elbert county, that state, in 1834.

Samuel Crawford moved from South Carolina to Georgia, where, until the year of his death in 1839, he conducted a plantation by slave labor. He was noted for the humane treatment of his blacks, whom he treated more as members of his family than as employees. In politics he was a Whig, and in religion, an old-school Presbyterian. His wife (nee Mary H. Long) was also a native of South Carolina, born in 1778. Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Crawford were the parents of twelve children, of whom Augustus W. was the ninth. The paternal great-grandparents, William and Rebecca (Reed) Crawford, were natives of Ireland and South Carolina respectively, the former (as stated) being of Scotch ancestry. He was the owner of a flouring mill in South Carolina and, although exempt from service in the Revolutionary war, was killed by the Tories.

Dr. Augustus W. Crawford was born in Georgia in 1826, and in 1844 moved with his mother to Alabama, where he remained with her for three years. He then returned to Georgia, attended Marietta academy for three years, taught for seven years, and began the study of medicine with Dr. J. W. Wadkins, of Fayette, Alabama. After continuing under his tutelage for two years he took a course of lectures at Nashville University, graduated at an Atlanta institution and pursued a post-graduate course in New Orleans. In 1858 Dr. Crawford commenced practice at Fayetteville, Alabama, and within the succeeding eight years continued his professional labors in Brenham, Texas, and New London, Arkansas. In 1866 he returned to Texas and, after a short stay in Louisiana, located on the Ellis county farm near Midlothian, where he resided and practiced until his death in 1894. He was a fine type of the skilful, conscientious physician and the southern gentleman. In 1867 Dr. Crawford married Miss Mary McHenry, an Alabama lady born in 1842, daughter of John V. and Keziah (Brown) McHenry, natives of Virginia and South Carolina. The third of their three sons, James F., is a resident of Helper, Utah. Dr. Crawford's widow is living in Childress with John M. Crawford.

John M. Crawford, the eldest of the children, was born at Brenham, Texas, and was educated mainly at old Waxahachie College in Ellis county. He began teaching at an early age, and was engaged so successfully in that profession for a number of years that he became one of the best known educators in northwest Texas. Teaching his first school in Ellis county, later he became president of the Literary and Scientific Institute at Italy; in 1890 resigned that position to assume charge of the public school at Quanah, and in 1891 was appointed principal of the public schools at Childress, continuing thus for some three years. Professor Crawford then returned to Ellis county, where he had charge of the Mid-

lothian school for another three years, and at the end of that period was elected president of the Southwestern Normal School at Italy. He remained in that capacity for six years, building up the school until it was a power in the cause of higher education throughout central Texas.

On coming to Childress in 1891, Professor Crawford had made some investments and acquired various other interests which so bound him to the place that in 1903 he returned to the city to make it his permanent home. In that year he was again chosen superintendent of the city schools, and continued to ably conduct the public system of education for three years. He then resigned to devote his time exclusively to the real estate business already established by himself and brother. Outside the fields of education and business, Professor Crawford is also widely known and warmly admired for the leading part he has taken in establishing and promoting the plans of the Childress Y. M. C. A. Especially is the institution of the greatest ethical value and importance to the hundreds of railroad men who reside in Childress, which is the main division town of the Fort Worth & Denver Railroad and which contains large and growing shops. Mr. Crawford's wife was formerly Daisy Alexander, and their children are Margaret, Louis and John Henry Crawford.

Howard S. Crawford was born at Mansfield, DeSoto parish, Louisiana, but was educated in Ellis county and chiefly at Waxahachie College. Like his brother, he first taught in that county, and in 1890 located at Chillicothe, northwest Texas, where he took charge of the public school, at the same time being publisher and editor of the *Chillicothe Clipper*. Subsequently he was principal or superintendent of various schools in Texas, his entire career as an educator covering fifteen years and his last work in that field being conducted at Strawn, Palo Pinto county. In 1906 he located at Childress to join his brother in the real estate business and make the city his home. Howard S. Crawford is also prominent in the promotion of the Y. M. C. A., of which he is a director, and is a steward of the Methodist church, with whose work his brother is prominently connected. The junior member of Crawford & Crawford is a trustee of the Childress Independent School District; a leading member of the local Board of Trade; secretary of the Childress Light & Ice Company; and secretary and treasurer of the Childress Compress Company. The wife of Howard S. Crawford was known, before marriage, as Miss John C. Cunningham, and on her mother's side is a member of the well known Reagor family, pioneers of Ellis county. The four children of their union are Fred A., Cathryn, John A. and Corinne.

JOHN H. P. JONES.—One of the most prominent of the citizens of northwestern Texas is found in the person of John H. P. Jones, who has been identified with its banking interests perhaps longer than any other of the citizens of Childress or of the Panhandle. He is the vice-president of the City National Bank and president of the Panhandle Bankers' Association, and he is also the president of the Childress Board of Trade and is intimately associated with the commercial interests of the city and of the territory.

Mr. Jones was born at Cleburne in Johnson county, Texas, in 1869, but in 1870 his parents and their family moved to Hood county and later to Jack county, the son John attaining to mature years in the latter place. W. P. Jones, his father, and who is now living at Matador in Motley



county, was a merchant and stockman and later a banker, and it was with his father that John H. P. Jones had his first banking experience. The family had come to the Panhandle country at about the time of the building of the Fort Worth and Denver Railroad in 1887, and Mr. Jones' banking experience in Childress began about Christmas time of that year. He has filled practically every position in this calling, and besides having a thorough knowledge of the intricate science of banking he enjoys a wide personal acquaintance and familiarity with the commercial, live stock and agricultural conditions that have made him exceptionally fitted for the banking business. He was made the assistant cashier of the old First National Bank in January of 1892, while in the following year of 1893 he became the cashier and he remained in that position until the bank was moved to Quanah in 1898, where it is still carrying on business. That institution had been organized on the 22d of May, 1891, and Mr. Jones became associated with it at that time, it being the original national bank in Childress. After continuing with the house at Quanah for a short time he went to Matador in Motley county and there established a private bank in association with his brother, Will P. Jones, and this is now the First State Bank of Matador, John H. P. Jones still retaining an interest therein and his brother is its president. After four years in Matador he returned to Childress and the banking business here, and in 1906 purchased the interest of R. E. Dunn in the Childress National Bank, of which he was made the cashier. This house was organized in 1904 by Judge A. J. Fires, R. E. Dunn, R. H. Norris and G. W. Deahl, and in May of 1909 the Childress National and the City National Banks of Childress were consolidated under the name of the City National Bank. The City National was also organized in 1904, by Dr. J. H. Cristler, R. L. Ellison, N. Harding, S. P. Britt and W. L. Underwood, and under the consolidation Mr. Jones became the active vice president and is co-manager of the bank with S. P. Britt, chairman of the board, and these two pass on loans and have general supervision of all details of the house. The consolidated City National has a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, with a surplus of twenty thousand, which with its large deposit account and close financial relations with several large banks in the money centers enables it to handle all business to advantage and with expedition.

Mr. Jones is one of the city's most public spirited residents. He has remained with Childress county and the Panhandle through all their various periods of adversity, and has been active in the forward movement which has made Childress grow in inhabitants from six hundred to over six thousand since the year of 1900. He is the president of its Board of Trade, has been a member of the board of school trustees for several years, is the president of the Panhandle Bankers' Association and belongs to the Methodist church, to the Masons, to the Elks and to the Knights of Pythias.

Mrs. Jones was before marriage Miss Lynch Chesnutt, born in Cooke county, Texas, and their two children are Paul C. and Mary Jones.

WILLIAM L. UNDERWOOD was born on his father's farm near Aledo in Parker county, Texas, in January, 1858, but many years of his life have been spent in Childress and he is the president of its First State Bank. His father was one of the early Texas pioneers. He was born in Ohio, lived for some years in the state of New York, moving from there to Mis-



souri, and in the early forties he emigrated to Texas and located where Waco now stands. He was a Mexican war soldier and one of the early Texas rangers, and he became one of the well known citizens of the Texas republic. In 1847 he pre-empted a farm homestead in Parker county, on the Clear Fork, adjoining the present town of Aledo, and his widow still lives on this old place.

Parker county's history as a frontier community and as the scene of many disastrous Indian raids is well known, and William L. Underwood was reared in that frontier atmosphere and in the cattle business, the only industry of those days open to a boy. As a cowboy, ranch foreman and in kindred lines he worked for some of the famous old-time cattle outfits. From Parker county he went to Coleman county, and from there in 1879 to Kent county, while in the spring of 1881 he came up to the Panhandle country and began work for the old and well known firm of Adair and Goodnight, on the famous J A ranch on Palo Duro. Later he embarked in the cattle business for himself and operated successfully in the Panhandle for several years, but in recent years he has disposed of his cattle interests and now devotes the most of his time to his banking and property interests. He is one of the pioneer citizens of Childress and is the president of the First State Bank, a prosperous and solid financial institution founded in September of 1907, and having a capital stock of twenty-five thousand dollars. He is also the treasurer of the Childress Board of Trade. With E. D. Biggerstaff he owns a fine farm two miles east of the town and on which is located the well known Harper mineral well, a mineral water with notable medical properties.

Mr. Underwood's wife was before her marriage to him Mrs. Sarah J. Ward, a native daughter of Texas and a member of a well known pioneer family. She was reared at old Fort Griffin, a notable frontier post of the earlier years. Mr. and Mrs. Underwood have a daughter, Mrs. Carrie Pennell, of Childress. The Underwood home is a beautiful residence in the southern part of the town.

DR. JAMES WILLIS ALBERT has passed his entire professional career in Texas. He came to this state in the year of his graduation, that of 1883, and located first at Aledo in Parker county, but not long afterward he came to Childress and is numbered among the city's earliest pioneers. He arrived here in the year of 1887, the same year of its organization and the completion of the Fort Worth and Denver Railroad to this point, and he has lived here ever since and has taken a most prominent and active part in its history, in its growth and development and in its medical profession. He has continuously remained in the practice of medicine, and for several years has been local surgeon for the Fort Worth and Denver Railroad Company. He was one of the founders and the first president of the Panhandle Medical Association, was also one of the organizers and the first president of the Childress County Medical Society, and he also started the first drug store in this city, the building being the third business structure to be erected in the town. This was on Main street, near the site of the present Albert building, the latter a modern two-story business block erected and owned by Dr. Albert. It is one of the best business buildings in the city. In the early years Dr. Albert bought a large amount of land at a low price, and his investments in this direction have brought him highly profitable returns.

The Doctor was born at Atlanta, Georgia, in 1852, and he was also reared in that city, and his family were visited with the general misfortunes which fell upon Atlanta at its fall and burning and the devastation wrought by the war. He prepared for his profession in the Southern Medical College there, and graduated with its class of 1883. Dr. Albert since coming to Childress has been a generous contributor to all worthy public enterprises. He is a member of the Methodist church and gave largely of his time and money to the building of its beautiful home, and he is a Knight Templar Mason and a Shriner. He is also well known in the political life of the state, and has served as a delegate to state conventions of the Democratic party, and as chairman, etc., of local and county conventions.

Mrs. Albert was before marriage Eunice Sappington, from Georgia. They have one daughter living, Mrs. Florence Albert Welch, of New York.

FRED ESTES.—In the early days of the history of the Panhandle country there came to its community one who has since proved an influential business man and citizen, Fred Estes, whose residence here antedates the organization of the county of Childress. He was born in Clarke county, Mississippi, in 1855, and in 1875 he came to Texas and for some time thereafter lived in the northern part of the state and in the vicinity of Fort Worth.

Mr. Estes gained a place in the history of the Panhandle country and in northwestern Texas through his remarkable escape from the Indians in 1879. Early in that year he had decided to make a trip overland to Leadville, Colorado, then in the midst of its great silver excitement, and starting from Fort Worth he picked up his brother, Joe Estes, at Gainesville, who joined him for the proposed trip, and on reaching Wichita county they fell in with a man named Joe Earl, who seemed to be an expert frontiersman and whom they invited to accompany them on the expedition. He accepted, and the three started in a northwesterly direction over the trail to Colorado, a route which in later years was selected for the line of the Fort Worth and Denver Railroad. They had a team and wagon, an extra horse and a modest camping outfit, and they began their trip in April of 1879. Some time previously a member of the Kiowa tribe of Indians had been killed by the Rangers in northern Texas, over which the tribe were greatly incensed, and declared they would obtain vengeance and retaliation by killing some white men.

The party of three on the day in question were making ready to stop and prepare their noonday meal, Joe Earl being on horseback a short distance in advance of the two brothers, who were in the wagon. Without warning they saw a band of about thirty-five Kiowas coming rapidly toward them, and before they had time to realize their danger the red skins had surrounded Joe Earl, whom they shot several times, he falling from his horse. Joe and Fred Estes immediately got out of the wagon, unhooked the two horses, Fred saddling his horse, Joe not having time to saddle his, and they broke away at breakneck speed, retreating in a northeasterly direction toward the R 2 ranch owned by Stephens and Worsham. A number of the Indians gave the brothers a dangerously close chase for their lives, but mounted as they were on exceptionally good horses they finally eluded them and made good their escape, reach-

ing the R 2 ranch some time in the afternoon. That night, with a party of men from the ranch, among whom was Dick Forsythe and Billy Ney, well known frontiersmen, they returned to the scene of the disaster and found the body of their late comrade scalped, mutilated and even burned. On the following morning they buried the body close to the spot where he had been killed, and this formed the beginning of the present Quanah graveyard, the deplorable incident having occurred on the site of the present city of Quanah, although at that time there was no sign of any habitation for miles around.

The two brothers then abandoned their trip to Colorado, and Fred Estes began work on the R 2 ranch. In 1880 he came to what is now known as Childress county and began work on the old O X ranch owned at that time by Mr. Forsythe, one of the large cattlemen of his day. The ranch headquarters were in Childress county, southeast of the present site of its county seat, and Mr. Estes worked out from that point. His home has been Childress since those early days, and there is none other of its citizens who can claim as long a residence. The old O X ranch extended from the Red to the Pease river and from there the present town of Acme now is on the east to about where Carey now stands on the west. He continued there in various capacities of responsibility for about seventeen years. He was made the first assessor of Childress county after its organization in 1887, and after holding that office for six years he was for four years the county's sheriff, assuming its duties in 1898. He also served for about three years as a county commissioner. In about the year of 1905, having retired permanently from the cattle business, he became the senior member of the drug firm of Estes and Atkinson, druggists of Childress. He is a member of the board of city councilmen of Childress, a director of the Farmers and Mechanics State Bank and a member of the Masonic fraternity.

Mr. Estes married Lola Beaty, who was reared at Pilot Point, Texas, and they have had two sons, Fred Jr. and Jimmy Estes, but the last named died in September, 1909.

DR. ROBERT W. MCFERRAN is one of the most successful practicing physicians of Childress, but perhaps he has attained his greatest success and popularity through his conduct of the Cottage Hospital, maintained for the treatment of cases in gynecology and gynecological work. Dr. McFerran is particularly well equipped for this work, having made it a special study in his post-graduate work in Chicago, New Orleans and in London.

He was born in Mobile, Alabama, but was reared at Baton Rouge, Louisiana, and he received his education mainly in the Louisiana State University and graduated with its class of 1889. Coming then to Texas he later located in Dallas and matriculated in the Baylor University Medical College, from which he graduated in 1901. Following this he became house surgeon in the Dallas City Hospital. In 1903 he located permanently in Childress, and since about 1904 he has been conducting Cottage Hospital, which is maintained not only for Childress patients but for those of other towns within a radius of one hundred miles as well, and the hospital is in high standing with the medical profession. Its patronage in recent years has increased to such an extent that a modern new two-story brick structure of twenty-four rooms is contemplated to be erected on a

slightly elevated location at the southeastern edge of the city, equipped with every modern facility for its purpose.

Dr. McFerran has membership relations with the County, State and American Medical Associations, and he belongs to the Elks and Odd Fellows fraternities.

HON. GEORGE E. HAMILTON.—One of the most prominent lawyers practicing in the Panhandle of Texas is the Hon. George E. Hamilton, a legislator of prominence and a legal practitioner of the most pronounced success. His entire professional career has been spent in this state, but he was born in Chattooga county, Georgia, in 1871, and he was reared there and attended school at Calhoun, that state. It was in 1894 that he came to Texas, and locating first at McGregor he began the study of law there, and was admitted to the bar at Waco in 1897. His first practice was in Abilene, and he remained in that city for two years, moving in 1899 to Matador, Motley county, in the Panhandle country, and he practiced his profession there with success until establishing himself permanently in Childress in 1907. Being already well known throughout the Panhandle as a successful lawyer, the Hon. George E. Hamilton soon secured a place of prominence at the Childress bar, and at the regular election in November of 1908 he was made a member of the Thirty-first legislature to represent the One Hundred and Fifth legislative district, which comprised the ten counties of Hall, Motley, Dickens, King, Cottle, Childress, Hardeman, Foard, Wilbarger and Wichita.

Although a new member in the Thirty-first he was favored with some important committee appointments. He served as chairman of the committee on stock and stock raising, and among others on which he served the following are of the greater importance: Committees on constitutional amendments, judicial districts, reforms of criminal and civil procedure, public health and banks and banking, in the latter having charge of formulating the legislation establishing the state guarantee of bank deposits.

Mr. Hamilton is a member of the Methodist church. His wife was before marriage Miss Edna Cooper, a member of a well known North Texas family who have been identified with the cattle business through a long number of years. The two sons of this union are Howard and John Hamilton.

THOMAS ARNOLD WILLIAMS is one of the historic characters of Childress, an early pioneer of the Panhandle country and a present justice of the peace. He was born at Mauch Chunk in Carben county, Pennsylvania, in April, 1845, but he was reared principally in Philadelphia and there learned his trade of shoemaking. At the beginning of the war between the north and the south he enlisted for service in Company D, Ninety-sixth Pennsylvania Infantry, and at the expiration of his term he re-enlisted in the Two Hundred and Second Pennsylvania, with which he served until the war closed. His services were almost entirely in Virginia, and he took part in many of the great conflicts fought on that ground, his principal battles having been those of Chancellorsville, Fredericksburg and Antietam.

When the war had ended Mr. Williams came to the south, and as an expert shoemaker found no difficulty in procuring profitable work. After

about five years at different points in Arkansas, Tennessee, Missouri and other places along the Mississippi river he returned to his old home in Pennsylvania and married there Rebecca Raworth, a native of England, and the young couple then came to Texas and located at Brenham in Washington county. This was sometime in the early seventies, and in 1881 Mr. Williams came as a pioneer to Wilbarger county, and he made the first pair of boots ever manufactured in that county. He has lived in the Panhandle country since those early days, and in 1886 he came from Wilbarger to Childress county, this being about a year before the completion of the railroad to this town, and he bought a section of land two and a half miles west of the present town. Anticipating the coming of the Fort Worth and Denver Railroad, a small settlement was started at his place, consisting at first of only a few tents and some dugouts, and this became known as the town of Childress, which was made the county seat upon the organization of the county in 1887, and a court house was built on Mr. Williams' land. But about the time of the completion of the railroad what was then called the town of Henry was started in opposition to the town of Childress, with county seat honors in view, and this resulted in the usual fierce rivalry characteristic of those days. Before the danger point was reached, however, a compromise was effected whereby the two towns were merged into one on the site of the town of Henry, but taking the name of its rival, Childress, the court house being accordingly moved and the old site of Childress abandoned. Mr. Williams then bought a section of land about three miles south of town and began farming operations on a large scale. The abundant crops of wheat and of other grains garnered during the first two or three years of his residence here encouraged him to acquire a large equipment of modern farm reaping and threshing machinery, first class buildings and other accessories, but there came a period of bad years beginning about 1892, and Mr. Williams finally in 1896 sold his farming interests and returned to the work of his trade in Childress. He again enjoyed his customary success, the greater part of his business in those days being the making of fine boots for the cowboys. He was elected a justice of the peace in November of 1898, and has served continuously since in that capacity, efficient and capable in the discharge of his duties and giving the highest satisfaction to all. He was one of the organizers and was formerly a vice-president of the First State Bank of Childress, and he is a member of the Masonic order and of the Methodist church.

The seven children of Mr. and Mrs. Williams are: Mrs. Sallie E. Tilson, Charles Sumner Williams (a lawyer at Plainview), Rev. Thomas Edward Williams (a Methodist minister located in Oklahoma), Mrs. Ophelia Merrick and Dan, Dave and George Raworth Williams. The children have all enjoyed splendid educational advantages.

JUDGE WILLIAM G. GROSS.—The name of Judge William G. Gross is a familiar one in political and professional circles in the Panhandle country of Texas, and throughout the entire history of the city of Childress he has been a distinguished member of its bar. He was born at Leavenworth, Kansas, in 1865, and in 1869 he came with his parents to Texas and they settled in Grayson county. The son William attained to mature years on a farm there and he prepared for his chosen work in the legal profession in the law department of the State University at Austin and graduated

with its class of 1886. In that same year he came to northwestern Texas, and in 1887 he came from Vernon, where he had first located, to the new town of Childress. This was the year of the founding of the town and the completion of the Fort Worth and Denver Railroad to this point.

Judge Gross has lived in Childress ever since those first days of its history, a talented and successful member of its bench and bar and a public official of proved worth and efficiency. He was made the first attorney of Childress county and in 1896 was elected its county judge. He served in that high official capacity by successive elections until 1902, when he retired voluntarily to resume his private law practice exclusively, but in 1908 he was again made the judge of Childress county and is the present incumbent of that office.

Judge Gross has been a participant in the history of Childress from its beginning, and he is one of the city's most highly esteemed and useful citizens. By his first marriage, which was to Emma Russell, he became the father of three children. The three children are Grady, Russell and Willie. His second marriage, to Miss Annie Krohne, has been without issue.

BENJAMIN T. WILLIAMS stands at the head of the agricultural interests of Childress county, and he has engraved his name on the pages of its history in this vocation. To him belongs the credit of raising the first wheat in Childress county, this having antedated the days of harvesting machinery here, and he cut his wheat with a cradle, and he was the first to bring in a self-binder harvester. He has been "first" in many things pertaining to the upbuilding and development of this community, and he is honored as one of Childress county's most progressive and influential citizens and as one of its real builders.

Mr. Williams was born near Chillicothe, Ohio, but his young life was filled with changes and adventures. At the age of ten he came west to Missouri with his parents, the family locating in Franklin county, and in 1869 he went to Kansas City, but soon thereafter he went into central Kansas, in what was then the buffalo frontier country in Russell and Ellis counties. From there he went, in 1874, to Colorado, living in that state until 1883, and while there he was at Leadville and various other of the large mining camps of those days. In the meantime he became identified with contracting and building, following these occupations in Colorado in connection with mining. He had gained considerable experience in farming in central Kansas and to a small extent in Colorado. The year of 1883 witnessed his arrival in Texas, and for the three following years he lived at Georgetown in Williamson county. In 1886 he came into the Panhandle country and located in Childress county, although this particular division was not organized until the following year, and he acquired a large amount of the cheap lands that were to be had in those days with keen foresight as to its future value. His former experience in western farming had shown him what could be done in what then appeared to be a semi-arid country, and he entered into farming operations here without any misgivings for the future. And he has continued on with the result that he is now the largest and most successful farmer in the county, becoming more and more prosperous with each passing year. This is no doubt the result of intelligent study of local conditions and an industrious application of the teachings of experience. Mr. Williams' principal crop



*B T Williams*





is corn, and it is in this that he has met his greatest success. His original farm, the one on which he located on coming to the county in 1886, a year before the railroad was completed to this point, is six miles west of Childress, and he has several sections of fine land in that vicinity. He also has a splendid section adjoining Childress on the west, where he carries on additional farming operations, and there he built his home in 1909, a beautiful brick structure on an elevation overlooking the city and surrounding country, one of the county's finest homes. He has done much building in Childress and its surrounding country, and he has always handled more or less stock, but his principal business has been farming.

Mr. Williams married Emma Wolf, who was born in Piatt county, Illinois, and their nine children are Albert, Kit, Mrs. Bessie Cain, Mattie, Earl, Daisy, Benjamin, Wilbur and George.

JUDGE AMOS J. FIRES was born in Clay county, Indiana, in 1864, but coming to the Lone Star state in 1886 he has become a leading member of the bench and bar of the Panhandle country, and is honored as one of the founders of Childress. He was reared and educated primarily at Worthington in Greene County, Indiana, but he was a student also at the Northern Indiana College at Valparaiso and studied law at Jeffersonville, that state, completing his legal studies in the law department of the University of Louisville, of which he is a graduate with the class of 1886.

In the fall of that year Judge Fires came to the southwest to carve out his fame and his fortune, and locating in what has since been organized as Childress county in the Texas Panhandle, he settled on a section of land where the town of Carey now stands, eight miles west of the present city of Childress. The Judge's life here is coincident with and forms an important part of the history of Childress and of Childress county. On first locating here in 1886 there were then not only no town or railroad but there was no settlement of any kind west of Quanah, but anticipating the coming of the Fort Worth and Denver Railroad the few citizens then living in Childress county, the voters numbering less than a hundred, decided by election in the spring of 1887 to organize the county, and they accordingly established the county seat and built a court house, a small box structure, at the little town of Childress, which had in the meantime begun to spring into existence. This was the original town of Childress, the site of which was four miles west of the present city. But in the meantime another little town with the name of Henry had sprung into life, located on the present site of Childress, and this place was favored by the railroad which was then being built into the county as the proposed location for their station, switch, etc. And between the two little towns the usual county seat rivalry sprang up, but the town of Henry took advantage of the decision of the board of county commissioners of Donley county, to which Childress county had been attached, that this election of 1887 was not legal, and in order to effect an amicable compromise all parties agreed to hold another election, which was done in September of 1887 and resulted in the county seat being located at Henry, but the name of Childress, however, was adopted for the new county seat town, the court house and the few buildings being moved to the new location, the old town of Childress dropping out of existence and off the map.

At the time of the organization of the county and at the election of

1887 Judge Fires was elected the county judge, serving in the office one term, and he thus has the honor of being the first judge of Childress county. From that time on he has been practically "first" in every worthy enterprise for the upbuilding and development of his chosen city and county. On retiring from the county judgeship he entered upon a successful law practice and business career. He has been the attorney for the Fort Worth and Denver Railroad Company since about 1894, and he was one of the organizers and the leading spirit in the old First National Bank, which he moved to Quanah and sold to parties of that city. In 1902 he organized the Childress National Bank, of which he served as president, until he sold it in 1907, and the bank was consolidated with the bank now known as the City National Bank. In May of 1909 Judge Fires assisted in organizing and placing in operation the Farmers and Mechanics State Bank of Childress, with a capital stock of twenty-five thousand dollars. He has been very successful in all his financial enterprises and has an extensive law practice. The Judge has long been looked upon as the leading spirit of the town, and he has been the foremost figure always in inaugurating new enterprises and industries for what has become one of the most thriving and substantial cities in Northwest Texas. With Elbert Howard, a prosperous agriculturist living four miles west of Childress, Judge Fires sowed the first wheat in Childress county.

Mrs. Fires was before marriage Miss Maggie Warnick, born in Bloomfield, Greene county, Indiana, and they have three children, Callie, Irby and Chester. The family home, a magnificent residence erected in 1909, is located in the southeastern part of the city. Judge Fires is well known throughout the state as a prominent figure in Democratic politics, as a delegate to state conventions and in other high positions.

EPHRAIM LITTLE BIGGERSTAFF is one of the prominent business representatives of Childress. He came with his father to this city in 1887, having had several years' experience in business life, beginning in California, and soon after uniting his interests with those of Childress county he entered mercantile life. Since that time he has been continuously successful, never failing in his business ventures to make a good percentage of profit on his investments, and at the same time he has been prominent and energetic in the upbuilding of his chosen home place. Going to Estelline, Mr. Biggerstaff was for about ten years the manager of the Estelline Supply Company, and he also bought an interest in the Johnson Hardware Company of that place, a profitable venture, and was in the banking business there. Returning to Childress he became one of the organizers and was made the cashier of the First State Bank, which started in business in September of 1907, but later he retired from that office and organized the Wright-Biggerstaff Hardware and Furniture Company, which opened for business in December of 1908 in the new Biggerstaff building erected by him for that purpose on Main street. This is one of the finest business structures in the Panhandle country, of modern construction in every way, a handsome, substantial brick two stories high, with ornate front seventy-five by one hundred and ten feet, while the store equipment and fixtures are of the newest design and afford every facility for carrying on the firm's large retail business in hardware and furniture. The second floor is devoted to office rooms, of which

there are sixteen. The style of the firm now (1910) is the Biggerstaff Hardware and Furniture Company, not incorporated, E. L. Biggerstaff and H. J. King being the owners, and they are also pioneers of Childress.

E. L. Biggerstaff was born at Albany, in Clinton county, Kentucky, a son of R. W. and N. J. (Williams) Biggerstaff. R. W. Biggerstaff, who lives in Childress, was born in Monroe county, Kentucky, in 1826, and he lived in that state during a long number of years, principally in Monroe, Barron and Hart counties. Going to California in the early '70s, he lived there for seven years, but in about 1880 turned his face eastward and located in Parker county, Texas, living for some years on the well known old Figure 3 ranch, sometimes called the C. H. Higbee ranch, at Aledo. In 1887 he came to Childress county, establishing his home on a farm a mile and a half northeast of Childress, and although he still owns his farm there he has lived in town during the past several years. He is one of Childress county's best known pioneers. Ephraim L., his son, was reared principally in Barron and Hart counties, Kentucky, and going to California in 1873 he came from the latter commonwealth to Texas in 1880, and two years afterward embarked in the grocery business on Tucker Hill in Fort Worth. He assisted his father in conducting the Higbee ranch at Aledo from 1883 until 1887, and in the latter year he came to Childress county. He is a Knight Templar Mason, an Elk, and also a member of the Knights of Pythias fraternity.

Mrs. Biggerstaff was, before marriage, Ida May Neville, from Barron county, Kentucky, and their four children are Mary, Ethel, E. L. Jr. and Katie.

HARRY BARNES is one of the most prominent and successful contractors of Childress county, a young man of unusually varied experiences as a builder, adaptable and capable of taking hold of any part of his chosen vocation. He was born at Epsom, England, in 1876, and coming to America with his parents they located first at New Orleans, and from there came to Texas. William Barnes, his father, and who is now living in southern Texas, has been a large contractor and builder during a long number of years. During the early development of Childress he came to this city and was the contractor for the building of several of the prominent business blocks, including the Masonic Temple, the Bates building, the ice plant and many others.

Harry Barnes served his apprenticeship in carpentering and building construction with the well known building company, the Taylor-Buchanan Contracting Company of Galveston, and was also connected for some time with the Taylor-Moore Construction Company, and for the latter corporation he superintended the erection of the Texas State Building at the World's Fair at St. Louis in 1904. He also had valuable experience in construction work in Colorado on the Gunnison project, an irrigation canal carried on by the government, Mr. Barnes having charge of the excavation work and the erection of machinery and equipment for carrying on that work. He is particularly apt in setting up and operating all kinds of modern mechanical devices used in building and construction. He was located in Dallas at different times for several years, and while in that city was superintendent of the construction of the wood and steel work on the Stone and Webster plant. He was also engaged in construction work for nearly two years with the Iola Portland Cement Com-

pany, and helped to erect their large plant in West Dallas. Mr. Barnes located permanently in Childress in March of 1908, and has been engaged in most of the leading construction work in this city since that time, a notable example of which is the splendid residence of Judge A. J. Fires. He is a good draughtsman and a practical architect in the making of designs and drawings, and by working from his own drawings and plans he is able to do much more intelligent and satisfactory work than otherwise. Mr. Barnes married at Dallas Miss Marie Brundrett, who was born at Corsicana.

JOHN W. COCHRAN.—The public officials of Childress county include John W. Cochran, the present county sheriff. He was born at Griffin, Georgia, in 1872, and at the age of seventeen, in 1889, he came to Texas and located first in Hamilton county. He came to Childress county in 1891, and he has since that time been one of its prominent citizens. During several years he had charge of a ranch in this county, and he became well known in that time, but his acquaintanceship became further extended when he took the position of deputy under Sheriff Bellah, and in 1906, when he made his first race for the office of sheriff, he easily won the election and was re-elected at the following term in 1908. Mr. Cochran is known not only in his home county as a highly efficient officer, but as well throughout northwestern Texas generally, and he is a member of the Texas Sheriffs' Association and of the Knights of Pythias and Elks fraternities.

Mrs. Cochran was, before marriage, Annie Cunningham, born in San Saba county, Texas. They have a little daughter, Annie May.

OLIVER H. SMITH has become prominent as a stockman and horse breeder. He was born in Jackson parish, Louisiana, but was reared at Ruston in Lincoln parish. He was located at Monroe, Shreveport and other points in northern Louisiana until 1898, when he moved to Motley county, at the foot of the plains in western Texas, and there he embarked in the stock business, paying particular attention to the raising of horses and mules. Establishing a ranch in Motley county, he did well there, and, through close application to business and a natural aptitude for affairs, he became one of the best known horsemen in western Texas, and particularly in racing stock he has built up a stable of which he may well be proud, including specimens from some of the finest racing stock in the United States. His stable is headed by the celebrated Dean Patch, uncle of the noted pacer, Dan Patch, Mr. Smith having purchased Dean Patch at Lexington, Kentucky, and as the head of his breeding stock the animal has been a notable acquisition to the Smith stock farm. He also owns a number of fine fillies from Sam Grattan, the great show horse of Waxahachie, which has won all of the prizes in Texas in his class. He owns a daughter of the well known Charlie Embly, who trotted a mile in 2:10 $\frac{1}{4}$  at the Dallas fair. In fact, both his race and show horse stock are all of the highest class and bring him a large amount of business from various parts of Texas and Oklahoma.

Mr. Smith also conducts a large and successful business in mules, during the winter of 1908-9 alone handling twenty thousand dollars' worth of mules. Although a young man, Mr. Smith has won a notable success in the horse business, and is thoroughly deserving of the liberal

encouragement he has received in establishing this industry in Childress. He established his permanent residence in this city in 1908, building an attractive and substantial home in the southern part. He also owns valuable land in Childress county, his main pasture being three miles south of the city. He has taken an active and energetic part in building up the Childress Fair and Racing Association, whose annual races and exhibitions, held in July of each year, comprise a notable event in northwest Texas. He is superintendent of the track department, and this track is known as one of the best in the country.

Mr. Smith married Emma Robison, from Simmsboro, Louisiana, and their three children are Eugene, Helen and Wallace.

JOHN C. LISENBY.—After many years of active, aggressive labor in the business world, John C. Lisenby is now living retired, having amassed a comfortable fortune as a stockman. He was born in Itawamba county, Mississippi, in 1844. He was reared on a plantation, and in 1862, from Jackson county, he enlisted for service in the Confederate army, joining Company A, Magee's Regiment, Dobbins' Brigade of the cavalry service. He was engaged continuously in that service in the Trans-Mississippi department in Louisiana, Arkansas, Missouri and along the Missouri-Kansas border, until the close of the war. During his military services he was largely engaged in scouting and rough service characteristic of the warfare in those regions, fraught with the constant hardships, deprivations and dangers such as only a strong, healthy youth of rugged constitution could withstand.

In 1868, while yet a young man and with hardly a penny of financial resources, but filled with the vigor and determination to succeed in a new country, he came to Texas and located in Grayson county. His first work there was with cattle, and he has been a stockman all his life, never branching off into any other line of business, and keeping his mind always on making a success in the cattle industry, he prosecuted the occupation during a long number of years and never failed to make money.

After living in Grayson county for eight years, Mr. Lisenby moved to Clay county, his headquarters for several years, but in the meantime he had gradually worked his cattle westward, and in about 1889 he moved his headquarters to the foot of the plains in Motley county, making his home at Matador. In 1906 he established his permanent home in Childress, and about that time he also retired from active participation in the cattle business, it being then largely taken over by his son, G. E. Lisenby, who retains the headquarters in Motley county. The senior Mr. Lisenby is one of the strongest citizens financially in Childress. He has made all of his money in the cattle business, and it has been earned by close application to duty through a long number of years, and he is well entitled to the rest he is taking. He is a Royal Arch Mason.

Mrs. Lisenby was, before marriage, Miss S. N. Boston, born in Mississippi, and they have three children: G. Ed Lisenby, Mrs. Mollie Echolds and John C. Lisenby.

ERNEST D. HUNT is prominently known as a cattle dealer, as a former representative of the State Sanitary Board, and as a member of a family which has been identified with the interests of northwest Texas during

many years. He was born at Darlington, in county Durham, England, January 15, 1877, a son of P. W. and Susannah (Mead) Hunt, both of whom were born in Ireland, but their ancestral home was England. They lived at Darlington until 1879, coming then to America. From New York they made their way to Galveston, Texas, by boat and located at Brenham in Washington county, and in 1889 the family came to northwest Texas and established their home at Quanah, where the father became connected with the Fort Worth and Denver Railroad Company and continued in their service for some years. Later he became editor of the *Texas Stock and Farm Journal*. During later years he has made his home in Fort Worth, where he is engaged in the real estate business.

Ernest D. Hunt was reared in the cattle industry of Texas, and he has been connected with this vocation since his boyhood. He worked with cattle for the O X ranch for several years, later going into the live stock business for himself, and he has a ranch on the Pease river, southeast of Childress. He is a thoroughly qualified stockman and has been very successful in the business. For eight years he represented in this district the Texas State Sanitary Board as inspector, his duties being to inspect herds of cattle that were offered for shipment through the quarantine line. He received that appointment through the Hon. M. M. Hankins of Quanah, a member of the State Quarantine Commission, and he performed his duties with signal satisfaction to all interests.

Mrs. Hunt was, before marriage, Effie Davis, and three children have been born to them—Lillian, Davis and Helen.

JOHN CZEWSKI is honored as one of the pioneers of Childress county, and he is well known as a farmer and stockman. Born in Austria in 1860, he came to America in 1883, landing in New York city, and in 1886 he came to northwest Texas and in the same year located in Childress county, in the southeastern part, about fourteen miles from the present city of Childress. But the county had at that time not been organized and the town of Childress was not thought of. The country was very sparsely settled, used almost altogether for range by the big cattle outfits, and in this wilderness Mr. Czewski started to work to make a farm and raise some crops, principally wheat. He lived in that location for nine years, moving then to what is now known as the Cottonwood section, a fine farming community seven miles northeast of Childress. There he has a splendid farm of three hundred acres, which has increased greatly in value with the rapid development of the country within the past six or seven years, and he also owns a farm a mile north of the city, which he conducted successfully for some time as a dairy farm, but he sold his dairy interests in 1909. In 1895 he rented a blacksmith shop in Chicago and conducted it for four years. He bought a wagon yard in Childress in 1898, which he conducted in addition to his farm and live stock interests, his home being also located in the city.

Mr. Czewski came to this country a poor young man, practically without a penny financially, and notwithstanding the very disastrously bad years which followed, memorable for their drouths, panics, etc., he remained in his chosen country and has achieved success. His wife, to whom he was married in 1888, and who was born in Germany, was, before her marriage, Charlotte Kupke, and they have seven children living:



Rosa, Otto, Louise, Helen, Lena, Joanna and Charlotte. Rudolph died aged seven years, and one died in infancy.

#### FOARD COUNTY

Foard county was created from adjacent counties March 3, 1891, and organized the following April. The total population of the county in 1900 was 1,568; Crowell, the county seat, had 278. In 1903 the taxable values of the county were \$1,614,770, and in 1909, \$3,453,360.

Until the completion of the Orient railroad through the center of the county, in 1909, the nearest shipping points were at Quanah and Vernon. The development of the county has only begun during the last few years. This is the wheat region of northwest Texas, and cotton, fruit and other farm products contribute to the wealth of the people.

The progress of the county is reflected in the growth of the county seat town from a country hamlet, before the railroad came, to a new-built little city, with many of the municipal and business facilities of older and larger cities. A recent magazine article describes its advantages as follows:

"Crowell has five churches; an electric light plant under construction; waterworks system being installed; large dam under construction; three large cotton gins; four large lumber yards; three large implement houses; over forty business houses; two substantial banks; four office buildings; up-to-date opera house; most beautiful streets of any town in the West; up-to-date telephone system; good drainage; twenty-six first class automobiles; garage; over five hundred residences, many of them palatial homes, most of them built recently, and others under construction; over one dozen brick business houses now under construction, many of them already leased for from one to three years; new \$60,000 courthouse under construction; site purchased and plans submitted for \$30,000 hotel; elevator with capacity of 1,500 bushels per hour just completed; good school buildings; \$17,000 bonds voted and accepted for building of brick high school; over one hundred and fifty car loads of building material have been received at this place within the past ninety days. Five years ago the taxable valuation was \$10,000; today it is near \$1,000,000."

JUDGE ROBERT COLE holds and merits a place among the representative legal practitioners and citizens of Crowell in Foard county, Texas, an eminent jurist, an able judge, and an honored pioneer. He was born in Panola county, Mississippi, but came when a boy with his parents to Texas in 1869, landing in the city of Galveston, while later they located in Grimes county. Dr. R. A. Cole, the judge's father, died at Rockport, this state, in 1907. He had been a surgeon in the Confederate army during the war, and he was a practicing physician during many years.

Judge Cole was reared in Grimes county, but before he became of age he left home and came to the then frontier of Texas, locating in 1876 at Breckenridge, in Stephens county. Fort Griffin, the noted frontier post of those days, was located in that county. The young lad worked with cattle outfits for a time, but that occupation not proving congenial he began the study of law and as soon as the opportunity offered he completed his legal studies under the Hon. T. B. Wheeler, ex-lieutenant governor of Texas, at that time a resident of Breckenridge, but now living

in Arkansas Pass. Robert Cole was admitted to the bar in February of 1880, and he came to what is now Foard county, then a part of Hardeman county, in 1885, and this county has remained his home ever since and he is numbered among its well known and honored pioneers. This community at that time was given up almost entirely to large cattle ranges, and only a few widely scattered settlers were then farming the land. Mr. Cole, however, turned his attention to farming, twelve miles east of the present town of Crowell, on Paradise creek, and he remained there until 1892. The county of Foard had been organized in 1891, and the town of Crowell, its county seat, founded in the same year, and there its future judge located to begin his law practice. He was elected the judge of Foard county some time after this, and he filled that office for four years, and for some time he also served as the county attorney by appointment of the county commissioners. Judge Cole is a successful lawyer and thoroughly familiar with conditions in Foard county and this section of the state. He is also a member of the firm of Massengill and Cole, real estate dealers.

Judge Cole married Fannie Lockhart in Stephens county in 1881, but he has recently suffered the loss of this companion, her death occurring in 1908 while on a visit to her old home. There are six children in his family: Grover, Crutcher, Kinlock, Warwick, Robbie and Lottie. Judge Cole is a Mason, an Odd Fellow, a Knight of Pythias and a member of the Christian church.

JOE W. BEVERLY has been identified with the growth and development of Crowell and of Foard county since the days of their infancy, and his lineage traces back to the pioneers of the Lone Star state. John Beverly, his father, and who is now deceased, was one of the most prominent of the early residents of Collins county, whither he went with his father in 1845. The latter was from Tennessee, but came to Texas from Illinois, and in early years he was prominent in Collin county affairs and was one of its first commissioners. The old Beverly home is a farm in the southern part of the county, near Plano, and there the mother of Joe W. Beverly, Isabel (Russell) Beverly, has lived continuously for sixty years and more, and there her son Joe was born in 1850.

Joe W. Beverly lived in that home until 1885, coming then to what is now Foard county, but which then formed a part of Hardeman county, and here he has ever since remained, one of its honored early pioneer settlers, one of its largest land owners and real estate operators and one of its most active citizens. In his own life on the northwestern Texas frontier he has repeated the experiences of his father and his grandfather as pioneers in Collin county. Following his arrival here, Mr. Beverly began the development of a farm four miles northeast of the present town of Crowell. The few settlers of the community at that time were scattered over a wide expanse of country, it being for the most part occupied by the large cattle firms for range. The county of Foard was detached from Hardeman county in 1891 and organized as a separate division, and in the same year the town of Crowell was started and was made the county seat. Mr. Beverly located in the new town and erected its first livery barn and conducted it for seven years. In 1898 he embarked in the general real estate and abstract business, and he has since continued a successful representative of those vocations, and in later years



he has been joined by his brother, Tom W. Beverly, who came from Collin county for that purpose, and he is the present mayor of Crowell. The firm of Beverly and Beverly transact a large business both in town property and farms, and, associated with C. C. Hemming of Colorado Springs, they purchased the well known McDonald property near Rayland, about fifteen miles east of Crowell, in Foard county, which they divided into farms, improved and are selling to experienced farmers. The firm also has the Beverly and Martin addition to Crowell, consisting of one hundred and sixty acres adjoining on the northwest, a splendid residence subdivision. Joe W. Beverly owns and conducts some fine farming land of his own. Owing to his long residence and practical experience he is thoroughly familiar with the rich and varied agricultural resources of Foard county, and is exceptionally well qualified to give advice and the benefit of his experience to prospective settlers. He is the secretary of the Crowell Independent School District, and a member of the Masonic order and of the Methodist church.

He married Laura Reed, a daughter of the late R. M. Reed, of a Georgia family, and one of the first merchants of Crowell. He died in 1893, and his widow is living with her daughter, Mrs. Beverly. The five children of Mr. and Mrs. Beverly are Joe Russell, Lee Allen and A. Y. Beverly, and Mrs. Lizzie Roberts and Mrs. Mattie Hutchinson. Joe R. Beverly, the eldest son, has charge of the abstract department for the firm of Beverly and Beverly.

#### McCULLOCH COUNTY

McCulloch county, named in honor of Captain Ben McCulloch, was created by the legislature August 27, 1856. The county court, when elected, was directed to choose sites to be voted on for county seat, and the court was to select a name for the town thus founded. A meager population of stockmen had settled in this region, chiefly along Brady's creek, before the war, but no organization of a county government was attempted until 1862. The county officials for that year were: E. Woodall, chief justice; A. T. McMurtrie, county clerk; R. D. Bedwell, assessor and collector. In 1866 the officers were: J. Beasley, judge; J. K. Sloy, county clerk; J. A. Crews, district clerk; A. B. Conner, sheriff; J. W. Dump, assessor and collector.

Persistent Indian hostilities during and after the war prevented anything like permanent settlement, and the few who remained, though of the hardy class of frontiersmen, did little or nothing to develop the country. County organization was allowed to lapse, and the county was not organized on a permanent basis until 1876. Brady, the chief settlement, was made the county seat.

The county had only 173 inhabitants at the census of 1870. The rapid influx of stockmen to western Texas during the next decade brought the population in 1880 to 1,533 (22 negroes). In the meantime Camp San Saba had been established in the southern part of the county, originally as a temporary frontier post, and soon became a center of settlement. A description of the county in 1877 stated that Brady City had a population of about 100 and "Camp San Saba, Dugout and Bradshaw's Mill are beginning to be thriving little villages, more especially San Saba, which is located in a very favorable portion of the county. . . .

They all have good schools and churches." The same publication mentions the establishment during the preceding year of many sheep ranches. In 1882 there were about 29,000 cattle, while the number of sheep was about 52,000. Stock raising is still the large industry, though the breaking up of the large ranches began less than ten years ago. In 1909 the tax rolls showed about 33,000 cattle, 8,000 horses and mules and about 10,000 sheep.

A statistical publication of 1882 described the towns as follows: "Brady City has from 150 to 250 inhabitants, two hotels, two livery stables, several stores and a substantial and handsome court house and jail, built of native stone. Camp San Saba has about 100 inhabitants, three stores, a postoffice and a good stone building used for church and school purposes. Voca, a small village, has one store, a postoffice and a cotton gin and grist mill, run by water power. The scholastic population for the year 1882-83 is 215, for which public free schools are provided. The Methodist and Disciples, or Christian, denominations hold religious services at several places in the county, and church conveniences, as yet scant, are improving."

The population of the county in 1890 was 3,217; in 1900, 3,960; and in 1910, 13,405. In 1881 the taxable values of property were \$588,754, of which about \$220,000 represented the assessment of live stock. In 1903 assessed values were \$2,080,960; and in 1909, \$5,754,804.

The extension of the Fort Worth & Rio Grande Railroad from Brownwood to Brady, in 1902, was the most important commercial event of recent years. Hitherto all the live stock was driven out of the county to railroad markets, and outside towns were the distributing points for all necessities consumed here. When Brady became the terminus of the railroad, it at once became and has since continued to be the shipping and distributing point for a vast area to the west and south. Brady claims to be surrounded by the largest range and to be the largest cattle shipping point in the world, over one hundred thousand cattle being collected here for shipment every year. The same cause has built up some large mercantile houses, which supply the local trade for many miles around. The Brady Commercial Club summarizes the resources of the town as follows:

"Largest shipping point in the world for cattle, cotton and pecans (combined). More than 50,000 bales of cotton marketed from wagons, season 1908-09, and 100,000 head of cattle shipped from Brady, 1908-09. Center of a trade territory fifty miles square; finest farming land in Texas. Brady has two \$100,000 oil mills, one compress, four gins, waterworks, electric lights, telephones, ample banking facilities, several wholesale concerns, four newspapers, prosperous, self-sustaining Fair Association, etc."

A branch of the Santa Fe is now being built from Lometa through Brady, and other lines are proposed to develop this section of the state. The population of Brady in 1890 was 560; in 1900, 690. In 1890 San Saba had a population of 36; Voca, 53; Waldrip, 47. Waldrip is located in the coal mining region, and in 1900 its population was 127.

THOMAS H. MARSDEN was numbered among the old time cattlemen of Central and Western Texas, and became one of the large property owners of McCulloch county. He was born in the city of New York, July 27, 1846, but in 1854 he came with his parents to Texas, and locating in Brazoria county the family lived there for many years. From Brazoria



*J. H. Marsden*



county Mr. Marsden went to Beeville, in Bee county, and was there at the time of the inauguration of the Civil war. He served in the Confederate army throughout that struggle, having enlisted at Beeville in the Thirty-second Texas Cavalry, Wood's Regiment, Company D, under Captain W. L. Foster, and his military services were in the Trans-Mississippi department and principally in Texas.

When the war ended Mr. Marsden returned to Bee county, and in 1871 he was elected its sheriff, serving in that capacity until 1874, and in 1881 he came to McCulloch county, and bringing his cattle with him he established his headquarters at Brady and worked cattle over adjacent ranges for several years. He later acquired a large pasture joining Brady on the west, and he still owns eight hundred acres of the tract, and owing to its close proximity to the city it has become a very valuable property. The home is located on this land, in the western part of the city, and during the last years of his life he lived practically retired from active participation in the cattle business. He was the first to erect wire fence in the vicinity of Brady.

Mr. Marsden's wife was, before marriage, Fannie A. Jones, born in Grimes county, and their nine children are: Mrs. Katie Jones, Allen C. Marsden, Mrs. Lillie Jones, T. T. Marsden, W. H. P. Marsden, Crosby Marsden, Clara D. Marsden, Duke Marsden and Dick Marsden. Mr. Marsden was at the time of his death colonel on the staff of the commander of the Mountain Remnant Brigade, an organization of Confederate soldiers in central southwestern Texas, and he was a member of the Knights of Honor. He was called from this life on the 19th of February, 1910, and thus passed away one of the honored pioneers of Central and Western Texas.

FRANK M. RICHARDS.—As a pioneer citizen and stockman, Frank McDonald Richards has taken a prominent part in the development of Brady and of McCulloch county, and he is a wealthy, substantial citizen. His name has become prominent in this section of the state as a pioneer, as a stockman and as the president of the Brady National Bank. He was born in Grayson county, Texas, December 20, 1855, and he was reared and educated there, growing up in the cattle business, but in 1876 he came out to McCulloch county, one of the first to establish a home here. He located on Corn creek, about twenty-one miles northeast of Brady, and from his headquarters there he handled cattle over the old range, but with the coming of the wire fence he enclosed his pastures in this county and his large cattle business gradually developed into the modern features of this great industry, with smaller pastures and a grading of the stock. His present ranch lies about eight miles east of Brady, and consists of eighty-five hundred acres, equipped with every improvement for carrying on the cattle business, and it is one of the finest properties of its kind in McCulloch county. Mr. Richards is a breeder of fine stock, his bulls being all registered Herefords and his cows are all of the highest grades. In 1907 he began the breeding of registered Hereford cattle in connection with his other live stock business.

His wife, to whom he was married in Brown county, Texas, is Sidney (Smiley) Richards. She was born in Missouri, but reared in Grayson county, Texas. The Richards home is a beautiful place on the hill in the southern part of Brady.

ELIAS EDWARD WILLOUGHBY, a wealthy stockman and farmer, has been one of McCulloch county's chief factors in opening its lands for farming purposes, and he has won special prominence in the raising of cotton. Born in Laclede county, Missouri, in 1853, he in 1869 came with his older brother, W. G., to Texas, locating in Tarrant county. Their home was in the northern part of the county, where the town of Keller, on the Missouri, Kansas and Texas Railroad, stands, and Elias E. Willoughby was the founder of that town, and he named it in honor of L. L. Keller, at that time division superintendent of the railroad. He started the town about the time the road was built through to Fort Worth.

Mr. Willoughby continued his residence in Tarrant county until 1883, and he came then to McCulloch county, bringing some cattle with him for the purpose of going into the cattle business here, and that small herd proved the nucleus of what subsequently became one of the largest cattle outfits in this section of the state. He located his headquarters at the head of Little Brady creek, about twelve miles east of the town of Brady, and he still owns this place where he originally located. It forms a part of his extensive land interests, which amount to about six thousand acres of rich farming land in this section of the county. This is known as the Rochelle country, the little village of Rochelle having grown up in its midst. Mr. Willoughby continued with great success in the cattle business for many years. When he first came here the country was open range, and with the wire fence era he leased and controlled large pastures in McCulloch county and operated his cattle business on the large pastures until the land became more and more valuable for agricultural purposes, much too valuable to hold it in large pastures. Keeping fully in touch with the progress of the times, he began to grade his cattle, doing more feeding and concentrating the business on a less amount of land until it developed into the modern stock raising that has been the potent factor in making this section of the state notable for its fine live stock. For breeding purposes he keeps only the finest grade of Herefords, and his live stock business is unusually successful.

Mr. Willoughby is one of only a few of the old time stockmen who have in later years taken up agriculture on a large scale. He is one of the largest cotton farmers in McCulloch county. In 1908 he raised six hundred bales of cotton on a thousand acres of land. He was also the first cotton raiser in the county, and his pioneer efforts in this great industry have led to the present development of the county in this one particular, making it to stand among the first of the counties in cotton production in Texas. He believes this crop to be particularly adapted to the soil of this county and to be its main source of wealth, and he encourages intelligent cotton growing in every way. Through his industry and foresight in this direction, Mr. Willoughby's lands have greatly increased in value, and some of his old lands that he originally bought as low as a dollar an acre have sold in small and selected tracts within the past year for as high as a hundred dollars an acre. Besides the farming lands mentioned above, he also owns good farms in other parts of the county. His first home after coming here he built from lumber that he hauled by ox teams from Lampasas. At that time there were not probably fifty acres in cultivation in the entire county. During the past several years he has made his home in Brady, and he has a beautiful residence on the hill in

the southern part of the town. He is a director of the Brady National Bank. He is a member of the Masonic fraternity.

Mr. Willoughby married, in Tarrant county, Lola Brownfield, born in Missouri, and their seven children are: Paul, Mrs. Nina White, James O., Roy, Hayde, Edward and Ray. Paul Willoughby, the eldest son, learned the cattle business under his father, and he is now a prominent cattlemen, operating several large ranches in western and southwestern Texas. The second son, James O., is also interested in the cattle business. The Willoughbys are one of the most prominent families of McCulloch county.

WILLIAM R. RICE is one of McCulloch county's early pioneers and prominent business men. He was born at Somerville, in Morgan county, Alabama, in 1849, and his father was a merchant there. A short time before the breaking out of the war the son went to New York City to stay with his uncle, John W. Rice, a merchant there, and to go to school. He was in that city at the time hostilities were opened, and a short time afterward started to Charleston, South Carolina, to visit another uncle, Andrew Cunningham, reaching there by a roundabout way. He was on Morris Island in Charleston harbor when Battery Wagner was taken and the arsenal captured, and shortly after this his uncle sent him to Spartanburg, South Carolina, to resume his studies, but thrilled with the spirit of adventure and the excitement of war he soon left school and enlisted in the Confederate service under the command of the noted raider, John Morgan. He was assigned to duty with the Seventh Kentucky Cavalry, a part of Morgan's command, and after the latter's death Mr. Rice served under his successor, General Basil Duke, and was in North Carolina with these troops at the close of the war. An interesting feature of his military career was when he was one of the escort selected from General Duke's troops that met President Jefferson Davis at a railroad station in North Carolina, following his escape from Richmond, and conducted him westward through northern Georgia, their intention being to give him safe escort and escape to Texas. But these plans were changed by Mr. Davis himself, and he was shortly afterward captured.

In 1865, following the close of the war, Mr. Rice came to Texas and located on a ranch about three miles north of Fort Worth. Fort Worth was then only a small frontier settlement, and he recalls to mind many interesting incidents connected with the early days of that city and the prominent characters who were the pioneer builders of the place. He lived in the Fort Worth neighborhood at intervals for nearly ten years, successfully engaged in the cattle business, in the meantime making occasional trips hunting cows and prospecting on what was then the far frontier. These trips brought him to the region of Coleman, McCulloch and San Saba counties, and often were fraught with adventure, particularly in connection with the Indian raids which were at their worst in those days. Leaving Tarrant county he was located for some time in San Saba county, and in 1875 located permanently in McCulloch county, which has since been his home. He took part in the organization of the county in 1876, and was one of the voters in the first county election. He now owns the splendid ranch where he carries on his general farming operations, located seven miles west of Brady, and he also has other farms in the county. During the past several years he has been engaged in the mercantile business in Brady, but he has retired from the active management of this



business, and he owns the large business block on the west side of the court house square.

Mr. Rice's life as a youthful soldier and later as a frontier cattleman in Texas is replete with interesting incident and reminiscences of interesting characters.

WILLIAM D. CROTHERS is a pioneer citizen and banker of Brady, McCulloch county. He was born at Jeffersonville, Indiana, and he received a part of his education and the most of his business training at Evansville, Indiana, which was his home until he was eighteen years of age. In 1882 he came to Texas and went into the cattle business in McCulloch county, and he continued the conduct of a ranch here for five years, selling his cattle interests then and locating temporarily in Brownwood, where during the following five years he was connected with the First National Bank. Returning then to Brady he in 1894 established the private banking house of W. D. Crothers, and after six years of uninterrupted success Mr. F. W. Henderson came into the firm, business afterward being connected under the name of Crothers and Henderson, and when G. R. White subsequently bought Mr. Henderson's interest the firm name became Crothers and White. On the 11th of March, 1907, it became a national bank, assuming the name of the Commercial National Bank, with Mr. Crothers as cashier and Mr. White president. The bank has a capital stock of one hundred thousand dollars, with surplus and profits of over forty thousand dollars, and the stock of the Commercial National is owned by some of the most progressive business men, farmers and stockmen of the country surrounding Brady, their individual responsibilities being over six million dollars. The bank is one of the financial bulwarks of this section.

Mr. Crothers through all these years has been thoroughly identified with the growth and development of McCulloch county, and upon the incorporation of Brady as a city in 1906 he was elected its first mayor and served in that capacity for one year. He laid out and is the owner of Crothers' Addition in the northern part of the city, and there his own home is located. He is largely interested in the various enterprises and the various development projects of Brady and of McCulloch county, an influential and progressive citizen and a representative business man. He married Miss Nannie C. French and they have five children: Marie, Mrs. Victoria White, Chase, William F. and Minnie J.

WILLIAM P. DOTY has engraved his name on the pages of the history of the Lone Star state as one of its pioneer surveyors. Although born at Westfield, in Tioga county, Pennsylvania, he was educated in the University of Iowa at Iowa City, and it was there that he also learned surveying and civil engineering. Coming from Iowa City to Texas in 1870, he began work on the original survey of the old International Railroad between Hearne and Texarkana, being later transferred to the survey of the Texas and Pacific west of Fort Worth. He was connected with the first survey of that project, which ran through Fort Griffin, in Shackelford county, but this survey was afterward abandoned and the road built through the tier of counties south of Shackelford.

Mr. Doty came to McCulloch county in 1874, and he thus became one of the county's earliest pioneers, and his life here covers the period of





W.D. Crocker.



its organization in 1875 and the election of its first officers in the same year. Mr. Doty signed the original petition for the county's organization and voted for these first officers, and he then helped to lay off the town of Brady, selected as the county seat. In 1880 he was elected the county judge, and in 1896 he was made the surveyor of the county and has been returned to that office at every succeeding election. During the early years of his residence in this county Mr. Doty embarked in the sheep business on quite an extensive scale, and he made money as a sheepman until the panic and the great depression in prices of sheep forced him out of the business. His ranch, known as the Bear Creek ranch, was located seven miles southwest of Brady, and it was there, on the 17th of January, 1878, that his partner, Simeon Palmer, was killed by the Indians, this brutal tragedy having been the last they committed. Mr. Doty's experience as a surveyor and as a pioneer and frontiersman has been a most interesting one. In 1909, in association with his son-in-law, Mr. James R. Stone, he laid off and placed on the market their new addition to the city of Brady, known as the Doty-Stone Addition, a beautiful elevation in the southern part of the town and consisting of about fourteen acres divided into fifty-five building lots.

Mr. Doty had the misfortune to lose his wife by death on July 3, 1908. She was, before marriage, Florence A. Boudinot, and their marriage was celebrated in Kentucky, her native state. There is one daughter of this union, Mrs. Mabel Stone.

HON. JOHN BEASLEY was one of the earliest pioneers of what is now McCulloch county, his life's history having touched the early, formative period of this section and formed an integral part in that indissoluble chain which linked those days with later day progress and prosperity. He came here in 1861 and located four and a half miles northeast of the present town of Mercury, on the Colorado river, and the old homestead there is yet the property of the Beasley family, and there also the Hon. John Beasley passed away in death on the 28th of April, 1883, at the age of seventy-one years. He was born in Stoddard county, Missouri, and even before coming to Texas he was a prominent character in his home county, representing it in the Missouri legislature of 1853.

His advent into McCulloch county antedated its organization fifteen years or more. It was set apart as a separate organization in 1876, and Mr. Beasley was elected its first judge and served one term in that high office. With his family he lived here through the long period of hardships incidental to life on the Texas frontier, chief among which was the danger from the terrible Indian raids which were a regular event and a constant menace to life and property on this frontier from the close of the war up to the middle seventies. The Hon. John Beasley was a grand character in every way, as a citizen, as a husband and as a father. His widow, Mary (Guess) Beasley, died in 1901. There are nine children, namely: J. N. Beasley, William Beasley, A. J. Beasley, J. R. Beasley, Tom I. Beasley, J. M. Beasley, Mrs. Julia Dufflemire, Mrs. Victoria White and Mrs. Amanda Penn. Three of the sons—J. R., Tom J. and J. M. Beasley—are members of the firm of Cox and Beasley Brothers, general merchants and bankers at Mercury, the bank being conducted under the name of the Bank of Mercury. They are also interested in many other enterprises, chief among which is the cattle industry. They are successful busi-

ness men, as well as men of prominence and influence in McCulloch county.

J. W. EMBRY is a builder and contractor living at Brady. He was born in Arkansas, but came when a child with his parents to Texas, the family locating in Ellis county, and he was reared there and learned his trade of carpentering and building, a vocation that has continued his main pursuit through life. He enlisted, in Ellis county, in Company H, Twelfth Texas Cavalry, Parson's Brigade, and as a member of that organization he served throughout the war between the north and the south in the Trans-Mississippi Department. His army services were mostly in Arkansas and Louisiana and included the battles of the Red River campaign. On leaving Ellis county, Mr. Embry lived for thirty years at Decatur, in Wise county, but during that time his business often took him to other parts of the state and he enjoyed a wide acquaintance through all the country from Ellis county north to the Red river, becoming particularly familiar with the pioneer character of that section. Early in the year of 1904 he located at Brady. The town had begun to build rapidly at that time, following the completion of the Frisco railroad to Brady, and Mr. Embry took a prominent part in this early building, erecting perhaps more of its structures than any other contractor. In 1907 he was elected the mayor of Brady, but after about a year's service in that capacity he resigned, finding that his official duties interfered seriously with his private interests. He was also appointed the superintendent of the Brady Water and Light Company, but at the same time he has continued in his business as a contractor and builder.

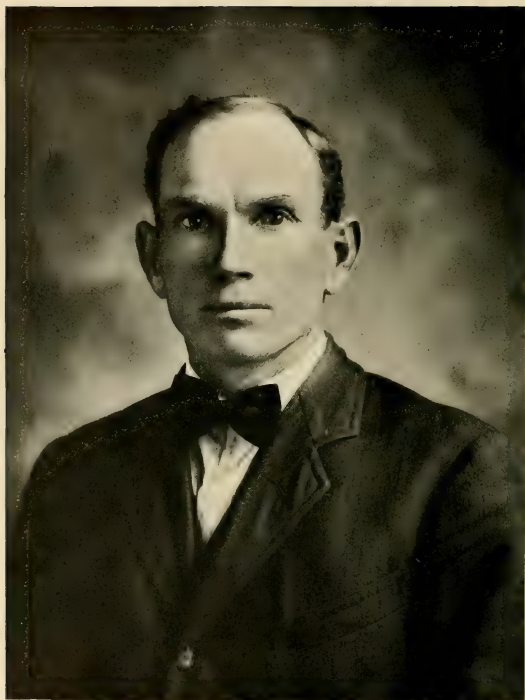
Mr. Embry's wife is Margaret (Fields) Embry, born in Kentucky, but reared in Ellis county, where they were married in 1867. They have four children—Otis, J. B., N. B. and Fannie Embry.

T. L. SANSOM, the present sheriff of McCulloch county, represents a family prominent in various sections of Texas, and he is a nephew of Robert Sansom, one of the early settlers of Johnson county and practically the founder of the town of Alvarado, surrounding which the Sansom family have owned extensive landed interests for many years. Robert Sansom was the father of Marion Sansom, a capitalist and prominent citizen of Fort Worth.

T. L. Sansom was born and reared in Gonzales county. Locating in Llano in 1884, he remained there until 1891, and in that year took up his residence at Mercury, in McCulloch county, where he has ever since resided. He has a splendid farm adjoining the town on the east, and has for many years been a prominent and successful farmer. During six years he served as a county commissioner from precinct No. 4, representing the business interests of the county with fidelity and ability. In 1906 he was elected the county's sheriff and was re-elected to the office in 1908. His administration as the sheriff of McCulloch county has been notable for efficiency in ridding the county of undesirable characters, putting a stop to law breaking of all kinds, and in instituting a clean government, and it has given the greatest of satisfaction to the people.

Mr. Sansom married Lena Alexander, and their eight children are: Leslie C., Leonard, Modena, Floyd, Myrtle, Leo, Elden and Marian. He is a member of the Masonic fraternity.





*William W. Spiller*

WILLIAM W. SPILLER represents one of the earliest pioneer families of central Texas, and his birth occurred in McCulloch county in 1870, his parents being Meredith and Martha A. (Courtney) Spiller. Meredith Spiller, born in Louisiana, came to Texas before the war, and during that struggle he supplied cattle for and drove them to the Confederate army. As early as 1866 he located permanently in the southeastern part of McCulloch county, and there several of his sons are still in the ranching and cattle business. The town of Voca is the center of the Spiller neighborhood. Forrest Spiller, a cousin of Meredith, was killed by the Indians on the Colorado river in Coleman county in the early years of the sixties. Meredith Spiller became one of the prosperous and substantial citizens of McCulloch county, but in the later years of his life he returned to his old home in Louisiana, and he died there in 1897.

William W. Spiller was born on the frontier and he was reared amidst frontier surroundings and the hardships of the Indian depredations. In his early life he became associated with the cattle business, and he still owns his ranch near Voca. But in 1909 he moved to Brady, establishing his home in the southern part of the city, and here he purchased, platted and placed on the market Spiller's Addition, a tract of one hundred and forty-five valuable building lots, comprising one of the best residence sections of the city.

Mrs. Spiller was, before marriage, Ollie Armor, also born in McCulloch county, and the two children which have blessed their marriage union are Lola and Zola.

FRANCIS M. NEWMAN.—One of McCulloch county's most distinguished lawyers is Francis Marion Newman, a resident of Brady. He was born in Washington, the historic county of Texas, in 1860. His father was Joel Newman, and his grandfather was Jonathan Newman, who came from the Carolinas in 1825, when Texas formed a part of Mexico. Thus it will be seen that the family is as purely Texan as can be found. The mother of Mr. Newman was born in Tennessee, but she came with her parents to the Lone Star state in the early years of its history.

Francis M. Newman was born and reared in Washington county, and he graduated from old Baylor University at Independence in 1885. He studied law in the office of C. L. Breedlove at Brenham, Judge Breedlove being one of the prominent lawyers of that city, and Brenham was in those days noted for the strong character of its bar, numbering as it did some of the brightest men in the legal profession in Texas. Mr. Newman was admitted to the bar in 1887, and in that same year he came to Brady and established himself in a law practice. He has lived here since that time and has continued as the city's most prominent lawyer, his clientage representing the substantial business interests of the city and county, and he is thoroughly identified with the community's prominent affairs and movements of progress.

Mrs. Newman, before marriage, was Miss Laura Sheridan, of Brady, but a native of Indiana. Their two children are Pearl and Francis S.

CALVIN C. BUMGUARDNER.—Among the most prominent business men of Brady and of McCulloch county is numbered Calvin C. Bum-

guardner, a merchant and stockman, and he has been one of the active spirits in the building up of Brady. He was born in the northern part of North Carolina, adjoining the Virginia state line; but when he was only a month old his parents moved to Wythe county, Virginia, his home until he was thirteen, and from there they moved to Marshall county in middle Tennessee.

Calvin C. Bumguardner came to Texas in 1873, and he located in Tarrant county, eighteen miles east of the then small town of Fort Worth. He freighted for a time, and he hauled the first two self-binders into Fort Worth from Dallas, the railroad not reaching the former city until 1876. Mr. Bumguardner recalls to mind that what are now highly valuable business lots near the court house sold in those days for twenty-five dollars each. After one year in Tarrant county he moved to Hamilton county, where he lived on a farm for about nine years, and then embarked in the livery business, thus continuing for one year. He then engaged in the mercantile business in Hamilton, which he continued for six years. In 1891 he located in Brady, McCulloch county, which was at that time a very small town, and he started a ranch and dairy about two miles southeast, becoming in time quite extensively interested in the live stock business, raising cattle, horses and mules, and he carried on a prosperous trade. For several years past he has lived in the town, and in 1904 he established the local electric light and water works plant, continuing at the head of those industries for four years, selling them in 1908 to a local corporation. He also promoted the organization of the company that built the Syndicate Block, and he is the owner of the Queen Hotel building. After retiring from the ownership of the electric light and water plant Mr. Bumguardner established a stock barn at Brady, handling mules principally, and in connection therewith he also maintains feed and grain stores. All of his business enterprises have been uniformly successful, and he still owns his ranch property near Brady, a valuable tract of about twenty-three hundred acres.

Mr. Bumguardner married first, Mary Ann Hardison, born and reared in Tennessee, and she died in Hamilton county, Texas. A daughter, Mrs. Mary Eliza Wade, was born of that union. His present wife was Alice White, born in Alabama. They were married in Hamilton county, and their eight children are: Mrs. Lona Belle Colston, Mrs. Maud Elizabeth Lindsay, Charles E., Josephus, William C., Autrey, Ella Maypearl and Gordon Bumguardner.

It is a noteworthy fact that Mr. Bumguardner laid the first cement sidewalk in Brady and installed the first sewerage system in Brady. He also is a pioneer in the mule business, having established the first and only mule barn to date (1910) in Brady.

OWEN DAVIS MANN has spent the greater part of his life in Texas, and he represents a family that have been prominent in the interests of the Lone Star state since an early period in its history. He was born in Smith county, Tennessee, in 1853, but in 1855 the family came to Texas, locating at the Cross Timbers in Tarrant county, they having been among the earliest of the pioneers of that section, and the old Mann homestead was located eleven miles from the old county seat, Birdville. But the family subsequently moved to Grayson county, and from there



in 1882 to Menard county, then the frontier of Texas. The late T. W. Mann, the father of Owen D. Mann, was a well known cattleman throughout the western Texas country, but in his later years he moved to San Angelo, and there both he and his wife died at an advanced age. One of their sons, Felix Mann, is a prominent land owner and citizen of San Angelo. The Hon. John Courtney, an uncle of Owen D. Mann, served as a member of the Texas legislature, and he took a prominent part in the removal of the county seat to Fort Worth. He was cowardly killed as a result of the perfectly honorable efforts he made to permanently locate the county seat.

Owen D. Mann lived in Menard county until about 1901, and in that year established his permanent home in Brady. While in Menard county he became quite extensively interested in farming, and introduced irrigation in that section. Since coming to McCulloch county he has continued his interest in farming and owns several fine farms in this county, including a valuable tract of five hundred and five acres near the city of Brady on the south, and others in the Lohn country in the northern part of the county. He has always been very successful in his farming operations. In 1902 he with his two sons established the firm of O. D. Mann and Sons in Brady, a large wholesale and retail hardware, furniture, implement and vehicle house. The two sons of the firm are James T. and O. Duke Mann, who have active charge of the business, and they have, by honorable methods and a thorough understanding of their business, built up one of the largest and most successful houses of its kind in this section of the state. Mr. Mann also has a daughter, Mrs. Grace Bevans. His wife, who was before marriage Luella Duke, was born in Dyer county, Tennessee. She died at Brady in January of 1909. The Mann family are among the representative citizens of Central and Western Texas.

FRANK W. HENDERSON is widely known as a banker, as a capitalist and as a land owner. He is interested in various enterprises of importance requiring large capital, and is one of the financial bulwarks that are making Brady the center of a rich country. He is a director and the vice president of the Brady National Bank, is the owner of the Henderson ranch, a rich and valuable tract of land lying west of the city, and is connected with various other important interests.

Mr. Henderson is a native born son of Texas, born, reared and primarily educated in Houston. He later took elective courses in Washington and Lee University at Lexington, Virginia, being a student there at the time of the death of General Lee. He next took up the study of law, and graduating in the Cumberland University at Lebanon, Tennessee, he began the practice of the legal profession in his home city of Houston. But in 1880 he came to Brownwood to continue the practice, while subsequently he retired from the profession and located at Mason, in Mason county, establishing there the first bank of the town—the Mason County Bank. After a time Mr. Henderson disposed of his interests in that institution, and in 1902 he came to Brady and established his permanent residence here.

His wife was, before marriage, Margaret Miller, born at Richmond, Kentucky.

## SAN SABA COUNTY

San Saba county was created February 1, 1856, the act directing that the chief justice of Burnet county should organize the local government and should select sites to be voted on for the county seat, the one finally chosen to be called San Saba. The county officials in 1857 were: Joab B. Harrell, chief justice; G. B. Cook, county clerk; Eli Freestone, sheriff; J. T. Davis, assessor and collector; and Allen Sloan, district clerk.

In 1857 the estimated population of the county was 364. The general development of the county was rather more rapid during the succeeding twelve or thirteen years than in adjacent counties. Before the war the settlers had brought a number of slaves with them, and considerable progress was made in agriculture as well as in stock raising.

The population of the county in 1870 was 1,425; in 1880, 5,324 (140 negroes); in 1890, 6,641; in 1900, 7,569 (61 negroes); and in 1910, 11,245.

At the present time several thousand acres in the county are under irrigation. Irrigation is not a modern thing. A writer in the Texas Almanac for 1867 says: "There are large quantities of land irrigated from the Simpson, Rose and Barnett springs, as well as from many others in the county." The same publication gives this additional information: "The town of San Saba . . . has several stores, hotels, mechanics' shops, two or three doctors, and two lawyers, a college and schools, . . . a postoffice, but no postmaster. Cherokee has a postoffice, but no postmaster; one fine water mill. There are quite a number of common schools in the county and one college, known as Masonic College, situated in the town of San Saba."

The value of taxable property in the county in 1870 was \$420,506; in 1882, \$1,630,253; in 1903, \$3,355,600; and in 1909, \$7,496,961. While nearly half the taxable property in 1882 was represented by livestock, and stock raising is still the largest single resource, the development of the county along other lines in the past thirty years has been promoted by the presence of natural facilities for irrigation and abundant water power. The numerous springs throughout the county are utilized to irrigate the adjacent lands, besides the pumping plants which more recently have been established along the streams. A strong spring in San Saba was used in 1880 to furnish power for a flour mill, sawmill and cotton gin, after which its waters irrigated a field of fifty acres, and the same power is now used for an electric light plant and other industries.

Cotton growing began in the county during the '70s, and, though lack of transportation facilities has been an adverse factor, the county has a very diversified list of agricultural products.

JUDGE JOHN THOMAS HARTLEY, judge of San Saba county and a pioneer citizen, is one of the prominent men whose worth has graced the history of this county of San Saba. He was born in Mississippi in 1856, but in 1857 his father, W. C. Hartley, also a native of that state, came to Texas with his family, and as the judge was then but four months old he is practically a product of the Lone Star state. The family settled first in Robertson county, moving later from there to Coryell county, where the young son grew to manhood, and in the spring of 1876 they came to San Saba county, locating in its southern portion, three miles east of Cherokee. Judge Hartley has resided in this vicinity ever since,



*J. T. Hartley*



but in later years W. C. Hartley moved to Tom Green county, where he died in 1905, but his widow survives him and yet resides there.

Judge Hartley's home is about eighteen miles south of San Saba, within half a mile of the homestead which his father originally located, and he is a successful farmer and stock raiser. The Hartleys were among the pioneers in cotton raising in San Saba county, the industry in its earlier years having been given over almost exclusively to the cattlemen. He served six years as a county commissioner, representing precinct No. 3, and was also a justice of the peace at Cherokee during that period. His honorable record as a commissioner was recognized by his constituents and won for him in 1908 the office of county judge, a position that he fills with the same careful efficiency that marked his course as a commissioner. For the purpose of expediting his duties as a judge he established a home at the county seat in the fall of 1908. He is also an ex-officio county superintendent of schools.

Judge Hartley married Cornelia Coplin, who was reared in Tarrant county, and they have two children, Thomas E. Hartley and Mrs. Dora Pridgeon, and they live near the old homestead where they were born.

T. A. MURRAY was born in the city of San Saba in 1870, and he still lives at the old homestead in which he was born and where he laid the foundation for future activities. This old place was also the early home of his father, the revered pioneer, Wiley T. Murray, who died in this city in 1898, but his memory is cherished as a man of unusually fine characteristics and as one who did more for the town of San Saba than perhaps any other of its residents. He was one of the earliest pioneer settlers of San Saba county, but he was born in Alabama, moving from there to Williamson county, Texas, in 1854, and to San Saba county in 1856. During the earliest years of San Saba as a small frontier settlement, Wiley T. Murray embarked in the mercantile business, and he remained one of the prominent merchants of this part of that state during a long number of years, while at the same time he was also extensively engaged in the cattle business. Forming a partnership with T. W. Ward, another of the honored pioneers of this county, he became a member of the old firm of Ward and Murray, which is notable in the commercial history of San Saba. Their trade extended over a large extent of territory. They developed the Bank of Ward and Murray, established in 1883, and this was the first banking institution of San Saba county. From the time of the organization of this bank, Wiley T. Murray continued actively engaged in banking interests until his death, and, although his associate in business has also passed away, the bank which they founded and maintained has remained continuously in business, being now conducted by the two sons of the original partners—T. A. Murray and Robert M. Ward—under the style of Ward, Murray and Company, unincorporated. This is a strong financial institution with individual responsibilities of half a million dollars, and through years of honorable dealing it has gained the complete confidence of the people of San Saba county.

Wiley T. Murray married Elizabeth Sloan, a member of the Sloan family, which was also among the earliest pioneers of this county.

T. A. Murray, their son, has spent his entire life in San Saba. He was educated principally at Bingham School in North Carolina, and since

early youth has been connected with the extensive business interests—live stock, land and banking—established by his father. He is thoroughly identified with the varied interests and with the development of the rich resources of San Saba county, and he took a leading part in the movement that resulted in bringing to San Saba her long desired first railroad, the Santa Fe, the construction for this road having been begun in 1909. He is president of the San Saba County Fair Association, and is connected financially with the San Saba Water Company, with the Cotton Oil Mill and other local interests.

Mr. Murray married Ethel Badgett, and they have two children, Ethel and Wiley Murray.

LEIGH BURLESON is a lawyer and one of the pioneer citizens of San Saba, and he is a member of the Burleson family of Texas, whose name has added luster to the history of the commonwealth. General Ed. Burleson, his grandfather's cousin, commanded a regiment at the battle of San Jacinto in 1836, and it was in his honor that Burleson county was named. Dr. Rufus Burleson, an uncle of Leigh Burleson, was the famous educator, founder and for many years president of Baylor University, while Albert Burleson, present congressman from Texas, is a grandson of the General Ed. Burleson above mentioned.

Richard and Sallie (Leigh) Burleson, the parents of Leigh Burleson, were born in northern Alabama, and coming to Texas in its early history they settled first in Washington county, but later moved from there to McLennan county. It was at the latter place that they reared their son Leigh, and his educational training was received in the old Waco University which was later merged into Baylor University. He was born in Washington county, Texas, in 1847. He studied law in the office of Coke, Herring and Anderson at Waco, one of the most prominent law firms of Texas in those days, and admitted to the bar in 1873 he began practice in that city. But in 1876 he came to San Saba on account of impaired health, and for several years was engaged successfully in cattle ranching in San Saba county, owning a fine ranch at the mouth of Brady Creek, twenty miles west of San Saba. But in the meantime he had continued his interest in the legal profession, and after selling his ranch he devoted his efforts principally to the practice of law, and has achieved success in his profession. In addition he is prominently identified as a public spirited citizen in the commercial and agricultural development of his county, being associated with such enterprises as the building of the new railroad and the promotion of the great irrigation project which is being carried out by the San Saba River Irrigation Company, and for which Mr. Burleson is the attorney.

The San Saba River Irrigation Company was organized in February, 1909, succeeding an older company whose agitation for the development of irrigation and water power from the San Saba river in San Saba county was begun as early as 1892. The present company, however, put the project in practical shape, and at this writing is carrying it to a successful completion. The project involves the construction of an immense dam on the river at Doran's Canyon, about seventeen miles southwest of San Saba, the dam to be reinforced concrete seventy-two feet high and, by backing up the water, forming a lake covering about two thousand acres, with average depth of thirty feet. There are from forty to fifty thousand





T. A. SLOAN

N. R. SLOAN

C. N. SLOAN

J. C. SLOAN

M. M. (SLOAN) CAMPBELL

W. P. SLOAN



acres of rich land that can be irrigated from this lake. But before inaugurating construction on the dam and other works it is necessary that contracts guaranteeing co-operation be had with owners representing a minimum of twenty thousand acres of land. At present fifteen thousand acres have been contracted for. The project has been investigated by James D. Schuyler, the eminent hydraulic engineer who was selected by President Roosevelt to pass upon the Gatun dam. Mr. Schuyler's formal report on this project is favorable and highly commendatory, and besides his technical observations it is interesting to note his general conclusions as follows:

"My general impressions are entirely favorable to the enterprise, which appears to be destined to achieve an immediate success and to accomplish a rapid transformation in the San Saba Valley, bringing wealth, population, railways and good roads. The soil is unexcelled, the water supply ample and the slopes of the land are just about right for easy distribution of water. The climate is healthful, and the district bids fair to become populous and prosperous. From every point of view the enterprise appeals to me as a safe and desirable investment."

Mr. Burleson married Bee Moore, a daughter of Woods Moore, a noted pioneer of Bastrop county, and she is a sister of James Moore, a prominent business man of Galveston. The Moore family is otherwise prominently connected with the commonwealth of Texas. Mr. and Mrs. Burleson have five children: Russell Burleson, for many years connected with the Murray and Ward Bank at San Saba; Lieutenant Richard Burleson, a graduate of West Point and now captain of the ordnance department in the Philippines; Worth Burleson, manager of the San Saba Oil Mill; and Wade Burleson and Mrs. Mary Leigh Price.

N. RICE SLOAN is prominently associated with the industrial history of San Saba county as a land owner and capitalist, and he descends from one of the best known pioneer families of this section of the Lone Star state. He was born in Tishomingo county, Mississippi, in 1845, and in 1849 his parents, Dr. Allen and Nancy G. (Hester) Sloan, with their family of ten children, came to Texas, establishing their home in Rusk county. Five years after this, in 1855, they came to San Saba county, then the extreme western frontier, arriving here on the 5th of March of that year. Thus they enrolled their names among the county's earliest settlers and began life in this then pioneer wilderness. Dr. Sloan attained prominence here as a physician, and he died in the year 1857, while his wife passed away one year previously, in 1856. The Doctor was born in North Carolina, of Irish and Scotch ancestry, and the most of his early life was spent in Tennessee and Mississippi, coming from the latter state to Texas as above noted. He took part in the organization of San Saba county. Of the children born to Dr. Allen and Nancy G. (Hester) Sloan the following sons are living: William, John, Joseph C., N. Rice and Calvin N. Thomas A. Sloan died in this county; Archie Sloan died at Arkansas Post, Arkansas, while in the Confederate service during the Civil war; and Joseph C. Sloan was badly wounded and permanently crippled in one of the battles in Louisiana. All of the sons who were of sufficient age took part in some branch of the Confederate service. Elizabeth J. (Sloan) Murray, a daughter, is the widow of the late W. T. Murray, pioneer merchant and banker of San Saba. Mary M. married G. W. Campbell, of San Saba, and Sarah E.,

deceased, married D. C. Woods. The Sloan family have been closely identified with the history of San Saba county beginning with its pioneer settlement and continuing through the terrible Indian period, through the days of the cattle thieves and desperadoes, through the short-lived reign of the "mob," as it was called, to the more recent modern development of the county's splendid resources. Their original settlement in the county was ten miles west of San Saba, this being within three miles of Sloan post-office, which was established some years ago and where the family still have interests.

N. Rice Sloan was engaged in his earlier years in the cattle business, a part of the time in association with some of his brothers, but during several years past he has lived in San Saba, where he has a beautiful home. He owns among many other interests the large stone business block now occupied by J. M. Carter, and during some years he has occupied this building himself as a general merchant. His wife is Mrs. Alice R. (Henderson) Sloan.

WILLIAM S. SANDERSON, M. D., has gained distinctive prestige in the practice of medicine and surgery, and is one of the pioneer physicians and surgeons of San Saba county. Born in 1851 in Cherokee county of North Carolina, near Hayesville, the present county seat of Clay county, and which county was carved out of Cherokee and Macon counties, he was reared there and studied medicine in the Atlanta Medical College, of which he is a graduate with the class of 1875. He descends from a prominent old family of the Carolinas on both the paternal and maternal sides, and he is a son of William M. and Arminda (Ledford) Sanderson, who reared a family of eleven children, several of whom are living in San Saba county, and one of his brothers, Dr. G. H. Sanderson, is another of the physicians of its county seat, where he located in 1884. Two others, E. T. and J. M. Sanderson, are successful farmers and stockmen, while still another, U. M. Sanderson, is a San Saba banker. A sister, Mrs. J. M. Carter, also lives in San Saba, as likewise does Miss Mollie Sanderson, residing with her brother, G. H.

William S. Sanderson began the practice of his chosen profession near his home in North Carolina, but in the fall of 1875 he came to Texas, stopping first in Dallas, and in the latter part of the following December he came from there to San Saba county, making the entire journey on horseback and arriving here with only eight dollars in cash and a pony and saddle. The country was then so thinly settled that his first three years here showed meager results from a financial standpoint, but by this time the community had grown considerably and Dr. Sanderson having in the meantime established a splendid reputation for efficiency as a physician, he soon built up an excellent practice, which in the days of the frontier extended not only through San Saba county but through the surrounding counties as well, his visits to patients often involving long horseback rides to distant ranch headquarters. During twelve years he was also in the drug business, in partnership with Dr. G. H. Sanderson, his brother, and during his first year in this county he was located at Upper Cherokee, sixteen miles south of San Saba, but since that time he has lived at the county seat and is still actively engaged in the practice of medicine and surgery. He is interested financially in a number of local enterprises, and is an enthusiastic supporter of the growth and

development of the county. He is a director of the First National Bank and a stockholder in the San Saba Ice & Light plant, as are also his brothers, G. H. and U. M.; and he has two valuable farms near San Saba, while in former years he was quite prominently connected with the cattle business.

Dr. Sanderson married Miss A. T. Hanna, on November 28, 1878. She is a daughter of D. S. Hanna, and their five children are: Mrs. Mattie Allison, Mrs. Elsie Gose, Mrs. Willie Moore, Carrie and Mary.

JOHN KELLY is a man of the commonwealth, a leader in the industrial activity of San Saba county, a pioneer citizen, ranch owner, and above all the president of the San Saba River Irrigation Company, a project of the greatest importance to this section of the state. Born in 1848 in Washington county, Virginia, where he was also reared and educated, John Kelly came to the west in 1869, locating for a year in southwestern Missouri, and from there he came in 1870 to Texas. His first home here was at Whitesboro in Grayson county, moving from there to Cooke county, and in 1875 he came to San Saba county, his home since those early pioneer days. Throughout his identification with the life of the Lone Star state, his interests have been in the live stock and agricultural industries, and he has a fine farm of about two hundred and forty acres eight miles northeast of the city of San Saba, as well as a beautiful home on the hill in the southwest part of the city.

Mr. Kelly is greatly interested in the development of San Saba county's agricultural resources through means of irrigation, and taking hold of the old project for irrigating the San Saba valley that had been agitated in a desultory way for about fifteen years, in February, 1909, he and his associates organized the San Saba River Irrigation Company, of which he is the president, and began at once to work systematically and energetically to carry the project to successful completion. At the present time the preliminary work has progressed sufficiently to practically insure the financing of the project, involving the issue of something over a million dollars in bonds. This sum will mean the successful consummation of the project and a consequent revolution in the agricultural resources of San Saba county, for there are from forty to fifty thousand acres of rich land that can be irrigated from the lake to be formed by an immense dam on the river at Doran's Canyon, about seventeen miles southwest of San Saba, the dam to be of reinforced concrete, seventy-two feet high, thus backing up the water and forming a lake to cover about two thousand acres, with an average depth of thirty feet. The project has been investigated by James D. Schuyler, the eminent hydraulic engineer who was selected by President Roosevelt to pass upon the Gatun dam. Mr. Schuyler's formal report on this project is favorable and highly commendatory.

In addition to his other interests Mr. Kelly is the president of the Kelly Dry Goods Company. He is a Mason and an honored member of the Methodist church, of which he has been a member of the board of stewards since 1879. His parents were James Edmonson and Margaret (Buchanan) Kelly, both from Washington county, Virginia, and members of old families there, of Irish and Scotch descent. Mr. Kelly married, at Marysville, in Cooke county, Texas, Sallie Smith, and she died at San Saba early in the year of 1909, the mother of ten children, seven of

whom are living: Samuel Emmett, Mrs. Eula B. Urquhart, George R., James P., Margaret C., John H. and Sherman Grady Kelly.

GEORGE ABSALOM WALTERS has for more than twenty years been one of the leaders of the bar of central Texas, and at the same time has labored for the benefit of San Saba, the city which has been so long his home and with whose interests he has been thoroughly identified. He is known prominently and well as a lawyer, real estate dealer, writer of abstracts, as the president of the San Saba Chamber of Commerce and as a progressive citizen. He is the son of G. W. Walters, who was born in Hamilton county, Tennessee, and came with his family to Austin, Texas, in 1880, but later moved from that city to San Marcos and from there came to San Saba in 1884. G. W. Walters and his wife are yet residents of this city, and the father and son are associated together in business.

George Absalom Walters received his educational training mainly in Coronal Institute at San Marcos, and taking up educational work he taught in the North Texas Female College at Sherman and for one year in Belle Plaine College. In the meantime he had studied law, and in 1887 was admitted to the bar at San Saba, and not long afterward was elected the attorney of San Saba county and served in the office for six years. Mr. Walters is a successful lawyer, and has a large law library that is noted for its practical working value. He is also engaged quite extensively in the real estate and abstract business, having a complete set of abstract records that are of increasing importance with the present rapid development of San Saba county. He is one of the city's most progressive and enterprising citizens, and the president of its Chamber of Commerce, an organization which took the lead in the preliminaries leading up to the securing of the Santa Fe Railroad for San Saba. The construction work on this road was begun late in the year of 1909. He is a member of the Methodist church and of the Masonic, Odd Fellows and Knights of Pythias fraternities.

Mr. and Mrs. Walters have six children: George Clayton, Fairy Belle, John Harris, George A., Minnie Elizabeth and Clarence M.

DR. GEORGE P. HOLMAN, a retired physician, capitalist and pioneer, has the honor of having been the first member of the medical profession to register for practice in San Saba. Born in Fluvanna county, Virginia, May 13, 1848, he was a student in the famous Virginia Military Institute at Lexington, and from that noted institution he in 1863, at the age of fifteen, went into the Confederate army, being a member of a Corps of Cadets, and he remained in service in a battalion under General Ewall on the north line of Richmond. After his return from the war he studied in the University of Virginia, and the medical course which he began in that institution was completed in the New York College of Physicians and Surgeons (now Columbia University) with the class of 1872.

Dr. Holman's first practice was in Montgomery county, Virginia, where he remained until 1874, coming in that year to San Saba, Texas. He was the only physician here for some time, and his frontier practice involved long horseback rides to distant ranch headquarters and cow camps. Going to California in 1886 he spent a few years in the Golden state, and since returning to San Saba has gradually retired from the



*G. M. W. H.*







*Maitland Allison*



active practice of medicine. He has a beautiful home here, as well as valuable property interests in and adjoining the city, his real estate interests bringing him handsome returns.

Dr. Holman married Miss Mary Ward, born in Austin, a daughter of the late T. W. Ward, the pioneer merchant and banker of San Saba. They have five children: A. P., Mary, Virginia, George and Ward. The two daughters are members of the Catholic sisterhood.

JOHN H. MARTIN.—During a residence of many years in San Saba, John H. Martin has gained recognition as a leading financier. He is both a retired farmer and banker, a large land and property owner and a representative pioneer citizen. He was born near Petersburg, in Dinwiddie county, Virginia, in 1851, and his early home was in the midst of some of the most devastating military operations of the Civil war centering around Petersburg and Richmond. W. N. Martin, his father, was a Confederate soldier throughout that war. The son is a graduate of the Virginia Military Institute. He came to Texas in 1875, locating in Jackson county, and from there came to San Saba in 1877. For some years he was engaged largely in the land business, locating stockmen on favorable surveys in western Texas, and he now has valuable land and property interests in San Saba and vicinity, his own beautiful and spacious home being in the western part of the city. Mr. Martin served as the president of the First National Bank for two years, withdrawing from the office in February, 1909.

He married Miss Lucy Wildbahn, and their five children are W. A., J. E., Kate, Wildbahn and Anna.

MATT F. ALLISON.—Among the most loyal of San Saba's citizens are numbered its native sons. From childhood they have been interested in its welfare, and are now devoting the best years of their manhood to its progress and advancement. This number includes Matt F. Allison, a lawyer of distinction and a son of one of the most notable characters in the history of the bench and bar of San Saba county, Judge William M. Allison, who is now living in the city of Georgetown. He was born near Knoxville, Tennessee, and was reared amid the devastating scenes of warfare in eastern Tennessee during the Civil war, his father serving in the Confederate army. Judge Allison studied law and was admitted to the bar at Knoxville, and in 1876 he came as one of the pioneer lawyers to San Saba. He served with efficiency and distinction as judge of the Thirty-third judicial district from 1890 to 1898, a period including some notable criminal litigation and one requiring firmness and courage on the part of the court. But both at the bench and bar Judge Allison acquitted himself always with splendid credit, and he established a reputation that brought him a place of high standing in his profession. In 1909, for the purpose of affording better educational advantages to his younger children, he moved to Georgetown, where he is a law partner of A. S. Fisher. Judge Allison married, in his early life, Louisa Freestone, born in Lampasas county, but a member of a noted pioneer family of San Saba county. Her grandfather was the first sheriff elected at the organization of the county in 1856.

Matt F. Allison, born in San Saba in 1879, studied in the South-western University at Georgetown, and received his law training princi-

pally under the efficient preceptorship of his father in this city. He was admitted to the bar here in 1905, and during the years of 1907-8 served San Saba county as its attorney. He married, in this city, Miss Mattie Sanderson, a daughter of the Dr. W. S. Sanderson, whose history is given elsewhere in this work. The three children of this union are Edith S., Amanda L. and Anna G.

HUGH MILLER.—Among the public officials of San Saba county is recorded the name of Hugh Miller, its present efficient sheriff. He was born in Hays county, January 6, 1862, but he grew to mature years in San Saba county, and his ranch adjoins the old home place of his father. The late Hugh Miller Sr., his father, was born in Missouri and came in 1850 to Texas, locating at old Weberville, in Bastrop county. In 1874 he came with his family to San Saba county, establishing his home on the old Colorado river, ten miles north of the city of San Saba, which was his home until death, in December of 1906. He was a Confederate soldier of the Civil war and one of the greatly respected pioneer citizens of San Saba county. Sarah (Mayes) Miller, his widow, is yet living. She was born in the state of Missouri, but was married in Texas.

At the time of his election to the office of sheriff in 1906, Hugh Miller Jr. came to reside in San Saba, and his administration of the affairs of the office of sheriff and tax collector was so efficient and satisfactory to his constituents that he was re-elected in 1908. He is a member of the fraternal order of Masons, Odd Fellows and Woodmen. His wife was, before marriage, Emma Huffstutler, and she was born and reared in Lampasas county, Texas. They have five children, Pearl, Zenobia, Agnes, Richard and Annie. Another child, Acie, died May 15, 1908, in her fourteenth year.

JAMES M. KUYKENDALL is a prominent ranch owner and a member of one of the oldest pioneer families of San Saba county. M. H. Kuykendall, his father, born in Tennessee and reared in Mississippi, came to Rusk county, Texas, about the year of 1850, moving from there to Bell county in 1855, and in 1857 he located permanently in San Saba county, settling on Cherokee creek in the southern part of the county. It was on that home farm that his son James was reared, their home being about a mile from the small settlement of Cherokee. W. J. Kuykendall, a brother of M. H., located on a ranch in that community in 1857, and he still resides there. He was formerly a commissioner of San Saba county.

James M. Kuykendall was born in Bell county, Texas, in 1856, to the marriage union of M. H. and Elizabeth (Dollahite) Kuykendall, and he has made his home in San Saba since the year of 1897. He owns a valuable ranch in the western part of the county. He married Laura Reeves, and their three children are Clay, Nilah and Reeves. He is a member of the Masonic fraternity.

JOHN R. POLK.—The life history of John R. Polk touches the pioneer epoch in the annals of San Saba county, where he has long been well and prominently known as a land owner and stock farmer. He was born in Caldwell county, Texas, in 1853, to the marriage union of Headley and Hettie E. (Sebastian) Polk. Headley Polk, born in North Carolina



John P. Clark & family



but reared in Tennessee, came to Texas in 1844, settling first in Bastrop county, but later moved from there with his family to the western part of Caldwell county, on the San Marcos river. There he developed a fine farm in a beautiful location, and his old homestead there is still in the possession of the family, the home of his daughters. Headley Polk died in the year of 1907, at the advanced age of ninety-four years. He was by trade a miller, but always owned a farm.

It was at the old Polk homestead in Caldwell county that John R. Polk attained to mature years, but in 1883 he left there and came to San Saba county, locating ten miles west of the county seat, on the San Saba river, a most favorable location for farming and stock raising. He still owns his property there, as well as other valuable land in the county, but he lives in the city, in a pleasant home in the western part, one of San Saba's highly esteemed citizens.

Mr. Polk married Kate Word, born in Guadalupe county, Texas, and they have five living children—Ivor May, Mrs. Katie Sloan, Annie Lee, Eupha C. and Lex D. Mr. and Mrs. Polk had the misfortune to lose by death their only son, Headley Word Polk, who died in January of 1904, at the age of eighteen years, one of the bright, strong and gifted sons of San Saba. He stood just upon the threshold of what promised to be a successful career when death claimed him, and his memory is cherished by his family, associates and acquaintances. Mr. Polk is a member of the Odd Fellows' fraternity. The family worship at the Cumberland Presbyterian church.

SAMUEL W. WALKER.—The name of Walker is perhaps as closely associated with the history of San Saba county from its early days to the present as any other, and its many representatives have been influential in its industrial life. The late H. F. Walker, born in Missouri, came with his family to this county in 1876, and he died here in 1906. Although the home of this family was in the county seat they have always been engaged in the cattle business. Samuel W. Walker came to San Saba one year after the late H. F. Walker, his father, arriving in 1877, and his home is also in the city. He owns a large ranch on the San Saba river, about seventeen miles west of the county seat and lying contiguous to the proposed dam of the San Saba River Irrigation Company. He also has a farm further down the river, east of the town, and in earlier years he served the county as one of its commissioners. He has two brothers, P. H. and W. W. Walker, also living in the city.

Samuel W. Walker was born in Saline county, Missouri. His wife, nee Mary L. Low, is a daughter of the late D. D. Low, the first permanent settler of San Saba county of whom there is any record. He located on the Colorado river, in the eastern edge of the county, in 1850, and also erected the first house in the county. He was therefore a pioneer of the pioneers, an integral part of the chain linking the formative period with latter-day progress. The eight children born to Mr. and Mrs. Walker are: N. C. Walker, the present attorney for San Saba county; S. H. Walker, a member of the mercantile firm of Carson and Walker; and Lucy, Stella, Corinne, Ada, Travis and Mary E. Walker. Mr. Walker is a Mason, having taken the degrees in Missouri just after becoming of age.

DR. RAYMOND ARTHUR LINDLEY is a prominent representative of the professional life of San Saba, a successful dentist, and he is also one of the enterprising young business men of the town. He was born at Brownwood, this state, in 1880, a son of Simon and Isabel (Son) Lindley. Simon Lindley, deceased, was a son of Dr. Lindley, one of the earliest pioneer settlers of McCulloch county, Texas, where he established the well known Lindley ranch and was numbered among those sturdy and courageous pioneers who fought the Indians and made the country habitable for later settlement. His wife was a member of another of the pioneer families of that county, and it is recalled that her home was burned and the premises devastated by the redskins while she was visiting in San Saba. Simon Lindley spent the larger part of his life in McCulloch county, but he lived at Brownwood for some years prior to his death. His wife is still living. Her mother, Mrs. Rhoda Son, was one of the first settlers of Brownwood.

Dr. Raymond A. Lindley was reared in the city of his birth and completed his educational training in Central University at Louisville, Kentucky. He studied dentistry in the Louisville Dental College, graduating from that institution with its class of 1905, and he also took various special and post graduate courses in other dental colleges. He began practice in Brownwood, but in the fall of 1905 he located permanently in San Saba, and has since practiced in this city, a thoroughly equipped dentist. In February of 1909 he placed on sale the Lindley addition to San Saba, joining the town on the north. This tract of twenty-five acres, containing one hundred and thirty-four lots, is now splendidly improved, with graded streets bordered by three hundred cottonwood trees, and its lots were nearly all sold within three months after it was opened. Dr. Lindley has also purchased and placed on the market the Kirby addition to the town of Lometa. He is a representative citizen and a prominent business man.

On March 28, 1910, he married Miss Mamie Flora Hagan, of San Saba.

EDWARD CAMPBELL.—The name of Edward Campbell is closely associated with the early life of San Saba county, and he also represents one of the pioneer families of southwestern and western Texas. He was born in Ireland in 1839, but during the winter of 1851-2 he came with his parents to America and to Texas, where their first home was in Guadalupe county. But about 1857 he left there for Atascosa county, being among the first to seek a home there. He engaged in the cattle business there until 1876. His headquarters were in the southern part of the county, and there the town of Campbellton, named in their honor, was eventually organized. This name has figured conspicuously with the early development of the Lone Star state, its representatives being public-spirited and progressive citizens. John P. Campbell, a cousin of the subject of this review, and who died in 1908, was during many years one of the most popular citizens of San Antonio, and served as its mayor for one term. Jourdan Campbell, a nephew of Mr. Campbell, still lives in Atascosa county, where he has become wealthy in the cattle and land business, and a new town in that county, Jourdanton, promoted by him and his associates, was named in his honor.

After spending about nineteen years in Atascosa county, Edward



*Colonel Campbell's Wife*









*R. C. Sloan*

Campbell came in 1876 to San Saba county, and here he has since lived. He brought cattle with him and located on San Saba river, about twenty miles above the county seat, and still owns a ranch there of about ten thousand acres, although he has disposed of his cattle interests and his home is in San Saba. He built the first brick house in this city, and has in many ways been identified with its growth and upbuilding. W. E. Campbell, his son, lives on his large San Saba county ranch, while another son, Peter Campbell, is a stockman and rancher at Voca in McCulloch county. John F. Campbell is president of the First National Bank of San Saba. The two daughters of the family are Mrs. Mary Ada Moore and Mrs. Lillie Barker. Mr. Campbell's wife, Mary Jane Tom, is a member of the well known Tom family so prominent in the early history of Atascosa and Guadalupe counties.

JOHN R. CUNNINGHAM, a land owner and prominently engaged in the real estate business, was born in Talladega, Alabama, in 1856, a son of J. C. and Martha (McClellan) Cunningham, the mother, now deceased, being a daughter of General W. B. McClellan, of Confederate army fame. The father, now living in San Saba, was born in Jackson county, Georgia, and became a resident of San Saba in 1903. He had two brothers, however, who were connected with the earliest history of San Saba county in a peculiarly interesting way. They were older brothers, named H. M. and J. R. Cunningham, and while still young men they came to the Mexican province of Texas in 1833, fought under General Houston for Texan independence, and one of them was wounded at the battle of San Jacinto. H. M. and C. G. Cunningham were United States soldiers in the Mexican war. On account of their services in the Texas revolution of 1836, H. M. and J. R. Cunningham were granted headrights of land, and in addition to acquiring their own headrights they also bought the headrights of various other Texas soldiers, and in locating their lands they came up the Colorado river and acquired large bodies of land in what is now San Saba county, as well as in adjoining counties. Mr. Cunningham of this review now owns a ranch four miles north of San Saba, that is a part of one of the tracts procured by his uncles in this way. It is known as the Ysabel Gautry League, and his sister, Mrs. Martha Turner, is now living on this league.

John R. Cunningham came from Talladega county, Alabama, to San Saba in 1886, and located on the ranch above mentioned, conducting it as a cattle ranch for several years, but more recently he has devoted a part of it to farming. He has lived in the city of San Saba since 1903. His first wife, now deceased, nee Mary A. Turner, was the mother of his five children: Mrs. F. F. Edwards, Emma Cunningham, Mrs. Lyde Petty, J. C. and Mary Ity Cunningham. The present Mrs. Cunningham was, before marriage, Miss Florence Edwards, and was born in California.

ROBERT C. SLOAN is one of the large land owners of San Saba county and a representative of one of its early pioneer families, a son of John E. and Nancy (Maxwell) Sloan. The father was born in Tennessee, and he is a brother of N. R. Sloan, whose history in this work contains much of the ancestral record of the Sloan family. John E. Sloan came to Texas with his family in 1850, their first home here being in Rusk county, moving from there to the western Texas frontier in 1855. A

short time after that John E. Sloan located in Menard county, which was his headquarters as a cattleman for many years, but his home is now in San Saba county, in the vicinity of Sloan postoffice, where the family have lived since coming here in 1855. His wife died in 1880. Many years have passed since the name of Sloan became associated with the history of this community, and its representatives are justly numbered among its honored pioneers and leading citizens.

Robert C. Sloan was born in Menard county, December 19, 1866, and he was reared in the stock business there and has since been very successful in that industry. During several years he conducted a cattle ranch in Arizona, making his headquarters at Globe, and through his experience and good management his operations thrived there. In 1906 he returned to his old home, locating in the town of San Saba, and he has made extensive and profitable investments in town property and in the rich agricultural lands of the county. He is now permanently located in the county seat of San Saba county.

Mr. Sloan married Daisy Oldfield, and their three children are Robert, John and Paul.

#### MASON COUNTY

Mason county was created by the act of January 22, 1858. The county seat was to be on or within two miles of the site of Fort Mason, provided the proprietor of the land donated one hundred acres for county purposes, otherwise the site was to be selected by vote. The town was to be called Mason. The first county officers were: John McSween, chief justice; G. W. Todd, county clerk; Thomas Milligan, sheriff; L. Burgdorf, assessor and collector; W. C. Lewis, district clerk.

Fort Mason was one of the early forts established by the United States government after the annexation of Texas. It was just above the border of the German settlements, which were founded in the late '40s and '50s. Westward, in what is now Menard county, was the site of the ill-fated San Saba mission among the Apaches. Thus Fort Mason was for some years the frontier defense against the hostile tribes of West Texas. In 1857 Major George H. Thomas was in command there with a detachment of the Second Cavalry, and in 1860, before the outbreak of the war, the commander was Major Earl Van Dorn—both of whom became distinguished generals in the war, on opposite sides.

During the war most of the frontier posts were evacuated and Fort Mason was never reoccupied. The border defenses were ineffective, and for over ten years this and other counties were exposed to the raids of the savages. In the Texas Almanac for 1867 the representative from the district wrote the following description of Mason county:

"Fort Mason is situated on the divide between the Llano and San Saba rivers, about the center of the county. . . . There are no troops in Fort Mason, but we have elected it the county seat of Mason county, and have a good stone court house, a blacksmith shop of stone, a trading house or store, and an excellent school, but no grocery. There are, I believe, twenty-six families within three-quarters of a mile of the post, and seventy-five bright, healthy, fresh-looking children, large enough to attend school. There is church service by a German preacher once a month in this neighborhood, but no regular meeting-house. The people





Wilson Fay

in this settlement and in the county generally are well disposed, orderly, and ambitious of accumulating property and educating their children; but they are very much disheartened at present by the great insecurity of life and property, and by the apparent impunity with which the most horrible crimes are committed by Indians and outlaws. There are, I think, not less than two hundred families in the county, half of whom are German. There are four excellent schools, besides some smaller ones, and not less than four hundred children to be educated. There are five places of worship in the county. The Germans are mostly Methodists. The Americans are of different persuasions. There is but little agriculture in Menard, Kimball or Mason, but more in Mason than in either of the other counties. The people are generally devoted to stock growing, because it is so much more profitable and so much less laborious in this county than farming. . . . There are no mills in Mason county, nor manufactures, but some splendid sites for such, especially on Devil's river, James river and Mill creek, all of which empty into the Llano from the southwest."

As a result of these conditions, the population of the county in 1870 was only 678. Only 4,500 acres were in cultivation, and the corn and wheat raised, after supplying local demand, was marketed principally at the military posts to the west. There were several mills in the county in 1870, and four churches and four schools were maintained.

In 1880 the population was 2,655 (41 negroes), and about one-fourth were of foreign birth or parentage, mostly Germans. The population in 1890 was 5,180; in 1900, 5,573. The taxable wealth of the county in 1870 was \$216,025; in 1882, \$1,214,598 (over half being live stock); in 1903, \$2,444,635; and in 1909, \$4,048,080.

In 1882 there were two flour mills and four cotton gins in the county, all driven by water power, there being a number of available water-power sites. The county has valuable minerals, undeveloped because of the lack of transportation. The local quarries have for years supplied most of the building material, so that houses and public buildings are mainly of stone construction.

Mason, the principal town, in 1900 had a population of 1,137. Other towns, with population over 100, in 1900 were: Fredonia, 173; Katemcy, 143; Loyal Valley, 194; Pontotoc, 196.

**BEN HEY.**—The name of Hey is as closely associated with the early life and history of Mason county as any other, and Ben Hey is numbered among its native sons, born here in 1872 to the marriage union of Wilson and Hannah (Korn) Hey. The late Wilson Hey died at his home in Mason on the 3d of November, 1908. He was one of the most prominent pioneer citizens of Mason county, and his long and useful life was filled with varied and interesting experiences. He was born in Yorkshire, England, in 1837, but he left home when a boy to become a sailor and eventually he located in America and learned the tailor's trade in Memphis, Tennessee. At the breaking out of the Civil war he enlisted in the Confederate service in Mississippi and served throughout the conflict, mostly in Forrest's Cavalry. Following the close of the war he came to the western frontier of Texas, and for some years worked with the large cattle outfits, in the meantime making two or three trips to

Arizona with large herds of cattle. On one of those trips, and while acting as foreman of the outfit, they were raided by a band of Indians, who ran off the entire herd of three thousand cattle.

Mr. Hey established his permanent home in Mason county in 1868, locating on Comanche creek a short distance east of the town of Mason. There he carried on a successful cattle ranching business for several years, and also conducted a tailoring business in Mason. But he is best remembered perhaps for his long service as an efficient public official in Mason county, his public service covering twenty years in all. Beginning in 1882 he served Mason county as deputy clerk under Ben Gooch for one term, and in 1884 he was elected the county and district clerk and served in that capacity continuously by successive re-elections until 1902, with the exception of seven years, five of which he was engaged in the cattle industry, and during one term he served as county judge. He then retired from office. In about the year of 1904 he moved to his beautiful home on the hill in the southern part of the town, the site of old Fort Mason, and the home commands a splendid view of the surrounding country. His widow survives him. She was, before marriage, Hannah Korn, born at San Antonio, and a member of a pioneer German family. She was reared on the frontier, their family home being on Red creek, in Kimble county, and the family were among the keenest sufferers from Indian depredations. One of Mr. Hey's brothers was captured by the redskins and held in captivity for four years.

When Ben Hey was about fourteen years old he began working in the county and district clerk's office for his father, and he has been connected with that office throughout the intervening years. In 1902 he was elected the county and district clerk to succeed his father, and he has been re-elected to the office in 1904, 1906 and 1908. He married Maud Kountz, and their three children are Dixie Fay, Mabel Bennie and Ruth Katharine.

**FRITZ HOERSTER.**—One of the earliest of the pioneers of Mason county is Fritz Hoerster, a former stockman. He was born in Prussia in 1841, and coming to America with his parents in 1846 they located in Fredericksburg, Texas, and were members of the German colony which founded that city. In about 1856 the family moved to Mason county, and they located and lived for a number of years on a ranch on Willow creek, their residence there covering the period of the Civil war and the worst of the Indian troubles. Fritz Hoerster served in the Confederate army throughout the Civil war period, he having enlisted at Fredericksburg in the First Texas Cavalry, and he served in both Texas and Louisiana. After the close of the war he returned home, and in time purchased and improved a splendid ranch on the Llano river, about three miles above Castell, in the eastern part of Mason county. His home and the center of his activities were at that ranch until he moved to Mason in 1906, selling his ranch and cattle interests in that year and retiring from an active business life.

Mr. Hoerster married Hannah Leifeste, born in Germany, but she was brought by her parents when an infant to the German settlement in Llano county, Texas. Their four children are Amelia, Ida, Hulda and Charlie.



JACOB SCHUESSLER, of Mason, is a wealthy farmer and stockman and his name is enrolled among the earliest of the pioneers of Mason county. He was born at Bonfeld, in the province of Württemberg, Germany, in 1840. John Adam Schuessler, his father, brought the family to America in 1845, they forming a part of the German emigration at that time, and landing at Indianola, Texas. Mr. Schuessler and his family remained there a short time and then came by way of New Braunfels to Fredericksburg, in Gillespie county. From there they moved to Cherry Springs, in the same county, establishing their home about twenty-eight miles southeast of the present town of Mason. They were the first settlers at that point, and they built the first house there, giving it the name of Cherry Springs. In 1859 they moved to what has ever since remained the Schuessler home, the land joining Mason on the southeast, but their location took place long before the town of Mason was founded.

It was at the homestead there that Jacob Schuessler grew to manhood's estate and built his ranch and farm. His property in former years consisted of about twelve hundred acres, and comprised one of the richest agricultural properties in this section of the state. He has always handled more or less cattle, but in later years he has gone more extensively into profitable farming, particularly in the raising of cotton. The Schuessler place joins the town of Mason on the east and southeast, and in 1878 he built his present beautiful residence there. He is a citizen of substantial resources, and he has been very successful in his business affairs.

Mr. Schuessler passed through all the vicissitudes and dangers incident to the pioneer life on the frontier of Texas, and perhaps the most prominent of those hardships were the tragic Indian raids, which for many years were a terror to the frontier. During the war he served as a member of the Minute Men who guarded the frontier from the Indians and rendered valuable service in that connection, and he participated not only in the warfare against the Indians but that also waged against the "bad men" and cattle thieves.

Mr. Schuessler married, in Mason county in 1859, Miss Katherine Hick, who died on the 23d of January, 1897. There are seven children in his family: Will, Gustave, Charles, Mrs. Nannie Smith, Mrs. Lou Broad, Carrie and Mary. He is a member of the Lutheran church of Mason.

JOHN LEMBURG SR. is enrolled among the early pioneers of Mason county, and he is prominently connected with its business life as the vice president of the German-American National Bank. He was born in Germany in 1838, and coming to the United States in 1859 he located in Mason county, Texas, and he has since been one of its honored residents. As a pioneer on the Texas frontier, Mr. Lemburg has been a participant in the varied events that have contributed to the present stage of development of the county, beginning with its early years of hardships and its long period of danger from the raids of the Indians. He took part in the frontier protection service during war times. He located originally a mile northwest of the present town of Mason, but during many years past he has been living in the town and has been honored by election to important public offices, including those of sheriff, tax collector and assessor. He is the vice president of the German-American National

Bank, but he has practically retired from an active business life. His sons are all now grown to mature years and are in business for themselves, two—Ernest and John Jr.—comprising the mercantile firm of E. Lemburg and Brother. James, Arthur and Ed. Lemburg are all business men of Mason, and Will Lemburg is the cashier of the German-American National Bank. Charles Lemburg is living in San Francisco, California. The daughters in the family of John Lemburg Sr. are Teresa, Carrie, Nettie, Nellie and Sophia. His wife, before marriage, was Miss Sophia Danheim, of Mason.

WILL ELLEBRACHT is the son of a pioneer of Mason county, and he was born on his father's ranch twenty miles south of the city of Mason in 1867, a son of Fritz and Sophia (Hasse) Ellebracht, both yet living on the old homestead there. Fritz Ellebracht was born in Germany, and immigrating to the United States and to Texas in 1845, he established his home in Mason county, and is now numbered among the earliest of the county's pioneers. During the pioneer period he passed through all the privations and hardships incident to frontier life, including the starting of a ranch in a wilderness where neighbors were few and widely scattered, and the conflicts with the Indians, of which Mr. Ellebracht seems to have had entirely his share. He is remembered by the older residents as one of the bravest and most fearless of those whose duty it was to protect the homes, property and lives of the settlers from the fearful ravages of the Comanches and Kiowas. The son can also recall to mind some of those fearful raids, and particularly the one in which the Indians stole six mules and a horse from the Ellebracht ranch.

Will Ellebracht while yet a youth left the ranch to learn the mechanical trade, particularly that of milling. He became familiar with the making of flour under the best of training in the big Shriners mill at Kerrville. In 1901 he purchased the old corn mill and cotton gin at Mason, and he remodeled and enlarged these plants and put them in first class condition with the best of machinery. In 1905 he bought the electric light plant of the town, which had been allowed to run down into a very bad condition, and moving the plant from the northern part of the town to its present location in connection with the mill and gin, he remodeled it, installed new equipment and transformed it into a first class industry. In 1906 he sold a half interest in the three plants to seven of the leading business men of Mason county, and they, with Mr. Ellebracht, form the Mason Power and Ice Company, and about that same time the company installed an ice factory of ten tons capacity and equipped it with the Wolf-Linda ice machinery. The combined plants, of which Mr. Ellebracht is the manager, form the leading industries of the city.

Mr. Ellebracht's wife is Etta (Bell) Ellebracht, born in Mason county, and their two children are Irvin and Gladys.

MAX MARTIN was born on his father's ranch at Hedwig's Hill, on the Llano river, in Mason county, December 17, 1863, and this county has remained his home throughout life and he is now one of its representative citizens, a banker, ranch owner and a member of one of its honored pioneer families. His parents, Charles and Anna (Mebus) Martin, were both born in Germany, and the father came to America and to Texas in the late forties, stopping for a short time in San Antonio,

and in 1850 he located at Hedwig's Hill. Mason county has since remained the home of the Martin family, and they still own their old place at Hedwig's Hill. Charles Martin died there in November of 1878, but he is yet survived by his widow, Mrs. Anna Martin, who is the president of the Commercial Bank.

Max Martin and his brother, Charles L. Martin, were reared at the family home at Hedwig's Hill, and the years of their maturity have been associated with ranching and the cattle business. Besides the Martin homestead, they own several valuable farms and ranches in Mason, McCulloch and Menard counties. The Martin family have large resources and are among the financial bulwarks of Mason county, their prestige also forming the substantial backing of the Commercial Bank, a private unincorporated banking institution, which they established in July of 1901, at Mason, and of which Mrs. Anna Martin is the president, Charles L. Martin the vice president and Max Martin the cashier. This is numbered among the substantial banking institutions of Mason county, and the Martins as bankers have won the confidence of the community.

Max Martin's wife, to whom he was married in Germany, bore the maiden name of Hedwig Mebus, and their three children are Kurt, Esther and Ruth. Mr. and Mrs. Charles L. Martin have six children: Walter, Rudolph, Seth, Albert, Paul and Annie.

JOHN W. GAMEL is one of the old time cattlemen of Central and Western Texas, and he is noted throughout the entire state as one of the best judges of cattle. He was born in Georgia in 1845, but in 1847 was brought by his parents to Texas, the family locating in Limestone county, later moving from there to Llano county, and in 1860 they came to Mason county and they were among the first to establish their home here. William Gamel, the father of John W., was a brave man, a typical frontiersman, and he took a prominent part with those intrepid spirits who withstood the untold hardships to subdue the wilderness and pave the way for the conveniences afforded the present residents of the Lone Star state. William Gamel died in the year of 1900. The greatest source of danger and hardship in those early years were from the Indians and their disastrous raids, and the Gamel family suffered greatly at the hands of the redskins, particularly so in the loss of their horses.

John W. Gamel was early inured to the hardships of pioneer life. He began working with cattle at an early age, and he continued on as a cattleman throughout all of his active life, only retiring from the vocation within the past few years. With his brother, J. G. Gamel, he operated some large outfits in the days of the open range. His home has been principally in the town of Mason since 1865, and at that time it contained one store and four or five small picket houses. His present home is an attractive residence located in the eastern part of the town, near the site of old Fort Mason. Mr. Gamel was in the Confederate service from about the beginning of the war until January of 1865, joining first the famous First Texas Cavalry, a part of the command of General Ben McCulloch, and Mr. Gamel was stationed at Fort Chadbourne under Captain Bill Tobin of San Antonio. He was mustered out of that organization at Fredericksburg in 1862, and then joined the Thirty-third Texas Cavalry, under Major Duffy. He was in service at

Brownsville, Indianola and other points in Texas, and he took part in one of the expeditions into Indian Territory.

Mr. Gamel married first Kate Crosby, and she became the mother of three children, A. J., J. A. and J. C., but the two last named are deceased. He married for his second wife, Miss Alice Kettner, and she is the mother of four children, Effie, Nellie, Herbert and Jessie.

J. W. WHITE was born and reared in Gonzales county, Texas, born July 22, 1854, but since 1889 he has been identified with the interests of Mason county and he is now the president of the German-American National Bank and a leading cattleman and land owner. He began working with cattle at an early age in southwestern and western Texas, and he has been largely interested in the stock business all his life. He is a nephew of Major George Littlefield, of Austin, with whom he has been in partnership for a number of years in the cattle and land business, principally in Mason county. He has extensive landed interests here, and is one of the county's representative citizens. He organized the German-American National Bank of Mason in February, 1904, and is its president and active manager. The bank is capitalized at twenty-five thousand dollars, with surplus and profits amounting to ten thousand dollars, and it is one of the strongest banking institutions in Mason county.

Mr. White married Miss Cora Bridges, of Mason, February 4, 1891. They have six children living: Thomas J., Jennie D., Lula M., Mary E., Walton W. and J. W. Jr. One child, Charlie, died at the age of seven weeks.

DAVID DOOLE SR. is a well known frontiersman and soldier, a man of varied and interesting experiences and one of the early pioneers of Central and Western Texas. He was born at Belfast, in country Antrim, Ireland, November 25, 1832, and it was in the latter part of the year of 1837 that he was brought by his parents to America, the family locating in Pope county, Illinois, near the Ohio river. The father was a physician, and had followed the profession in Belfast.

David Doole, the son, received a good educational training, and in 1854 he joined the United States Army, becoming a member of Company F, Sixth United States Infantry, commanded by Brevet Major L. A. Armistead, who was later killed at Gettysburg. Mr. Doole became the first sergeant of his company. In 1857-8 he took part in the Utah expedition against the Mormons under Albert Sidney Johnston, who later became a Confederate general, and from Utah Mr. Doole's command went into California and participated in military service in various portions of that state, from San Francisco to San Diego and across the desert to Fort Mojave. Resigning from the service in the latter part of 1859, Mr. Doole went to San Francisco and engaged in business, and on the 15th of August, 1861, he joined Company A, First Infantry of California Volunteers, for service in the Civil war, being later transferred to the regular army and becoming a member of Company D, Second Battalion, Seventeenth Infantry. With that command he came east and served in various sections of the south, including the siege of Petersburg. Soon after the close of hostilities in 1865, his regiment became part of Merritt's Division which came to the Rio Grande border and awed the Maximilian forces from further operations in Mexico, his regiment being afterward

ordered to Maine and from there back to Texas, where they worked in co-operation with Generals Sheridan and Haintzman's forces stationed at San Antonio, where General Griffin was department commander. On leaving the army service at Centerville, in Leon county, Mr. Doole was appointed by Colonel Lee as superintendent of the National Cemetery in San Antonio, and subsequently was appointed post sutler for the troops stationed at Fort Mason, in Mason county, his duties in that position beginning in 1868, and Mason has ever since been his home. In this period Mr. Doole has gained the reputation of being one of the oldest pioneers of the community.

Following the abandoning of Fort Mason in 1869, he engaged in the mercantile business in the little village of Mason, which had begun to spring up in the vicinity of the old fort, and he continued successfully in business there during a long number of years, being assisted during the latter period by his sons. But in 1909 he gradually disposed of his mercantile interests and retired from an active business life. In every feature of life, business, social or otherwise, that enters into the building of a town, Mr. Doole has taken a leading part, and in every respect he has been one of the bulwarks of Mason. He is past commander of Holcomb Post, G. A. R., and is a Royal Arch Mason and a past master of McCulloch Lodge, No. 273, and served for twenty-six years as D. D. G. M. of the Grand Lodge of Texas.

He married, on the 2d of July, 1869, Lucy A. Thompson, a native daughter of Texas, and they have five children living: David Doole Jr., the postmaster of Brady, president of the Texas Postmasters' Association and a prominent citizen; Dr. Paul Doole, a practicing physician at Fredonia, Texas; H. M. Doole, a business man of Brady; and Mrs. Bernice Finley and Katie Doole. Two are deceased, John S., who died aged thirty-four years, and one who died in infancy.

